

THE

**P**alace of **P**leasure

*ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS  
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLO, CINTHIO, STRAPAROLA,  
QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,  
AND OTHERS*

DONE INTO ENGLISH

BY WILLIAM PAINTER

*NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME*

BY JOSEPH JACOBS

VOL. III.



LONDON: PUBLISHED BY DAVID NUTT IN THE STRAND

a MDCCCXC

Fs

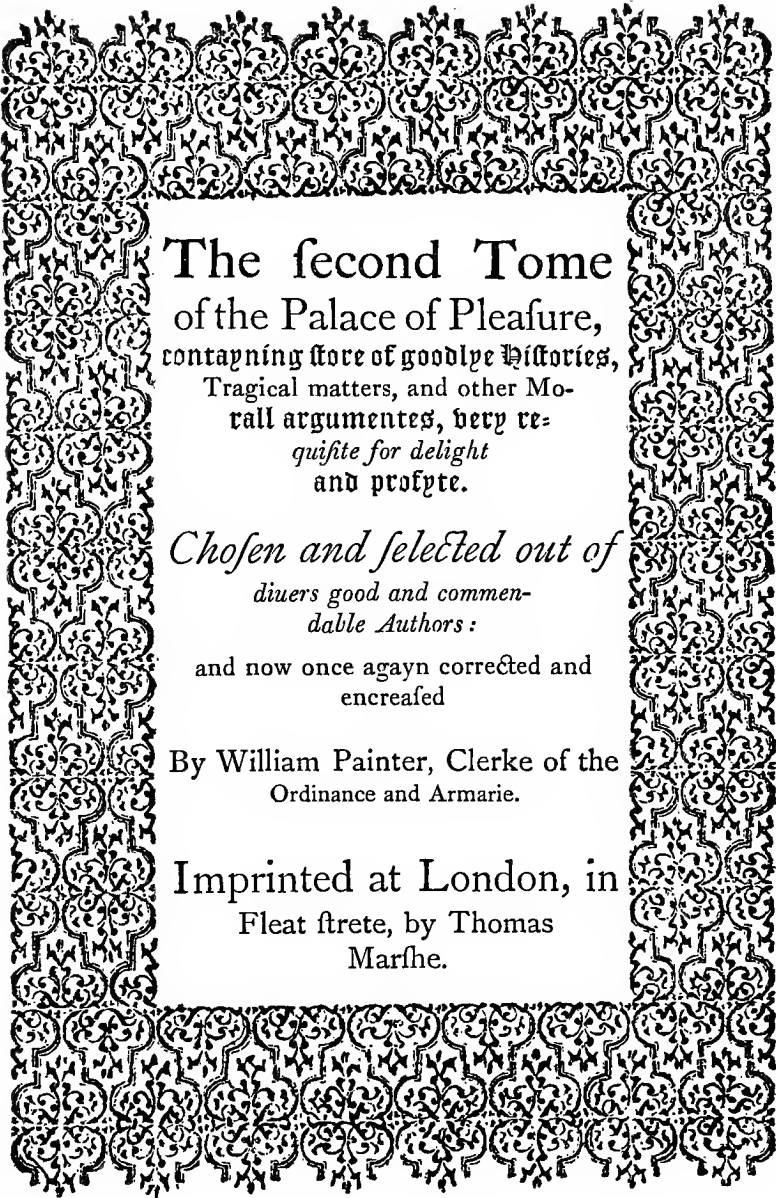
15

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## VOLUME III.

### TOME II.—*Continued.*

	PAGE
TITLE PAGE (EDITION 1580) . . . . .	I
NOVEL	
XXIII. DUCHESS OF MALFY . . . . .	3
XXIV. COUNTESS OF CELANT . . . . .	44
XXV. ROMEO AND JULIET. . . . .	80
XXVI. LADIES OF VENICE . . . . .	125
XXVII. LORD OF VIRLE . . . . .	157
XXVIII. LADV OF BOHEMIA . . . . .	195
XXIX. DIEGO AND GINEVRA . . . . .	222
XXX. SALIMBENE AND ANGELICA . . . . .	288
XXXI. HELENA OF FLORENCE . . . . .	329
XXXII. CAMIOLA AND ROLAND . . . . .	354
XXXIII. LORDS OF NOCERA . . . . .	363
XXXIV. SULTAN SOLYMAN . . . . .	395
XXXV. KING OF MOROCCO . . . . .	416
CONCLUSION . . . . .	431



The second Tome  
of the Palace of Pleasure,  
containing store of goodlye Histories,  
Tragical matters, and other Mo-  
rall argumentes, very re-  
*quisite for delight*  
and profyte.

*Chosen and selected out of*  
*diuers good and commen-*  
*dable Authors :*

and now once agayn corrected and  
encreafed

By William Painter, Clerke of the  
Ordinance and Armarie.

Imprinted at London, in  
Fleat strete, by Thomas  
Marthe.

# The Palace of Pleasure.

---

## THE TWENTY-THIRD NOUELL.

*The infortunate mariage of a Gentleman, called Antonio Bologna, wyth the Duchesse of Malfi, and the pitifull death of them both.*

THE great Honor and authority men haue in thys World, and the greater their estimation is, the more sensible and notorious are the faultes by them committed, and the greater is their slaunder. In lyke manner more difficult it is for that man to tolerate and sustayne Fortune, which al the dayes of his life hath lyued at his ease, if by chaunce he fall into any great necessity than for hym which neuer felt but woe, mishap, and aduersity. Dyonisius the Tyraunt of Scicilia, felt greater payne when hee was expelled his Kyngdome, than Milo did, beinge banished from Rome: for so much as the one was a Soueraygne Lorde, the sonne of a Kyng, a Iusticiary on Earth, and the other but a simple Citizen of a Citty, wherein the People had Lawes, and the Lawes of Magistrates were had in reuerence. So lykewyse the fall of a high and lofty Tree, maketh greater noyse, than that which is low and little. Hygh Towers, and stately Palaces of Prynces bee feene further of, than the poore Cabans, and homely Sheepeheardes Sheepcotes: the Walles of lofty Cittyes more a loofe doe Salute the Viewers of the same, than the simple Caues, which the Poore doe digge belowe the Mountayne Rockes. Wherefore it behooueth the Noble, and futch as haue charge of Common wealth, to lyue an honest Lyfe, and beare their port vpright, that none haue cause to discourse vpon their wicked deedes and naughty life. And aboue all modesty ought to be kept by Women,



whom as their race, Noble birth, au<sup>c</sup>thority and name, maketh them more famous, euen so their vertue, honefty, chastity, and continencie more prayse worthy. And behoueful it is, that like as they wishe to be honoured aboue all other, so their life do make them worthy of that honour, without disgracing their name by deed or worde, or blemishing that brightnesse which may commend the fame. I greatly feare that all the Princely factes, the employtes and conquests done by the Babylonian Queene Semyramis, neuer was recommended wyth sutch prayse, as hir vice had shame in records by those which left remembrance of auncient acts. Thus I say, because a woman being as it were the Image of sweetnesse, curtesie and shamefastnesse, so soone as she steppeth out of the right tract, and abandoneth the sweete smel of hir duety and modesty, besides the denigration of hir honour, thrusteth her selfe into infinite Troubles, causeth ruine of sutch whych should bee honoured and prayed, if Womens Allurementes solicted theym not to Folly. I wyll not heere Indeuour my selfe to seeke for examples of Samson, Salomon or other, which suffred themselues fondly to be abused by Women: and who by meane of them be tumbled into great faults, and haue incurred greater perils: contentinge my selfe to recyte a ryght pitifull History done almost in our tyme, when the French vnder leadinge of that notable Capitayne Gaston de Foix, vanquished the force of Spayne and Naples at the Iourney of Rauenna in the time of the French Kynge called Lewes the twelfth, who married the Lady Mary, Daughter to Kynge Henry the seuenth, and Sister to the Victorious Prynce of worthy memory kynge Henry the eyght, Wyfe (after the death of the sayd Lewes) to the puiffaunt Gentleman Charles, late Duke of Suffolke. In the very tyme then lyued a Gentleman of Naples called Antonio Bologna, who hauing bin master of Household to Fredericke of Aragon, somtime king of Naples, after the French had expelled those of Aragon out of that Citty, the sayde Bologna retyred into Fraunce, and thereby recovered the goods, which hee possessed in his countrey. The Gentleman besides that he was valiant of his persone, a good man. of Warre, and wel esteemed amongs the best, had a passing nombre of good graces, which made him to be loued and cherished of euery

wight: and for riding and managing of greate horfe, he had not his fellow in Italy: he could also play exceedyng well and trim vpon the Lute, whose fayning voyce so wel agreed therevnto, that the moſte melancholike perfons would forget their heauineſſe, vpon hearing of his heauenly noyſe: and beſides theſe qualtyties, he was of perſonage comely, and of good proportion. To be ſhort: nature hauing trauayled and diſpoyled hir Treafure Houſe for enriching of him, he had by Arte gotten that, which made him moſt happy and worthy of prayſe, which was, the knowledge of good letters, wherein he was ſo well trayned, as by talke and diſpute thereof, he made thoſe to bluſh that were of that ſtate and profeſſion. Antonio Bologna hauing left Fredericke of Aragon in Fraunce, who expulſed out of Naples was retired to king Lewes, went home to his houſe to lyue at reſt and to auoyd trouble, forgetting the delicates of Courtes and houſes of great men, to be the only huſband of his owne reueneue. But what? it is impoſſible to eſchue that which the heauens haue determind vpon vs: or to ſhunne the vnhappe which ſeemeth to follow vs, as it were naturally proceeding from our mother's Wombe: in ſutch wyſe as many times, he which ſeemeth the wiſeſt man, guided by miſfortune, haſteth himſelf with ſtouping head to fall headlonge into hys death and ruine. Euen ſo it chaunced to this Neapolitane Gentleman: for in the very ſame place where he attained his aduaunement, he receiued alſo his diminution and decay, and by that houſe which preferred hym to what he had, he was de pryued, both of his eſtate and life: the diſcourſe whereof you ſhall vnderſtande. I haue tolde you already, that this Gentleman was Mayſter of the kinge of Naples houſehold, and beyng a gentle perſon, a good Courtier, wel trained vp, and wyſe for gouernment of himſelf in the Courte and in the ſeruiſe of Princes, the Ducheffe of Malfi thought to intreate him that he would ſerue hir, in that office which he ſerued the King. This Ducheffe was of the houſe of Aragon, and ſiſter to the Cardinal of Aragon, which then was a rych and puiſſant perſonage. Being reſolued, and perſuaded, that Bologna was deuoutly affected to the houſe of Aragon, as one brought vp there from a Chylde: ſhee ſent for him home to his Houſe, and vpon hys repaire vſed vnto him theſe,

or like Woordes: "Mayster Bologna, sith your ill fortune, nay rather the vnhap of our whole Houfe is futch, as your good Lord and Mayster hath forgon his ftate and dignity, and that you therewithall haue loft a good Maifter, without other recompence but the prayfe which euery man giueth you for your good feruice, I haue thought good to intreat you to doe me the honor, as to take charge of the gouernment of my Houfe, and to vse the fame, as you did that of the King your maifter. I know well that the office is to vnworthy for your calling; notwithstanding you be not ignorant what I am, and how neare to him in bloud, to whom you haue bene a Seruaunte fo faythfull and Louing; and albeit that I am no Queene, endued with greateft reueneue, yet with that little portyon I haue, I beare a Pryncely heart: and futch as you by experience do knowe what I haue done, and dayly do to thofe which depart my feruice, recompensing them according to their paine and trauaile: magnificence is obserued as well in the Courts of poore Princes, as in the ftately Palaces of great Kings and monarches. I do remembre that I haue read of a certain noble gentleman, a Perfian borne, called Ariobarzanes, who vfed great examples of curtefie and stoutneffe towards King Artaxerxes, wherewith the king wondred at his magnificence, and confessed himself to be vanquished: you shal take aduife of this request, and in the meane time do thiuk you will not refufe the fame, aswell for that my demaund is iust, as also being affured, that our Houfe and race is fo well imprinted in your heart, as it is impossible that the memory thereof can be defaced." The gentleman hearynge that curteous demaund of the Duchesse, knowing himselfe how deeply bound he was to the name of Aragon, and led by some vnknown prouocation to his great il luck, answered hir in this wise: "I would to God, Madame, that with fo good reafon and equity I were able to make denyall of your commaundment, as iustly you maye require the fame: wherfore for the bounden duety which I owe to the name and memorie of the houfe of Aragon, I make promife that I shall not only sustaine the trauell, but also the daunger of my Lyfe, dayly to be offred for your feruice: but I feele in mynde I know not what, which commaundeth me to withdraw my selfe to lyue alone at home within

my lyttle houle, and to be content with that I haue, forgoing the sumptuous charge of Prynces houfes, which Lyfe would be wel liked of my self, were it not for the feare that you Madame should be difcontented with my refusall, and that you should conceiue, that I difdained your offred charge, or contempne your Court for respect of the great Office I bare in the Courte of the Kyng, my Lord and Mayster: for I cannot receiue more honour, than to serue hir, which is the paragon of that stock and royal race. Therefore at all aduentures I am resolued to obey your will, and humbly to satisfie the duety of the charge wherein it pleaseth you to imploy me, more to pleasure you for auoiding of displeasure, then for desire I haue to lyue an honorable lyfe in the greatest Princes house of the world, sith I am discharged from him in whose name resteth my comfort and only stay, thinking to haue liued a solitary life, and to passe my yeres in rest, except it were in the pore abilitye of my seruice to that houle, wherunto I am bound continually to be a faithfull seruaunt. Thus Madame, you see me to be the readiest man of the world, to fulfil the request, and accomplishe futch other seruice wherein it shall please you to imploy me." The Duchesse thanked him very heartily, and gaue him charge of all hir housholde traine, commaunding ech person to do him futch reuerence as to hir self, and to obey him as the chief of al hir family. This Lady was a widow, but a passing faire Gentlewoman, fine and very yong, hauing a yong sonne vnder hir guard and keping, left by the deceased Duke hir husband, together with the Duchy, the inheritaunce of hir child. Now consider hir personage being futch, her easy life and delycate bringing vp, and hir daily view of the youthly trade and manner of Courtiers lyfe, whether she felt hir self pryckt wyth any desire, which burned hir heart the more incessantly, as the flames were hidden and couert: from the outward shew whereof shee stayed hir self so well as shee coulde. But shee followinge beste aduice, rather esteemed the prooue of Maryage, than to burne wyth so lyttle fire, or to incurre the exchange of louers, as many vnshamefaste strumpets do, which be rather giuen ouer, than satisfied with pleasure of loue. And to say the truthe, they be not guided by wisdom's lore, which suffer a maiden ripe for mariage to be long

vnwedded, or yong wife long to liue in widowe's state, what assurance so euer they make of their chaste and stayed lyfe. For bookes be to full of futch enterpryses, and houfes stored with examples of futch stolne and secrete practises, as there neede no further prooffe for assurance of our cause, the daily experience maketh plaine and manifest. And a great folly it is to build the fantasies of chastitye amid the follies of worldly pleasures. I will not goe about to make those matters impossible, ne yet will iudge at large, but that there be som maydens and Wyues, which wiselye can containe themselues amongs the troupe of amorous suters. But what? the experience is very hard, and the prooffe no lesse dangerous, and perchaunce in a moment the mind of some peruerted, which all their luyying dayes haue closed theyr Eares from the Sute of those that haue made offer of louyng seruice. And hereof we neede not run to forrayne Hyftories, ne yet to seeke records that be auncient, fith wee may see the daily effects of the lyke, practised in Noble houfes, and Courtes of Kyngs and Prynces. That this is true, example of this fayre Duchesse, who was moued wyth that desyre which pricketh others that be of Flesh and Bone. Thys Lady waxed very weary of lying alone, and gryeued hir Hearte to be wythoute a match, specially in the Nyght, when the secrete silence and darke-nesse of the same presented beefore the eyes of hir mind, the Image of the pleasure which she felt in the lyfe tyme of hir deceased Lord and Husband, whereof now feelyng hir selfe despoyled, she felt a contynuall Combat, and durst not attempte that which she desyred most, but eschued the thyng wherof hir Mind lyked best. "Alas (sayd shee) is it possible after the taste of the Value of honest obedyence whych the Wyfe oweth vnto hir Husband, that I should desyre to suffer the Heat whych burneth and altereth the martyred myndes of those that subdue themselues to loue? Can futch attempt pierce the heart of me to become amorous by forgetting and straying from the limmetts of honest life? But what desire is this? I haue a certayne vnacquaynted lust, and yet very well know not what it is that moueth me, and to whom I shall vow the spoyle thereof. I am truly more fond and foolyshe than euer Narcissus was, for there is neyther shadow nor voyce, vpon which I can well stay my sight, nor yet simple Imagination of any worldly

man, whereuppon I can arrest the conceyt of my vnstayed heart, and the desires which prouoke my mynde. Pygmalion loued once a Marble Piller, and I haue but one desire, the colour whereof is more pale than death. There is nothyng which can geue the same so much as one spot of vermilion red. If I doe discouer these appetites to any wight, perhaps they will mock me for my labor, and for all the beauty and Noble byrth that is in me, they will make no conscience to deeme me for their iesting stock, and to solace themselues with reherfall of my fond conceits. But sith there is no enemy in the field, and that but simple suspicion doth assayle me, why breake I not the same, and deface the entier remembrance of the lightnesse of my brayne? It appertayneth vnto mee to shewe my selfe, as issued from the Noble house of Aragon: to me it doeth belonge to take heede how I erre or degenerate from the royall blood whereof I came." In this fort that fayre Wydow and young Princeffe fantasied in the night vppon the discourse of hir appetites. But when the day was come, seeing the great multitude of the Neapolitan Lords and Gentlemen that marched vp and downe the Citty, eyinge and beholdinge their best beloued, or vsing talke of loue with them whose seruants they were, all that which she thought vpon in the night, vanished so sone as the flame of burned Straw, or the Poulder of Cannon shot, and purposed for any respect to liue no longer in that fort, but promised the conquest of some frend that was lusty and discreete. But the difficulty rested in that she knew not vpon whom to fixe hir loue, fearing to bee slaundered, and also that the light disposition and maner of most part of youth were to be suspected, in sutch wise as giuing ouer al them which vanted vpon their Gennets, Turkey Palfreis, and other Coursers alonge the Citty of Naples, shee purposed to take repast of other Venison, than of that fond and wanton troupe. So hir mishap began already to spin the threede which choked the Ayre and Breath of hir vnhappy life. Yee haue heard before that Mayster Bologna was one of the wisest and most perfect Gentlemen that the land of Naples that tyme brought forth, and for his Beauty, Proportion, Galantnesse, Valiaunce, and good grace, without comparison. His fauour was so sweete and pleasant, as they which kept him company, had fomewhat to do to abstayne their affection.

Who then could blame thys fayre Princeffe, if (preffed wyth desire of match, to remoue the ticklish infligations of her wanton flesh, and hauing in hir prefence a man so wife) shee did set hir minde on hym, or fantafy to mary him? Would not that party for calming of his thirst and hunger, being set at a table before fundry sorts of delicate viands, ease his hunger? Me thinke the perfon doth greatly forget himfelfe, which hauing handfast vpon occasion, suffreth the same to vanish and fly away, sith it is wel known that she being bald behinde, hath no place to seafe vpon when desire moueth vs to lay hold vpon hir. Which was the cause that the Duchesse became extremely in loue with the mayster of hir house. In sutch wyse as before al men, she spared not to prayse the great perfections of him whom she desired to be altogether hers. And so she was inamored, that it was as possible to see the night to be voide of darknesse, as the Duchesse without the prefence of hir Bologna, or els by talke of words to set forth his prayse, the continuall remembrance of who (for that shee loued him as hirfelfe) was hir onely minde's repast. The Gentleman that was full wyse, and had at other times felt the great force of the passion which proceedeth from extreme loue, immediatly did mark the countenance of the Duchesse, and perceyued the same so neere, as vnfaynedly hee knew that very ardently the Lady was in loue with him: and albeit he sawe the inequality and difference betweene them both, she being forced out of the royall blood, and himself of meaner calling, yet knowing loue to haue no respect to state or dignity, determined to folow his fortune, and to serue hir which so louingly shewed hir selfe to him. Then sodaynely reprouing his fonde conceit, he sayd vnto himself: "What folly is that I enterprife, to the preiudice and peril of mine honor and life? Ought the wisedome of a Gentleman to stray and wandre through the assaults of an appetite rising of sensuality, and that reason gieue place to that which doeth participate with brute beasts deprived of all reason by subduinge the minde to the affections of the body? No, no, a vertuous man ought to let shine in him selfe the force of the generosity of his minde. This is not to liue according to the spirite, when pleasure shall make vs forget our duty and sauegard of our Conscience. The reputation of a wife Gentleman resteth not only to be valiant,

and skilfull in feates of armes, or in seruice of the Noble: but needfull it is for him by difcretion to make himfelfe prayfe worthy, and by vanquifhing of himfelfe to open the gate to fame, whereby he may euerlaftingly make himfelfe glorious to all posterity. Loue pricketh and prouoketh the fpirite to do well, I do confesse, but that affection ought to be adressed to some vertuous end, tending to mariage, for otherwise that vnspotted Image shall be soyled wyth the villany of Beaftly pleasure. Alas," sayd he, "how easie it is to dispute, when the thyng is absent, which can both force and violently affayle the Bulwarks of most constant hearts. I full well doe see the troth, and doe feele the thing that is good, and knowe what behoueth mee to follow: but when I view the peres beauty of my Lady, hir graces, wisdome, behaiour and curtesie, when I see hir to cast so louinge an eye vpon me, that she vseth so great familiarity, that she forgetteth the greatness of hir house to abase hirfelfe for my respect: how is it possible that I should be so foolish to dispise a duety so rare and precious, and to set light by that which the Noblest would pursue wyth all reuerence and deuoyre? Shall I be so voyde of wisdome to suffer the yonge Princeffe to see hirfelfe contempned of mee, thereby to conuert hir loue to teares, by setting hir mynde upon an other, that shall seek mine ouerthrow? Who knoweth not the fury of a woman: specially the Noble dame, by seeing hirfelfe despised? No, no, she loueth me, and I will be hir seruaunt, and vse the fortune proffred. Shal I be the first simple Gentleman that hath married or loued a Princeffe? Is it not more honourable for mee to settle my mind vpon a place so high, than vpon some simple wench by whom I shall neyther attayne profit, or aduancement? Baldouine of Flaunders, did not he a Noble enterprife when he carried away Iudith the daughter of the French kynge, as she was passing vpon the Seas into England, to be married to the kynge of that Countrey? I am neither Pirat nor Aduenturer, for the Lady loueth me. What wrong doe I then to any person by rendringe loue agayne? Is not she at liberty? To whom ought shee to make account of hir deedes and doinges, but to God alone and to hir owne Conscience? I wyll loue hir, and cary lyke affection for the loue which I know and see that she beareth vnto me, beinge



affured that the same is directed to good ende, and that a Woman for wyfe as she is, will not hazard the bleamish of hir honor." Thus Bologna framed the plot for intertaynment of the Duchesse (albeit hir loue already was fully bent vpon him) and fortified hym selfe agaynst all perillous myfhap and chaunce that might succede, as ordinarily you see that Louers conceyue all things for their aduantage, and fantasie dreames agreeable to their most desire, resemblinge the Mad and Bedlem persons which haue before their eyes, the figured Fantasies whych cause the conceipt of their fury, and stay themselues vpon the vision of that which most troubleth their offended Brayne. On the other side, the Duchesse was in no lesse care of hir Louer, the will of whom was hid and secret, whych more did vexe and torment hir, than the fire of loue that burned hir feruently. She could not tell what way to hold, to do him vnderstand hir heart and affection. She feared to discouer the same vnto hym, doubtinge eyther that some fond and rigorous aunswere, or the reueylinge of hir mynde to hym, whose presence pleased hir more than all of the men of the World. "Alas," sayd shee, "am I happed into so straunge misery, that with mine owne mouth I must make request to him, which with all humility ought to offer mee hys service? Shall a Lady of sutch bloud as I am, be constrained to sue, where all other be required by importunate instance of their Suters? Ah loue, loue, what so euer he was that clothed thee wyth sutch puiffaunce, I dare say he was the cruell ennimy of man's freedom. It is impossible that thou hadst thy being in heauen, sith the clemency and curteous influence of the same, inuesteth man with better benefits, than to suffer hir nourse children to be intreated with sutch rigor. He lieth which sayth that Venus is thy mother, for the fwetenes and good grace that resteth in that pitifull Goddesse, who taketh no pleasure to see louers perced with so egre trauayles as that which afflicteth my heart. It was some fierce cogitation of Saturne, that brought thee forth, and sent thee into the worlde to breake the ease of them which liue at rest without any passion or grieve. Pardon me Loue, if I blasphemeth thy maiefty, for the stresse and endlesse grief wherein I am plunged, maketh me thus to roue at large, and the doubts, which I conceyue, do take away the health and foundnesse

of my mynde, the little experience in thy schole causeth this amaze in me, to be sollicit with desire that counterfayeth the duty, honor, and reputation of my state: the party whom I loue, is a Gentleman, vertuous, valiant, sage, and of good grace. In this there is no cause to blame Loue of blindnesse, for all the inequality of our houses, apparant vpon the first fight and shew of the fame. But from whence Issue Monarchs, Princes and great Lords, but from the naturall and common Masse of Earth, whereof other men do come? what maketh these differences betwene those that loue ech other, if not the sottish opinion which we conceiue of greatnesse, and preheminance: as though naturall affections bee like to that ordayned by the fantasie of men in their lawes extreme. And what greater right haue Princes to ioyne wyth a simple Gentlewoman, than the Princeesse to mary a Gentleman, and futch as Anthonio Bologna is, in whom Heauen and Nature haue forgotten nothinge to make him equall with them which march amongs the greatest. I thinke we be the dayly slaues of the fond and cruell fantasie of those Tyraunts, which say they haue puissance ouer vs: and that straininge our will to their tyranny, we be still bound to the chaine like the Galley slaue. No, no, Bologna shall be my Husband, for of a freend I purpose to make my loyall and lawful Husband, meaning therby not to offend God and men together, and pretend to liue without offence of conscience, wherby my soule shal not be hindred for any thyng I do, by marying him whom I so straungely loue. I am sure not to be deceyued in loue. He loueth me so much or more as I do him, but he dareth not disclose the same, fearing to be refused and cast of with shame. Thus 2 vnited wils, and 2 hearts tied together with equal knot cannot chose but bryng forth fruites worthy of futch society. Let men say what they list, I will doe none otherwyse than my heade and mynd haue already framed. Semblably I neede not make accompt to any persone for my fact, my body, and reputation beyng in full liberty and freedome. The bond of mariage made, shall couer the faulte whych men woulde fynde, and leauyng myne estate, I shall do no wrong but to the greatnesse of my house, which maketh me amongs men right honorable. But these honors be nothyng worth, where the Mynd is voyd of conten-

tation, and wher the hearte pryckte forward by desire leaueth the Bodye and Mynde restlesse wythout quiet." Thus the Duchesse founded hir enterpryse, determining to mary hir household Mayster, seeking for occasion and time, meete for disclosing of the same, and albeit that a certaine naturall shamefastnesse, which of custome accompanieth Ladies, did close hir mouth, and made hir to deferre (for a certain time) the effect of hir resolu'd minde: yet in the ende vanquished with loue and impacience, she was forced to breake of silence, and to assure hir self in him, reiecting feare conceiued of shame, to make hir waye to pleasure, which she lusted more than mariage, the same seruyng hir, but for a Maske and couerture to hide hir follies and shamelesse lusts, for which she did the penaunce that hir folly deserued. For no colorable dede or deceytful trompery can serue the excuse of any notable wyckednesse. She then throughly perswaded in her intent, dreamyng and thinking of nought else, but vpon the imbracement of hir Bologna, ended and determined hir conceits and pretended follies: and vpon a time sent for him vp into hir chamber, as commonly she did for the affaires and matters of hir house, and taking him a side vnto a window, hauing prospect into a garden, she knew not how to begin hir talk: (for the heart being seased, the mind troubled, and the witts out of course, the tongue fayled to do his office,) in futch wife, as of long time she was vnable to speake one onely woord. He surprised with like affection, was more astonied by seeing the alteration of his Ladie. So the two Louers stode still like Images beholding one another, without any mouing at all, vntill the Lady the hardiest of them bothe, as feelinge the most vehement and greatest gryef, tooke Bologna by the hand, and dissembling what she thought, vsed this or futch language: "If any other besides your selfe (Gentleman) should vnderstand the secreet which now I purpose to disclose, I doubt what speeach were necessary to colour, what I shall speake: but being assured of your discretion and wisdom, and with what perfection nature hath indued you, and Arte, hauing accomplished that in you, which nature did begin to worke, as one bred and brought vp in the royal court of the seconde Alphonse, of Ferdinando, and Frederick of Aragon my coufins, I wil make no doubt at all to manifest to

you the hidden secretes of my heart, being well persuaded that when you shall both heare and fauor my reasons, and tast the light which I bring forth for me, easily you may iudge that mine aduice cannot be other than iust and reasonable. But if your conceits shall straye from that whych I determine, I shal be forced to thinke and saye that they which esteeme you wise and sage, and to be a man of good and ready wytte, be maruelously deceiued. Notwithstanding my heart foretelleth that it is impossible for mayster Bologna, to wandre so farre from equitie, but that by and by he wil enter the lyftes and dyscerne the White from Blacke, and the Wronge fro that whych is Iust and Ryghte: for so much as hitherto I neuer saw thinge done by you, which Preposterated or peruerted the good iudgement that all the world esteemeth to shine in you, the same well manifested and declared by your tongue, the right iudge of the Mynde, you knowe and see how I am a Wydow through the Death of that Noble Gentleman of good remembrance, the Duke my Lord and husbände: you be not ignorant also, that I haue lyued and gouerned my self in such wife in my Widow state, as there is no man so hard and seuer of iudgement, that can blason reproch of mee in that whych appertayneth to the honestye and reputation of such a Lady as I am, bearyng my port so righte, as my conscience yeldeth no remorse, supposinge that no Man hathe wherewith to byte and accuse me. Touchyng the order of the goods of the Duke my Sonne, I have vsed them with diligence and discretion, as besides the Dettes, whych I haue dyscharged sithens the death of my Lord: I haue purchased a goodly Manor in Calabria, and haue annexed the same to the Dukedome of his heire: and at this day doe not owe one peny to any creditor that lent money to the Duke, which he toke vp to furnish the charges in the warres, which he sustayned in the seruice of the Kinges our foueraine Lords in the late warres for the Kyngdome of Naples. I haue as I suppose by this meanes stopped the slanderous mouth and giuen cause vnto my sonne, during his life to accompt himself bound vnto his mother: now hauing till thys time liued for other, and made my selfe subiect more than nature could beare, I am entended to chaunge both my lyfe and condition. I haue tyll thys time run, trauallyed, and remoued to the

Castels and Lordeships of the Dukedome, to Naples and other places, being in mind to tary as I am a widow. But what new affayres and new counsell hath possesst my mynd? I haue traauayled and payned my self inoughe: I haue to long abidden a widowe's lyfe: I am determind therefore to prouyde a Husbande, who by louing me, shall honor and cherysh me according to the loue which I shall beare hym, and my desert. For to loue a man without mariage, God defend my hearte should euer think, and shal rather dye a hundred thousand deatnes, than a desire so wicked should foyle my conscience, knowyng well that a woman which setteth hir honor to sale, is lesse than nothing, and deserueth not the common ayre should breathe vpon hir, for all the reuerence that men do beare vnto them. I accuse no person, albeit that many noble women haue their forheds marked, with the blame of dishonest lyfe, and being honored of some, bee neuerthelesse the common Fable of the Worlde. To the intente then that sutch myshappe happen not to me, and perceyuyng my selfe vnable styll thus to lyue, beyng younge as I am, and (God bee thanked) neyther deformed nor yet paynted, I had rather bee the louyng Wyfe of a symple feere, than the Concubyne of a kynge or greate Prynce. And what? is the myghty Monarche able to washe away the faulte of hys Wyfe which hath abandoned him contrary to the duety and honesty which the vndefyled bed requyreth? no lesse then Prynceffes that whilom trespassed with those which were of baser stuffe than themselues. Messalina with hir imperiall robe could not so wel couer hir faults, but that the Historians, do defame hir with the name and title of a common woman. Faustina the Wyfe of the sage Monarch Marcus Aurelius, gayned lyke reporte by rendringe hir selfe to others pleasure, bysides hir lawfull Spouse. To mary my selfe to one that is myne equall, it is impossible, for so much as there is no Lorde in all this Countrey meete for my degree, but is to olde of age, the rest being dead in these later Warres. To mary a husband that yet is but a childe, is folly extreeme, for the inconueniences which daily chauce thereby, and the euil intreaty that Ladies do receyue when they come to age, when their nature waxeth cold, by reason whereof, imbracements be not so fauourable, and their husbandes glutted

with ordinary meate, vs̄e to run in exchange: wherefore I am resolued without respite or delay, to choose some well qualified and renowned Gentleman, that hath more vertue than richeffe, that is of better Fame and brute, then of wealth and reueneue, to the entent I may make him my Lord, Espouse, and Husbande. For I cannot imploy my loue vpon treasure, which may bee taken away from him, in whom richeffe of the minde doth fayle, and shall bee better content to see an honest Gentleman with little liuing, to be prayed and commended of ech Degree for his good Deedes, than a rich Carle curffed and detested of all the World. Thus much I say, and it is the summe of all my secretes, wherein I pray your counsell and aduice. I know that some will be offended with my choise, and the Lords my Brothers, specially the Cardinall will thincke it straunge, and receyue the same with ill Digesture, that much a do shall I haue to bee agreed with them and to remoue the grieffe they shall conceyue against mee for this myne attempt: wherefore I would the same should secretly be kept, until without peril and daunger eyther of my self or him, whome I pretende to marry, I may publish and manyfest, not my loue but the mariage which I hope in God shall soone bee consummate and accomplished wyth one, whome I doe loue better than my self, and who as I ful well do know, doeth loue me better than his owne propre lyfe." Mayster Bologna, which tyll then hearkned to the oration of the Duchesse without mouing, feeling himselfe touched so neare, and hearinge that his Lady had made hir approche for mariage, stode still astonied, hys tongue not able to frame one word, onely fantasied a thousand chimeraes in the Ayre, and formed like number of imaginations in his minde, not able to coniecture what hee was, to whom the duchesse had vowed hir loue, and the possession of hir beauty. He could not thinke that this ioy was prepared for hymselfe, for that his Lady spake no word of him, and he lesse durst open his mouth, and yet was wel affured that she loued him beyond measure. Notwithstanding knowing the fickleneffe and vustable heart of women, he sayd vnto himselfe that she would change hir mynde, for seeing him to be so great a Coward, as not to offer his seruice to a Lady by whom hee saw himselfe so many times both wantonly looked vpon, and intertayned wyth some secrecie more

than familiar. The Duchesse which was a fine and subtle dame, seeinge hir friend rapt with the passion, and standing still vn-mouueable through feare, pale and amazed, as if hee had bene accused and condemned to dy, knew by that Countenance and astonishment of Bologna, that she was perfectly beloued of him: and so meaning not to suffer him any longer to contynue in that amaze, ne yet to further feare hym, wyth dissembled and fayned mariage of any other but wyth hym, she tooke hym by the hand, and beholdinge him with a wanton and luring eye, (in futch fort as the curious Philofophers themselues would awake, if futch a Lampe and Torche did burne wythin theyr studies,) she sayde thus vnto hym: "Seignor Anthonio, I pray you be of good cheere, and torment not your selfe for any thing that I haue sayd: I know well, and of long time haue perceyued what good and faythful lone you beare mee, and with what affection you haue serued me, fithens you first came into my company. Thinke me not to bee so ignorant, but that I know ful wel by outward signes, what secret thoughts be hid in the inner heart: and that coniectures many times do geue me true and certayne knowledge of concealed things: and am not so foolish to thinke you to be so vndiscrete but that you haue marked my Countenance and maner, and thereby haue knowen that I haue bene more affectioned to you, than to any other: for that cause (sayde shee, strayinge hym by the hand very louingly, and wyth cheerefull colour in hir face) I sware vnto you, and doe promise that if you thinke meete, it shalbe none other but your self whom I wil haue, and desire to take to husband and lawful spouse, beyng assured so much of you, as the loue which so longe time hath ben hidden and couered in our hartes, shall appeare by so euident prooffe, as onely death shal end and vndo the same." The Gentleman hearing futch sodain talke, and the assurance of that which he most wished for, albeit he saw the daunger extreme wherunto he launched himself by espousing this great Ladie, and the ennimies he should get by entring futch alliance: notwythstandynge building vpon vaine hope, and thinking at length that the choler of the Aragon brother would passe away if they vnderstoode the maryage, determined to pursue the purpose, and not to refuse that greate preferment, being so pro-

digally offered : for which cause hee answered his Lady in this manner : “ If it were in my power madame, to bring to passe that, which I desire for your service by acknowledging the benefits and favours which you depart vnto me, as my mind presenteth thanks for the same, I would think my self the happiest Gentleman that lyueth, and you the best served Princeesse of the world. For one better beloved (I dare presume to say, and so long as I liue will affirme) is not to be found. If tyll thys time I delayed to open that which now I discouer vnto you, I beseeche you madame to impute it to the greatness of your estate, and to the duty of my calling and office in your house, being not seemelye for a seruante to talk of such secrets with his Lady and Mistresse. And truly the payne which I haue indured to hold my peace, and to hyde my grief, hath ben more noysom to me than one hundred thousand like sorrowes together, although it had bene lawfull to haue reuealed them to some trusty friend: I doe not denye madame, but of long time you did perceiue my follie and presumption, by addressing my minde so high, as to the Aragon blood, and to such a princeesse as you be. And who can beguile the Eye of a louer, specially of hir, whose Paragon for good minde, wisedome and gentleness is not? And I confesse to you besides, that I haue most euidentlye perceiued how a certain loue hath lodged in your gracious hearte, wherwith you bare me greater affection, than you dyd to anye other within the compasse of your family. But what? great Ladies heartes be fraught with secretes and conceites of other effects than the Minds of Symple Women, which caused me to hope for none other guerdon of my loyal and faithful affection, than Deathe, and the same very short, and sith that little hope accompanied wyth great, nay, rather extreme passion, is not able to giue sufficient force, both to suffer and to stablish my heart with constancye. Nowe for so much as of your motion, grace, curtesie and liberality the same is offered, and that it pleaseth you to accept me for yours, I humblye beseeche you to dispose of me not as husband, but of one which is, and shalbe your Seruant for euer, and such as is more ready to obey, than you to commaund. It resteth now Madame, to confyder how, and in what wise our affayres are to be directed, that thynges being in assurance, you may so liue



without perill and brute of flanderous tongues, as your good fame and honest report may continue without spot or blemish." Beholde the first Acte of this Tragedy, and the prouision of the fare which afterwarde sent them bothe to their graue, who immediatly gaue their mutual faith: and the houre was assigned the next day, that the faire Princeffe should be in hir chamber alone, attended vpon with one onely Gentlewoman which had ben brought vp with her from the cradle, and was made priuy to the heauy mariage of those two louers which was consummate in hir presence. And for the present time they passed the same in words: for ratification whereof they went to bed together: but the pain in the end was greater than the pleasure, and had ben better for them bothe, yea and also for the third, that they had shewed themselves so wyse in the deede, as discrete in keeping silence of that which was don: for albeit theyr mariage was secrete, and thereby politikely gouerned themselves in their stethes and robberyes of Loue, and that Bologna more ofte helde the state of the Stewarde of the House by Daye, than of Lorde of the same, and by Nyghte supplied that Place, yet in the ende, the thyng was perceyued whych they desyred to bee closely kepte. And as it is impossible to tyll and culture a fertile Grounde, but that the same muste yelde some Fruycte, euen so the Duchesse after many pleasures (being ripe and plentiful) became with childe, which at the firste astonned the married couple: neuertheless the same so well was prouided for, as the first Childbed was kept secret, and none did know thereof: the Childe was nourced in the Towne, and the father desired to haue him named Frederick, for remembrance of the parents of hys Wyfe. Nowe fortune whych lieth in dayly wayte and ambushment, and lyketh not that men should longe Loyter in Pleasure, and Passetime, being eniuous of sutch prosperity, cramped so the Legges of our two Louers, as they must needs chaunge their Game, and learne some other practise: for so much as the Duchesse beinge great with Childe agayne, and deliuered of a Girle, the businesse of the same was not so secretly done, but that it was discouered. And it sufficed not that the brute was noyed through Naples, but that the sound flew further of: As eche man doth know that Rumor hath many mouthes, who

wyth the multitude of hys Tongues, and Trumps, Proclaymeth in diuers and fundry places, the things which chaunce in al the Regions of the Earth: euen so that bablinge foole, caried the newes of that second Childbed to the eares of the Cardinall of Aragon the Duchesse brother, being then at Rome. Think what Ioy, and Pleasure the Aragon brothers had, by hearinge the report of their Sifter's fact: I dare prefume to say, that albeit they were extremely wroth wyth this happened Slaunder, and wyth that dishonest fame which the Duchesse had gotten throughout Italy, yet farre greater was their sorrow and grieffe for that they did not know what hee was, that so curteously was allied to their house, and in their loue had increased their Ligneage: and therefore swelling wyth despite, and rapt with fury to see themselues so defamed by one of their Bloude, they purposed by all meanes whatfoeuer it cost them, to know the lucky Louer that had so well tilled the Duchesse their Sifter's field. Thus desirous to remoue that shame from before their eyes, and to bee reuenged of a wrong so notable, they sent Espials round about, and scouts to Naples, to view and spy the behaiour and talke of the Duchesse, to settle some certayne Iudgement of him, which stealingly was become their Brother in lawe. The Duchesse Courte beinge in thys trouble, she dyd continually perceiue in hir house, hir brothers men to marke hir countenance, and to note those that came thither to visite hir, and to whom she vsed greatest familiaritie, bicause it is impossible but that the fire, although it be raked vnder the ashes, must giue some heat: and albeit the two Louers vsed eche others company, without shewing any Sygne of their affection, yet they purposed to chaung theyr estate for a tyme, by yelding truce to their pleasures: yea, and although Bologna was a wife and prudent personage, fearing to be surprised vpon the acte, or that the Gentlewoman of the chamber corrupted with money, or forced by feare, should pronounce any matter to his hinderance or disadvantage, determined to absent himself from Naples, yet not so sodainly but that he made the Duchesse his faithfull Lady and companion priuy of his intent: and as they were secretly in their chamber together, he vsed these or sutch like words: "Madame, albeit the right good intent and vnfained conscience, is free from

faulte, yet the iudgement of men hath further relation to the exterior apparence, than to vertue's force and innocency it self, as ignoraunt of the secrets of the thought: and so in things that be well done, wee must of necessity fall into the sentence of those, whom beastly affection rauisheth more, than ruled reason. You see the solempne watch and garde whych the Seruaunts of the Lordes your Brothers do within your house, and the suspection which they haue conceiued by reason of your second Childbed, and by what meanes they labor truely to know how your affaires procede, and things do passe. I feare not death where your seruice may be aduanced, but yf herein the Maiden of your Chamber be not secrete, if she bee corrupted, and if she keepe not close that which shee ought to doe, it is not ignoraunt to you that it is the losse of my lyfe, and shall dye suspected to bee a Whoremonger and varlot, euen I, (I say) shal incurre that Peryll, whych am your true and Lawfull Husband. Thys separation chaunceth not by iustyce or desert, sith the cause is to ryghteous for vs: but rather your brethren will procure my death, when I shall thinke the same in greatest assurance. If I had to do but wyth one or two, I would not chaunge the place, ne march one step from Naples, but be assured, that a great band, and the same well armed will fet vppon me: I pray you, madame, suffer me to retire for a time, for I am assured that when I am absent, they will neuer foile their hands or imbrue their sweardes in your Bloud. If I doubted any thing at all of Peryll touchyng your owne person, I had rather a hundred hundred tymes die in your Company, than lyue to see you no more: but out of doubt I am, that if our affaires were discouered, and they knew you to be begotten with Chyld by me, your safety would be provided for wher I should sustaine the penance of the fact, committed without fault or sinne: and therefore I am determind to goe from Naples, to order mine affaires, and to cause my Reuenue to be brought to the place of mine abode, and from thence to Ancona, vntyl it pleaseth God to mitigate the rage of your brethren, and recouer their good wills for consent to our mariage. But I meane not to do or conclude any thing without your aduise, and if thys intente doe not like you, gyue me Councell Madame, what I were beste to doe, that

both in Lyfe and Death you may knowe your faythfull seruaut and louing Husband is ready to obey and please you." This good Lady hearing hir husband's discourfe, vncertayne what to do, wept bitterly, as well for grief to lose his prefence, as for that she felt her self with child the third time: the sighes and teares, the fobbes and heauy lookes, which she threwe forth vpon hir sorrowfull husband, gaue sufficient witnesse of hir payne and Gryef: and if none had hard hir, I thynke her playntes would haue well expressed hir inwarde smarte of mynde. But like a wife Ladye seing the alleaged reasons of hir husbände, licensed him although agaynste hir minde, not wythout vtterance of these fewe Words, before hee went out of hir Chamber: "Deare husbände, if I were so well assured of the affectyon of my Brethren, as I am of my mayde's fidelity, I would entreat you not to leaue me alone: specially in the case I am, beyng wyth Chylde: but knowyng that to be iust and true whych you haue sayde, I am content to force my wyll for a certayne tyme, that hereafter we may lyue at rest together, ioyning our selues in the companye of our Chyldren and Famylye, voyde of those troubles, whych greate Courts ordinarily beare within the compasse of thcir Palaces. Of one thing I must intreat you, that so often as you can by trusty messenger, you send me word and intelligence of your health and state, bicause the same shall bring vnto me greater pleasure and contentation, than the welfare of mine owne: and bicause also, vpon sutch occurrences as shall chaunce, I may prouyde for myne owne affaires, the surety of my self, and of our Children." In saying so, she embraced him very amorously, and he kissed hir with so greate sorrow and grief of heart, as the soule was ready out of his Body to take hir flight, sorrowfull beyond measure so to leaue hir whome he loued, for the great curtesies and honor which hee had receiued at hir hands. In the end, fearing that the Aragon espials would come and discerie them in those priuities, Bologna tooke his leaue, and bad his Lady and spouse Farewell. And this was the second Acte of this Tragical Historie, to see a fugitive husband, secretly to mary, especially hir, vpon whome hee ought not so much as to loke but with feare and reuerence. Behold here (O ye foolish louers) a Glasse of your lightnesse, and yee Women, the course of

your fond behayor. It behoueth not the wife sodainly to execute their first motions and defyres of their heart for so much as they may be assured that pleasure is pursued so neare with a repentaunce so sharp to be suffered, and hard to be digested, as their voluptuoufnesse shall vtterly discontent them. True it is, that mariages be don in heauen and performed in earth, but that saying may not be applied to fooles, which gouerne them selues by carnall desires, whose scope is but pleasure, and the reward many times equall to their follie. Shall I be of opinion that a household seruauent oughte to sollicite, nay rather suborne the Daughter of his Lorde without punishment, or that a vyle and abiect person dare to mount vpon a Prynces Bed? No, no, pollicye requyareth order in all, and eche wight ought to bee matched according to theyr qualytye, wythout makynge a Pastyme of it to couer theyr Follyes, and knowe not of what Force Loue and Desteny be, except the same be refysted. A goodly thinge it is to Loue, but where reason looseth Place, Loue is wythoute his effecte, and the sequele rage and Madnesse: leaue we to discourse of those which beleue that they be confrayned to folowe the Force of theyr Mynde, and may easlye subdue themselues to the Lawes of Vertue and Honesty, lyke one that thrusteth hys Heade into a Sack, and thynkes he can not get out: futch people do please themselues in theyr losse, and thinke all well that is noysome to their Health, daily folowyng theyr owne delygthes. Come wee againe then to sir Bologna, who after he had left hys Wyfe in hir Castell, went to Naples, and hauing leased a rent vpon hir lands, and leuyed a good summe of Money, he repayred to Ancona a city of the patrimonye of the Romane church, whither hee caryed the two Chyldren, which he had of the Duchesse, causyng them to be brought vp with fuche Dyligence and care, as it is to be thought a Father well affectyoned to hys Wyfe would doe, and who delygthed to see a Braunch of the Tree, that to hym was the best beloued Fruyct of the World. There he hyred a house for hys trayne, and for those that wayted vpon hys Wyfe, who in the meane tyme was in great care, and could not tell of what Woode to make hir arrowes, perceyuing that hir Belly began to swell, and grow to the tyme of hir deliury, seeing that from Day to Day, hir Brothers seruauents were at hir back, voide

of Counſel and aduiſe, if one euenyng ſhe had not ſpoken to the Gentlewoman of her chamber, touchyng the doubts and peryll wherein ſhe was, not knowing how ſhe might be deliuered from the ſame. That maiden was gentle and of a good mind and ſtomake, and loued hir miſtreſſe very derely, and ſeeing hir ſo amazed and tormenting hir ſelf to death, mindyng to fray hir no further, ne to reprove hir of hir fault which could not be amended, but rather to prouyde for the daunger wherunto ſhe had hedlong caſt hir ſelfe, gaue hir this aduiſe: "How now, Madame" (ſayd ſhee,) "is that wyſdom whych from your Chyldhode hath ben ſo famylar in you, diſlodged from your breſt in time when it ought chiefly to reſt for incountryng of thoſe miſhaps that are comming vpon vs? think you to auoid the dangers, by thus tormentyng your ſelf, except you ſet your hands to the work therby to gyue the repulſe to aduerſe fortune? I haue heard you many tymes ſpeake of the Conſtancye and Force of Mynde, whych ought to ſhine in the deedes of Princeſſes, more clerely than amongs thoſe dames of baſer houſe, and whych ought to make them appeare like the ſunne and the little ſtarres: and yet I ſee you nowe aſtonned, as though you had neuer forſeene, that aduerſity chaunceth ſo wel to catch the great within his clouches, as the baſe and ſimple fort. It is but now that you haue called to remembrance that which might inſue your mariage with ſir Bologna? Did hys onely preſence aſſure you againſt the waits of fortune, and was it the thought of paines, feares and frights, which now turmoileth your dolorous mind? Ought you thus to vexe your ſelfe, when nede it is to thinke how to ſaue both your honor, and the fruiſte wythin your intrailles? If your ſorrow be ſo great ouer ſir Bologna, and if you feare your childbed wil be defcried, why ſeeke you not meanes to attempt ſome voyage, for couering of the fact, to beguile the eyes of them whych ſo diligently do watch you? Doth your hearte faile you in that matter? whereof do you dreame? why ſweat and freat you before you make me answer?" "Ah ſweete hearte," (answered the Ducheffe,) "if thou felteſt the payne which I do ſuffer, thy tongue would not be ſo mutch at wyll, as thou ſheweſt it now to bee for reproofe of my ſmall Conſtancie. I do ſorrow ſpecially for the cauſes which thou alleageſt, and

about all, for that I know well, that if my Brethren had neuer so little intelligence of my beyng with Chyld, I were vndone and my Lyfe at an end, and peradventure poore Wench, thou shouldest beare the penaunce for my sinne. But what way can I take, that still these Candel may not giue light, and I voided of the Trayne which ought to wayghte vpon my Brethren? I thinke if I should descend into Hell, they would know, whither any shadowe there were in loue with me. Now geffe if I should trauayle the Realme, or retire to any other place, whither they would let me liue in peace? Nothing lesse, for suspect they would, that the cause of my departure proceeded of desyre to liue at liberty, to dallye wyth hym, whom they Iudge to be other than my lawfull husbande: and it may so be, that as they be Wicked and suspicious, so will they doubt of my beyng wyth Chylde and thereby shall I be farre more infortunate by trauaylyng, than here in miserie amidst myne anguise: and you the rest that be keepers of my Councell, fall into greater Daunger, vpon whome no doubt they will be reuenged: and fleshe themselues for your vnhappy waiting and attendance vpon vs." "Madame," sayd the bolde Maiden, "be not afraide, and followe mine aduise, for I hope that it shall be the meanes both to see your spouse, and to rid those troublesome verlets out of your house, and in like maner safely to deliuer you into good affurance." "Say your mind," quod the Ladye, "for it may be, that I wyll gouerne my self according to the same." "Mine aduise is then," sayd the Gentlewoman, "to let your household vnderstand, that you made a Vowe to visite the Holy Temple of our Lady of Loretto, (a Famous Pilgrimage in Italy) and that you commaund your Trayn to make themselues ready to wayt vpon you for accomplyshment of your deuotion, and from thence you shall take your Iourney to sojourne at Ancona, whither before you goe hence, you shall send your Moueables and Plate, wyth futch Moneye as you thynke necessarye for furnyshyng of your Charges: and afterwards God will performe the rest, and through his holy mercy will guyde and direct al your affaires." The Duchesse hearing the mayden speake her good aduise and amazed of her sodayne inuention, could not forbear to imbrace and kyffe hir, blessing the houre wherein she was borne, and that euer she

chaunced into hir Companye, to whome afterwards shee sayd: "My Wenche, I had well determined to gyue ouer myne estate and Noble porte, ioyfully to lyue a simple Gentlewoman with my deare and welbeloued Husband, but I could not deuysse how I should conueniently departe thys countrey without suspition of some folly: and sith that thou hast so well instructed mee for brynging that same to passe, I promyse thee that so diligentely hy counsel shal be performed, as I see the same to be right good and necessary: for rather had I see my husband, beyng alone without title of Duchesse or great Lady, than to liue without him beautified with the graces and Names of Honor and preheminance." This deuised plot was no soner grounded, but she gaue order for execution of the same, and brought it to passe with sutch dexterity as the Ladye in lesse than viii. Dayes had conueyed and sente the most part of hir Moueables, and specially the chyefest and beste to Ancona, taking in the meane time hir way towards Loretto after she had bruted hir solempne vow made for that Pilgrimage. It was not sufficient for this folysh Woman to take a Husband more to glut hir libidinous appetite, than for other occasion, except shee added to hir sinne another excreable impietie, making holy places and duties of deuotion, to be as it were the shadowes of hir folly. But let vs consider the force of Louers rage, which so soone as it hath seafed vpon the minds of men, we see how maruellous be the effects thereof, and with what straint and puiffaunce that madnesse subdueth the wife and strongest worldlings: who woulde thinke that a great Lady besides the abandoning hir estate, hir goodes and Chyld, would haue mispyfed hir honor and reputation, to follow like a vagabond, a pore and simple Gentleman, and him besides that was the household seruaunt of hir Courte? and yet you see this great and mighty Duchesse trot and run after the Male, like a female Wolfe or Lionesse (when they goe to fault,) and forget the Noble bloud of Aragon whereof she was descended, to couple hir self almost with the simplest person of all the trimmest Gentlemen of Naples. But turne we not the example of follies to be a matter of consequence: for if one or two become bankrupt of theyr honor, it followeth not, good Ladyes, that theyr fact should serue for a matche to your



deferts, and much leffe a patron for you to folow. Thefe Hystories be not wryten to trayne and trap you to purfue the thoufand thoufand flippery fleightes of Loue's gallantife, but rather carefully to warne you to behold the femblable faultes, and to ferue for a drugges to dyfcharge the Poyfon which gnaweth and fretteth the integrytie and foundneffe of the foule. The wyfe and skilfull Apothecary or compofitor of drugges, drefseth Vipers flefh to purge the patyent from hote corrupted bloud which conceyueth and engendreth Leprofie within hys Body. In lyke manner, the fonde loue and wycked rybauldry of Semiramis, Pafiphae, Meffalina, Fauftina, and Romilda is fhewed in wryt, that euery of you maye feare to be numbred and recorded amongs futch common and dishonourable women. You Princes and great Lords read the follies of Paris, the adulteries of Hercules, the dainty and effeminate life of Sardanapalus, the tyranny of Phalaris, Bufiris, or Dyonifus of Sicile, and fee the hiftory of Tiberius, Nero, Caligula, Domitian, and Heliogabalus, and spare not to recompte them amongs our wanton youthes which foile themfelues villaines more filthily than the fwine do in the durt: al this intendeth it an inftitution for your youth to follow the infection and whoredome of thofe Monfters? Better it were all thofe bokes were drenched in bottomleffe depth of feas, than Chriftian life by their meanes fhould be corrupted: but the example of the wicked is induced for to efchue and auoid them, as the life of the good and honeft is remembered to frame and addrefse our behauior in this world to be praife worthy and commended: otherwyfe the holineffe of facred writ fhould ferue for an argument to the vnthriftly and luxurious to confirm and approue their beaftly and licencious wickedneffe. Come we againe then to our purpofe: the good Pilgrime of Loretto went forth hir voyage to atchieue hir deuotions, by vifiting the Saint for whose Reliques ſhe was departed the country of the Duke hir Sonne: when ſhe had done hir fuffrages at Loretto, hir people thought hir voiage to be at an end, and that ſhe would haue returned again into hir Countrey: but ſhe ſaid vnto them, that forſomuch as ſhe was ſo neare Ancona, being but xv. myles of, ſhe would not retyre but ſhe had ſeen that auncient and goodlye city, which diuers Hyftories do greatly recommend, as wel for the

antiquitie, as for the pleasant feat therof. Al were of hir aduise, and went forward to see the antiquities of Ancona, and she to renew the pleasures whych she had before begon with hir Bologna, who was aduertised of all hir determination, restyng now like a God, possessed with the Iewels and rycheffe of the Duchesse, and had taken a fayre palace in the great Streat of the City, by the gate wherof the traine of hys Lady must passe. The Harbinger of the Duchesse posted before to take vp lodging for the train, but Bologna offred vnto hym hys Palace for the Ladye. So Bologna whych was already welbeloned in Ancona, and newly entred Amytye and greate Aquayntaunce wyth the Gentlemen of the Cytye, wyth a goodlye troupe of them, wente forth to meete hys Wyfe, to whom he presented his house, and besought hir that shee and hir trayne would vouchsafe to lodge there. She receiued the fame very thankfully, and withdrew hir selfe vnto his house, who conducted hir thither, not as a husband, but like him that was hir humble and affectionate seruaunte. But what needeth greate dyscourse of Woordes? The duchesse knowing that it was impossible but eche man must be priny to hir faete, and know what secretes hath passed betweene hir and hir Husband, to the ende that no other opynyon of hir Childebed should be conceyued, but that whych was good and Honest, and done synce the accomplishment of the Maryage, the morrow after hir arryuall to Ancona, assembled all her Trayne in the Hall, of purpose no longer to keepe cloafe that sir Bologna was hir Husbande, and that alreadye shee had had two Chyldren by him, and agayne was great with childe, with a third. And when they were come together after dynner, in that presence of hir husbande, shee vsed vnto them these woordes: "Gentlemen, and al ye my trusty and louyng seruaunts, hyghe tyme it is to manyfest to euery of you, the thing which hath ben done before the Face, and in the presence of hym who knoweth the most obscure and hydden secretes of our thoughts. And needefull it is not to keepe silente that which is neyther euyll done ne hurtfull to any perfon: If things myght be kept secrete and styl remaine vnknown, except they were declared by the doers of them, yet would not I commit the wrong in concealyng that, which to dyscouer vnto you doth greatly delite me, and deliuereth my mind

from exceeding grief, in futch wife as if the flames of my desire could break out with futch violence, as the fire hath taken heate within my mind, ye should see the fmoke mount vp with greater fmooulder than that which the mount Gibel doeth vomit forth at certayne seasons of the yeare. And to the intent I may not keepe you long in this suspect, this secret fire wythin my Heart, and that which I shal cause to flame in open ayre, is a certain opinion which I conceiue for a mariage by me made certain yeares past, at what time I chose and wedded a husband to my fantasie and liking, desirous no longer to liue in Widow state, being vnwilling to do the thing that should preiudice and hurt my conscience. The same is done, and yet in one thing I haue offended, which is by long keepyng secreete the performed mariage: for the wycked brute dispeared through the realme by reason of my childbed, one yeare past, hath displeas'd some: howbeit my conscience receiueth comforte, for that the same is free from fault or blot. Now shall ye know therefore what he is, whom I acknowledg for my Lord and spouse, and who it is that lawfully hath me espoused in the presence of this Gentlewoman here present, which is the witnesse of our Nuptials and accorde of mariage. This gentleman also Antonio Bologna, is he to whom I haue sworn and giuen my faith, and hee againe to mee hath ingaged his. He it is whom I accompt for my spouse and husband, (and with whome henceforth) I meane to rest and contynue. In consideration whereof, if there be any heere amongs you all, that shal mislike of my choyse, and is willing to wayt vppon my sonne the Duke, I meane not to let them of their intent; prayinge them faithfully to serue him, and to be careful of his person, and to be vnto him so honest and loyall, as they haue bene to me so longe as I was their mistresse. But if any of you desire stil to make your abode wyth me, to be partakers of my Wealth and woe, I will so entertayne them as they shall haue good cause to be contented, if not let them departe hence to Malfi, and the steward shal prouide for them according to their degre: for touching my self I do mind no more to be termed an infamous Duchesse: rather would I be honored wyth the Tytle of a sypble Gentlewoman, or wyth that estate whych shee can haue that hath an honest husband, and wyth whom she holdeth

faithfull and loyall company, than reuerenced with the glory of a Pryncestesse, subiect to the despite of flanderous tongues. Ye know" (said she to Bologna) "what hath passed betwene vs, and God is the witnesse of the integrity of my Conscience, wherfore I pray you bryng forth our Chyldren, that eche Man may beholde the Fruyctes rayfed of our allyance." Hauynge spoken those Woordes, and the Chyldren broughte forthe into the Hall, all the companie stood styll so astonned wyth that newe successe and tale, as though hornes sodainly had started forth their heads, and rested vnmoueable and amazed, like the great marble piller of Rome called Pasquile, for so much as they neuer thought, ne coniectured that Bologna was the succesor of the duke of Malfi in his mariage bed. This was the preparatiue of the catastrophe and bloody end of this tragedie. For of all the Duchesse seruants, there was not one that was willing to continue wyth theyr auncient mistresse, who with the faithfull maiden of hir chamber remained at Ancona, enjoying the ioyful embracements of hir Husbande, in all such Pleasure and Delyghts as they doe, whych hauynge lyued in fear, be set at liberty, and out of al suspition, plunged in a sea of ioy, and fleting in the quiet calme of al passetime, where Bologna had none other care, but how to please his best beloued, and she studied nothing else but how to loue and obey him, as the wyfe ought to doe hir husband. But thys fayre Weather lasted not long, for as the ioyes of men do not long endure but wast in lyttle time, so be the delights of louers lesse firme and stedfast and passe away almost in one moment of an houre. Now the seruants of the Duchesse which wer retired, and durst tary no longer with hir, fearing the fury of the cardinal of Aragon brother to the Lady, the very Day they departed from Ancona, deuised amongs themselues that one of them should ride in post to Rome, to aduertise the cardinal of the ladye's maryage, to the intente that the Aragon brethren myght conceiue no cause to feke reuenge of theyr disloyalty. That determination spedily was accomplished, one posting towards Rome, and the rest galloping to the cuntry Castles of the duke. These newes reported to the Cardinal and his brother, it may be coniectured how gryeuously they toke the same, and that they were not able to digest them wyth modestye, the yongest

of the brethren, yalped forth a Thousand Curffes and despytes, agaynste the symple sexe of womankind. "Ha," said the Prince (transported with choler, and driuen into deadly furie) "what law is able to punish or restrayne the folysh indiscretion of a Woman, that yeldeth hir self to hir own desires? What shame is able to brydle and withdrawe a Woman from hir mind and madnesse? Or with what fear is it possible to snaffle them from execution of theyr filthinesse? Ther is no beaſt be he neuer ſo wilde, but man ſometime may tame, and bring to his lure and order. The force and diligence of Man is able to Make mylde the ſtronge and Proude, and to ouertake the ſwyfteſt Beaſte and Foule, or otherwyſe to attayne the hygheſt and deepeſt things of the world: but this incarnate diueliſh beaſte the Woman, no force can ſubdue hir, no ſwiftnesſe can approach hir mobylity, no good mind is able to preuent hir ſlightes and deceites, they ſeem to be procreated and borne againſte all order of Nature, and to liue withoute Lawe, whych gouerneth al other things indued with ſome reaſon and vnderſtanding. But howe great abhomination is this, that a Gentlewoman of ſutch a houſe as ours is, hath forgotten hir eſtate, and the greatneſſe of hir deceaſed huſband, with the hope of the toward youthe of the Duke hir ſonne and our Nephew. Ah, falſe and vile bytch, I ſweare by the Almighty God and by his bleſſed wounds, that if I can catch thee, and that wicked knaue thy choſen mate, I wil pype ye both ſutch a wofull galiard, as in your imbracements ye neuer felt like ioy and mirthe. I wil make ye daunce ſutch a bloody barget, as your whoriſh heate for euer ſhall be cooled. What abuſe haue they committed vnder title of mariage, whych was ſo ſecretly don, as their children do witneſſe their lecherous loue, but theyr promiſe of faith was made in open aire, and ſerueth for a cloke and viſarde of their moſte filthy whoredom. And what if mariage was concluded, be we of ſo little reſpect, as the carion beaſt could not vouchſafe to aduertise vs of hir entent? Or is Bologna a man worthy to be allied or mingled with the roial bloud of Aragon and Caſtillie? No, no, be he neuer ſo good a gentleman, his race agreeth not with kingly ſtate. But I make to God a vow, that neuer wyll I take one ſound and reſtful ſlepe, vntill I haue diſpatched that infamous fact from our bloud, and

that the caitif whoremonger be vsed according to his desert." The cardinal also was out of quiet, grinding his teeth together, chattering forth of his Spanish mosel Jack an Apes Pater-noster, promising no better vsage to their Bologna than hys yonger brother did. And the better to intrap them both (without further sturre for that time) they sent to the Lord Gifmondo Gonfago the Cardinal of Mantua, than Legate for pope Iulius the second at Ancona, at whose hands they enjoyed sutch friendship, as Bologna and all his family were commaunded spedily to auoid the city. But for al that the Legat was able to do, of long time he could not preuail, Bologna had so greate intelligence wythin Ancona. Neuertheleffe whiles hee differred his departure, he caused the most part of his trayne, his Children and goods to be conueyed to Siena, an auncient City of Thoscane, which for the state and liberties, had long time bin at warres with the Florentines, in sutch wyfe as the very same day that newes came to Bologna that hee should depart the Citty within xv. daies, hee was ready, and mounted on horseback to take hys flight to Siena, whych brake for forrow the hearts of the Aragon brethren, seeinge that they were deceiued, and frustrate of their intent, bicause they purposed by the way to apprehend Bologna, and to cut him in peeces. But what? The tyme of his hard lucke was not yet expired, and so the marche from Ancona, ferued not for the Theatre of those two infortunate louers ouerthrow, who certaine moneths liued in peace in Thoscane. The Cardinall night nor day did sleepe, and his brother still did wayt to performe hys othe of reuenge. And seeinge their ennimy out of feare, they dispatched a post to Alfonso Castruccio, the cardinall of Siena, to entreat the lord Borgliefse, cheyfe of the Seigniory there, that their Syfter, and Bologna should be banished the Countrey, and limits of that Citty, which wyth small suite was brought to passe. These two infortunate, Husband and Wyfe, were chafid from all places, and so vnlucky as whilom Achastus was when he was accurfed, or Oedipus, after his father's death, and inceffious mariage wyth his mother, vncertayne to what Sainct to vow themselues, and to what place to take their flight. In the ende they determined to goe to Venice, but first to Ramagna, there to imbarke themselues for to retyre in faulfty to the citty

enironned wyth the Sea Adriaticum, the richeft in Europa. But the poore foules made their reconinge there wythout their hoafte, faylinge halfe the price of their banket. For being vpon the territory of Forly, one of the trayne a farre of, did fee a troupe of horfemen galloping towards their company, which by their countenance fhewed no figne of peace or amity at all, which made them confider that it was fome ambush of theyr Enimyfes. The Neapolitan gentleman feeing the onfet bendinge vpon them, began to feare death, not for that hee cared at al for his mifhap, and ruine, but his heart began to cleaue for heauineffe to fee his Wyfe and little Children ready to be murdered, and ferue for the paffetime of the Aragon Brethren's eyes, for whose fakes he knew himfelfe already predefinate to dy, and that for despite of him, and to accelerate his death by the ouerthrow of hys Wyfe and Children, he was affured that they would difpatch them all before his face and prefence. But what is there to be done, where counfell and meanes to efcape do fayle? Full of teares therefore, aftonifhment and feare, he expected death fo cruell as man could deuife, and was already determined to fuffer the fame with good courage, for any thing that the Ducheffe could fay vnto him. He might well haue faued himfelf and his eldeft fonne by flight, being both wel mounted vpon two good Turkey horffes, whiche ran fo faft, as the quarrel out of a Crofbow. But he loued to mutch his wife and children, and woulde kepe them company both in lyfe and death. In th'ende the good Lady fayd vnto him: "Sir, for all the ioyes and pleasures which you can do me, for God's fake faue your felfe and the litle infant next you, who can well indure the galloping of the horfe. For fure I am, that you being out of our company, we fhall not neede to feare any hurt: but if you do tary, you wil be the caufe of the ruine and ouerthrow of vs all, and we fhall receiue thereby no profit or aduantage: take this purfe therefore, and faue yourfelf, attending better fortune in time to come." The poore Gentleman Bologna knowing that his wife had pronounced reafon, and fearing that it was impoffible from that time forth that fhe or hir Traine could efcape their hands, taking leaue of hir, and kiffing his chyldren not forgetting the moncy which fhe offred vnto him, willed his fer-

wants to faue themfelues by futch meanes as they thought beft. So gieuing furs vnto his horfe, he began to fly amayne, and his eldeft fonne feeing his father gone, began to followe in like forte: and fo for that time they two were faued by breaking of the intended ill luck lyke to light vpon them. And where he thought to refcue himfelfe at Venice, he turned another way, and by great Iourneys arriued at Millan. In the meane time the horfemen were approached neere the Ducheffe, who feeing that Bologna had faued himfelfe, very courteoufly began to fpeake vnto the lady, were it that the Aragon brethren had geuen them that charge, or feared that the Lady would trouble them with hir importunate Cries, and Lamentations. One therefore amongs the Troupe fayde thus vnto hir: “Madam, we be commaunded by the Lordes your brethren, to conduct you home vnto your houfe, that you may receiue agayne the Gouernment of the Duchy, and the order of the Duke your fonne, and do maruell very mutch at your folly, for giuing your felfe thus to wander the Countrey after a man of fo final reputation as Bologna is, who when he had glutted his lufting lecherous minde with the comelines of your noble Perfonage, wil despoyle you of your goods and honour, and then take his Legs into fom ftraung countrey.” The fimple Lady, albeit greuous it was vnto hir to heare futch fpeech of hir husband, yet helde hir peace and difsembled what fhe thought, glad and wel contented with the curtesy done vnto hir, fearinge before that they came to kyll hir and thought hirfelfe already difcharged, hopeinge vppon their courteous Dealinges, that fhee, and hir Chyldren from that tyme forth fould lyue in good affuraunce. But fhe was greatly deceyed, and knew within fhorthe fpace after, the good will that hir Brethren bare hir: for fo foone as thefe Gallants had conducted hir into the kyngdome of Naples, to one of the Cafels of hir fonne, fhe was committed to pryfon wyth hir chyldren, and fhe alfo that was the fecretary of hir infortunate mariage. Til this time Fortune was contented to proceede with indifferent quiet againft thofe Louers, but henceforth yee fhall heare the Ifsue of theyr little prosperous loue, and how pleafure hauing blinded them, neuer forfooke them vntil it had giuen them the ouerthrow. It booteth not heere to recite any Fables or Hyftories, contenting my



self that Ladies do reade wythout to many weping teares, the pitifull end of that myserable princeffe, who seeing hir selfe a Prisoner in the company of hir litle chyldren and welbeloued Mayden, patiently liued in hope to see hir Brethren appayfed, comforting hir selfe for the escape of hir husband out of the hands of his mortal foes. But hir assurance was changed into an horrible feare and hir hope to no expectation of surety, when certayne dayes after hir imprisonment, hir gaoler came in, and sayde vnto hir: "Madame, I do aduise you henceforth to consider and examine your Conscience, for so much as I suppose that euen thys very day your Lyfe shall be taken from you." I leaue for you to thinke what horrour, and traunce assayed the feeble heart of this poore Lady, and wyth what eares she receyued that cruell message, but hir cries, and moanes together with hir sighes and lamentations declared with what chere she receyued the aduertisement. "Alas" (sayd she) "is it possible that my brethren should so far forget themselues, as for a fact nothing preiudicial vnto them, cruelly to put to death their innocent Sister, and to imbrue the memory of their fact, in the blood of one which neuer did offend them? Must I against al right and equity be put to death before the Iudge or Maistrate haue made triall of my lyfe, and knowne the righteoufnesse of my cause? Ah God, most rightfull and bountifull father, beholde the mallice of my Brethren, and the Tyrannous cruelty of those which wrongfully doe seeke my blood. Is it a sinne to marry? Is it a fault to fly, and auoide the sinne of Whoredome? What Lawes be these, where marriage bed, and ioyned matrimony is pursued wyth lyke seuerity, that Murder, Theft, and Aduoutry are? And what Christianity in a Cardinall, to shed the blood which hee ought to defend? What profession is thys, to assayle the innocent by the hygh way side, and to reue them of lyfe in place to punish Theeues and Murderers? O Lord God thou art iust, and dost al things in equity, I see wel that I haue trespassed against thy maiesty in some more notoryous crime than in marriage: I most humbly therefore beseech thee to haue compassion on mee, and to pardon myne offences, accepting the confession, and repentaunce of mee thine humble seruaunt for satisfaction of my finnes, which it pleased thee to washe away in

the precious bloud of thy sonne our Sauour, that being so purified, I may appeare at the holy banquet in thy glorious kingdome." When shee had thus finished hir prayer, two or three of the ministers which had taken hir besides Forly, came in, and said vnto hir: "Now Madame make ready your selfe to goe to God, for beholde your houre is come." "Prayfed be that God" (sayd she) "for the wealth and woe that it pleaseth hym to fend vs. But I beseech you my friendes to haue pittie vppon these lyttle Babes and innocent creatures: let them not feele the smarte whych I am assured my Brethren beare agaynst their Poore vnhappy Father." "Well well, madame," sayd they, "we wil conuey them to sutch place as they shal not want." "I also recommend vnto you" (quod she) "this pore imprisoned mayden, and entreate hir well, in consideration of hir good service done to the infortunate Duchesse of Malfi." As she had ended those words, the two Ruffians did put a coarde about her neck, and strangled hir. The mayden seeing the pitious Tragedy commensed vpon hir maystresse, cried out a maine, cursing the cruell malice of those tormenters, and besought God to be witnesse of the same, and crying out vpon his diuine Maies-ty, she humbly praied vnto him to bend hys iudgement agaynst them which causelesse (being no Magistrates,) had killed so innocent creatures. "Reason it is" (sayd one of the Tyrants) "that thou be partaker of thy maystresse innocency, sith thou hast bene so faythfull a Minister, and messenger of hir fleshly follies." And sodaynly caught hir by the hayre of the head, and in steade of a Carcanet placed a roape about her necke. "How nowe" (quoth shee,) "is this the promised fayth you made vnto my lady?" But those words flew into the Ayre wyth hir Soule, in company of the myserable Duchesse. And now hearken the most forowfull scene of all the Tragedy. The little Chyldren which had seene all this furious game executed vpon their mother and hir mayde, as nature prouoked them, or as some pefage of their myshap might leade them thereunto, kneeled vpon their knees before those Tyrants, and embracinge their Legges, wayled in sutch wyfe, as I thinke that any other, except a pitiless heart spoyled of all humanity, would haue had compassion. And impossible it was for them, to vnfolde the embracements of those innocent creatures,

whych seemed to foreiudge their death by Sauage lookes and Countenance of those Roysters: whereby I think that needes it must be confessed, that nature hath in hir selfe, and in vs imprinted some signe of diuination, and specially at the Houre and tyme of death, so as the very beastes doe feele some forewarninges, although they see neyther Sworde, nor Staffe, and indeuoure to auoyde the cruell Passage of a thyng so Fearefull, as the separation of two thynges so neerely vnyted, euen the Body, and Soule, which for the motion that chaunceth at the very instant, sheweth how nature is constrained in that monstrous diuision, and more than horrible ouerthrow. But who can appease a heart determined to worke mischief, and hath sworne the death of another forced thereunto by some special commaundment? The Aragon brethren ment hereby nothing else, but to roote out the whole name and race of Bologna. And therefore the two ministers of iniquity did like murder and slaughter vpon those two tender babes, as they had done before vpon their mother not without some motion of horror, for an act so detestable. Behold here how far the cruelty of man extendeth, when it coueteth nothing else but vengeance, and marke what excessyue choler the mind of them produceth, whych suffer themselues to be forced and ouerwhelmed with fury. Leau we apart the cruelty of Euechrates, the Sonne of the kinge of Bactria, and of Phraates the Sonne of the Persian Prynce, of Timon of Athenes, and of an infinit number of those which were rulers and gouernors of the Empyre of Rome: and let vs match with these Aragon brethren, one Vitoldus Duke of Lituania, the cruelty of whom, constrained his own subiects to hang themselues for feare leaste they should fall into his furious and bloudy hands. We may confesse also these brutall brethren to be more butcherly than euer Otho Erle of Monferrato, and prince of Vrbin was, who caused a yeoman of his chamber to be wrapped in a sheete powdered with fulpher and brimstone, and afterwards kindled with a Candle, was scalded and consumed to death, bicause he waked not at an hour by him appointed: let vs not excuse them also from some affinity with Manfredus the sonne of Henry the second emperor, who smoldered hys own father, being an old man, between two Couerlets. These former furies might haue some excuse to

couer their cruelty, but these had no other color but a certain beaſtly madneſſe which moued them to kil thoſe litle Children their nephews, who by no means could preiudice or anyo the Duke of Malfi or his title, in the ſucceſſion of his Duchie, the mother hauing withdrawen hir goods, and had her dowrie aſſigned hir: but a wicked hart wrapt in malice muſt nedes bring forth ſemblable workes. In the time of theſe murders the unfortunate Louer kept himſelf at Millan with his ſonne Frederick, and vowed himſelf to the Lord Siluio Sauello, who that tyme beſieged the Caſtell of Millan, in the behalf of Maximilian Sforcia, which in the end he conquered and recouered by compoſition wyth the French within. But that charge being atchieued, the general Sauello marched from thence to Cremona with hys Campe, wyther Bologna durſt not folow, but repayred to the Marquize of Britone, in wyche tyme the Aragon brethren ſo wroughte as hys goods were confiſcate at Naples, and he dryuen to hys ſhiftes to vſe the Golden Duckates which the Ducheffe gaue him to relieue himſelfe at Millan, whoſe Death althoughe it were aduertified by many, yet hee could not be perſuaded to beleue the ſame, for that diuers which went about to betray him, and feared he ſhoulde flie from Millan, kept his beake vnder the water, (as the Prouerb is,) and aſſured him both of the Lyfe and welfare of his Spouſe, and that ſhortly his Brethren in law would be reconciled becauſe many Noble men fauored hym well, and deſired his returne home to hys country. Fed and filled with that vaine hope, he remayned more than a yeare at Millan, frequentlyng good company, who was well entertayned of the rycheſt marchaunts and beſt Gentlemen of the Cytye: and aboue all other, he had famyliar acceſſe to the houſe of the Ladye Hippolita Bentiuoglia, where vpon a Daye after Dynner, takyng hys lute in hand, whereon he could exceedyngly well play, he began to ſing a fonnet, wyche he had compoſed vpon the diſcourſe of hys myffortune, the tenor whereof inſueth.

*The Song of Antonio Bologna, the huſband of the Ducheffe of Malfi.*

IF loue, the death, or traçt of tyme, haue meaſured my diſtreſſe,  
Or if my beatinge ſorrowes may my languor well expreſſe:  
Then loue come ſoone to viſit me, which moſt my heart deſires,

And so my dolor findes some ease, through flames of fantasies fires.  
 The time runnes out his rollinge course, for to prolong myne ease,  
 To th' end I shall enjoy my loue, and heart himselfe appease,  
 A cruell darte brings happy death, my foule then rest shall find:  
 And sleepeing body vnder Toumbe, shall dreame time out of  
 mynde,

And yet the Loue, the Time, nor Death, lookes not how I deceace:  
 Nor geueth care to any thinge, of this my wofull peace.  
 Full farre I am from my good hap, or halfe the ioye I craue,  
 Whereby I chaung my state wyth teares, and draw full neere  
 my graue.

The courteous Gods that giues me lyfe, now mooues the Planets all:  
 For to arrest my groning ghost, and hence my sprite to call.  
 Yet from them still I am separd, by thinges vnequall heere,  
 Not ment the Gods may be vniust, that breedes my chaunging  
 cheere.

For they prouide by their foresight, that none shall doe me harme:  
 But she whose blasing beauty bright, hath brought me in a  
 charme.

My mistresse hath the powre alone, to rid me from this woe:  
 Whose thrall I am, for whom I die, to whom my sprite shall goe.  
 Away my foule, goe from the griefs, that thee oppreffeth still,  
 And let thy dolor witnesse beare, how much I want my will.  
 For since that loue and death himselfe, delights in guiltlesse blood,  
 Let time transport my troubled sprite, where destiny seemeth  
 good.

This song ended, the poor Gentleman could not forbear from  
 pouring forth his luke warme Tears, which abundantly ran downe  
 his heauy Face, and his pantinge Sighes truly discovered the  
 alteration of his mynde, whych mooued ech wight of that assembly  
 to pittie his mournful State: and one specially of no acquaintance,  
 and yet knew the deuises that the Aragon Brethren had trayned  
 and contriued against hym: that vnacquaynted gentleman his  
 name was Delio, one very well learned, and of trim inuention,  
 who very excellently hath endited in the Italian vulgar tongue.  
 This Delio knowing the Gentleman to be husband to the deceased

Duchesse of Malfi, came vnto him, and taking him aside, said: "Sir, albeit I haue no great acquaintance with you, this being the first time that euer I saw you, to my remembrance, so it is, that vertue hath such force, and maketh gentle myndes so amorous of their like, as when they doe beholde ech other, they feele themselves coupled as it were in a bande of mindes, that impossible it is to diuide the same: now knowinge what you be, and the good and commendable qualities in you, I coumpt it my duty to reueale that which may chaunce to breede you damage. Know you then, that I of late was in company with a Noble man of Naples, whych is in this Citty, banded with a certaine company of horsemen, who tolde mee that he had a speciall charge to kill you, and therefore prayed me (as it seemed) to require you not to come in his fight, to the intent he might not be constrayned to doe that which should offend his Conscience, and griene the same all the dayes of his life: morcouer I haue worse Tidings to tell you: the Duchesse your Wyfe deade by violent hand in prison, and the most part of them that were in hir company: besides this assure your selfe, that if you doe not take heede to that which this Neapolitane Capitayne hath differred, other wyll doe and execute the same. This mutch I haue thought good to tell you, bicause it would very mutch griene me, that a Gentleman so excellent as you be, should be murdered in that myserable wyfe, and I should deeme my selfe vnworthy of lyfe, if knowing these practises I should dissemble the same." Whereunto Bologna aunswered: "Syr Delio, I am greatly bound vnto you, and geue you hearty thanks for the good will you beare me. But in the conspiracy of the brethren of Aragon, and of the death of my lady, you be deceyued, and some haue giuen you wrong intelligence: for within these two dayes I receyued letters from Naples, wherein I am aduertised, that the right honorable and reuerend Cardinal and his Brother be almost appeased, and that my goods shall bee rendred agayne, and my dear Wyfe restored." "Ah syr," sayde Delio, "how you be beguiled and Fedde wyth Follyes, and nourished with sleights of Court: assure your selfe that they which write these trifles, make such shamefull sale of your lyfe, as the Butcher doth of his flesh in the Shambles, and so wickedly betray you, as impossible it is to inuent

a treason more detestable : but bethinke you well thereof." When he had sayd so, he tooke hys leaue, and ioyned hymselfe in company of fine and pregraunt Wyttes, there assembled together. In the meane tyme, the cruell Spirite of the Aragon Brethren were not yet appeased with the former murders, but needes must finish the last act of Bologna hys Tragedy by losse of hys Lyfe, to keepe hys Wyfe and Chyldren company, so well in an other Worlde as he was vnited with them in Loue in this frayle and transitory passage. The Neapolitan gentleman before spoken of by Delio, whych had taken this enterpryse to satisfie the barbarous Cardinal to berieue his Countreyman of lyfe, hauinge chaunged his mynde, and differing from day to day to forte the same to effect, it chaunced that a Lombarde of larger Conscience than the other, inueigled with Couetoufnesse, and hired for ready Money, practised the death of the Duchesse poore husband : this bloody beaste was called Daniel de Bozola that had charge of a certayne bande of footemen in Millan. Thys newe Iudas and pestilent manqueller, who wythin certayne dayes after knowinge that Bologna oftentimes Repayred to heare Seruice at the Church and conuent of S. Fraunces, secretly conueyed himself in ambush, hard besides the church of S. Iames, (being accompanied wyth a certayne troupe of Souldiers) to assayle infortunate Bologna, who was fooner slayne than hee was able to thinke vpon defence, and whose mishap was futch, as hee whych kyled hym had good leysure to saue hymselfe by reason of the little pursuite made after hym. Beholde heere the Noble fact of a Cardinal, and what sauer it hath of Christian purity, to commit a slaughter for a fact done many yeares past vpon a poore Gentleman which neuer thought him hurt. Is thys the sweete obseruation of the Apostles, of whom they vaunt themselues to be the Successours and followers? And yet we cannot finde nor reade, that the Apostles, or those that stept in their trade of lyfe, hyred Ruffians, and Murderers to cut the Throates of them which did them hurt. But what? it was in the tyme of Iulius the second, who was more martiall than Christian, and loued better to shed bloud than giue blessing to the people. Sutch ende had the infortunate mariage of him, whych ought to haue contented hymselfe wyth that degree and honor that

he had acquired by the deedes and glory of his vertues, so much by ech wight recommended: we ought neuer to climb higher than our force permitteth, ne yet furmout the bounds of duty, and lesse suffer our selues to be haled fondly forth with desire of brutal sensuality. Which sinne is of sutch nature, that he neuer giueth ouer the party whom he maystereth, vntil he hath brought him to the shame of some Notable Folly. You see the miserable discourse of a Princeesse loue, that was not very wyse, and of a Gentleman that had forgotten his estate, which ought to serue for a lookinge Glasse to them which bee ouer hardy in makinge Enterprises, and doe not measure their Ability wyth the greatnesse of their Attemptes: where they ought to mayntayne themselues in reputation, and beare the title of well aduised: foreseeing their ruine to be example for all posterity, as may bee seene by the death of Bologna, and by all them which sprang of him, and of his infortunate Spouse his Lady and Maistresse. But we haue discoursed inough hereof, sith diuersity of other hystories do call vs to bring the same in place, which were not much more happy than the bloody end of those, whose Hystory ye haue already heard.



## THE TWENTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

*The disordered Lyfe of the Countesse of Celant, and how shee (causinge the County of Masino to be murdered,) was beheaded at Millan.*

NOT wythout good cause of long tyme haue the wyfe, and discrete, Prudently gouerned their Children, and taken great heede ouer their Daughters, and those also whom they haue chosen to bee their Wyues, not in vsing them lyke Bondwomen, and Slaues, to beereine them of all Liberty, but rather to auoyde the murmur, and secrete slaunderous Speach of the common people, and occasions offred for infection, and marrying of Youth, specially circumspect of the affaultes bent agaynst Maydens, being yet in the first flames of fire, kindled by nature in the hearts, yea of those that be the wyfest, and best brought vp. Some doe deeme it very straunge, that solempne Guard bee obserued ouer those which ought to lyue at lyberty, and doe consider how lyberty and the bridle of Lycence let slip vnto Youth, they breede vnto the same most strong and tedious Bondage, that better it had bene for youth to haue bene chayned, and closed in obscure Pryson, than marked wyth those blottes of infamy, which Sutch Lycence and Lyberty doe conduce. If England doe not by experience see Maydens of Noble Houses Infamed through to much vnbrideled, and frank maner of Lyfe, and their Parents defolate for futch villanyes, and the name of their houses become Fabulous and Ridiculous to the people: surely that manner of Espiall and watch ouer Children, may be noted in Nations not very farre conuening from vs, where men be Ielous of the very Fantasie of them, whom they think to be indued with great vertues, and of those that dare with their very Lookes geue attaynt, to behold their Daughters: but where examples be euident, where all the World is assured of that which they see by daily experience, that the fruits of the disordered, breake out into light, it behoueth no more to attend the daungerous customes of Countreyes, to condescend to the sottish Opinions of those, whych say that youth to narrowly looked vnto, is trayned vp in futch grofeness, and blockishnesse of spyrite, as

impossible it is afterwarde the same shoulde do any thinge prayse worthy. The Romaine maydens whilom were Cloystered within their Fathers Pallaces, still at their Mothers Elbowes, and notwithstanding were so wel brought vp, that those of best ciuility and finest trained vp in our age, shall not be the seconde to one of the least perfect in the Citty. But who can learne ciuility and vertue in these our dayes? our Daughters nouised in companies, whose mouthes run ouer with Whorish and filthy talke, wyth behaiour full of Ribauldry, and many fraughted wyth facts lesse honest than Speach is able to expresse. I doe not pretend heereby to deprive that sexe of honest and seemely talke, and company, and leste of exercise amonges the Noble Gentlemen of our Englyshe Soyle, ne yet of the Liberty receyued from our Auncestours, only (me thyncke) that requisite it were to contemplate the manners and inclination of wils, and refrayne those that be prone to wantonneffe, and by lyke meanes to reioyce the mindes of them that be bent to heauinesse, deuided from curtesie and Ciuility, by attendinge of whych choyse, and considering of that difference, impossible it is but vertue must thynke more bright in Noble houses than homelynesse in Cabanes of Pesauntes, and Countrey Carles: who oftentimes better obserue the Discipline of our Predecessours in education of their Chyldren, than they which presume to prayse themselves for good skil in vse and government of that age, more troublesome and payneful to rule, than any other wythin the compasse of man's lyfe. Therefore the good and wise Emperour Marcus Aurelius would not haue his Daughters to be trayned vp in Courts. "For (quod he) what profit shall the Nurse receyue by learning hir mayden honesty and vertue, when our workes intice them to daliaunce and vice, apprehending the folly of those that bee amorous?" I make this discourse, not that I am so rigorous a Iudge for our maydens of England, but that I wish them so reformed, as to see and be seene should be forbidden, as assured that vertue in what place so euer she be, cannot but open things that shall fauor of hir excellency. And now to talke of an Italian Dame, who so long as hir first husband (knowing hir inclination) kept hir subiect, liued in reputation of a modest and sober wyfe. Nothing was seene in hir that could defame hir renoume. But so soone as the

shadow of that free captiuitie was made free by the death of hir husband, God knoweth what pageant she played, and how shee foyled both hir owne reputation, and the honour of hir second Mate, as yee shall vnderstande if with pacience yee vouchsafe to reade the discourse of thys present Hyfstory. Casal, (as it is not vnknown) is a Citty of Piedmont, and subiect to the Marquize of Montferrato, where dwelled one that was very rich, although of base birth, named Giachomo Scappardone, who being growne wealthy, more by wicked art, and vfury, to much manifest, than by his owne diligence, toke to Wife a yong Greeke mayden, which the Marchiones of Montferrato mother of Marquize Guglielmo, had brought home wyth hir from the voyage that shee made into Grætia wyth hir husbände, when the Turkes ouerran the countrey of Macedonia, and seafed vpon the Citty of Modena which is in Morea. Of that mayden Scapperdone had a Daughter indifferent fayre, and of behauiour liuely and pleasaunt, called Bianca Maria. The Father dyed wythin a while after hir birth, as one that was of good yeares, and had bin greatly turmoyled in getting of riches, whose value amounted about one Hundred Thousand Crownes. Bianca Maria arriued to the age of fixteene, or seenteene yeares, was required of many, aswell for hir Beauty, Gentlenes, and good grace, as for her goods, and riches. In the ende she was married to the Vicecount Hermes, the Sonne of one of the chiefeft Houses in Millan, who incontinently after the mariage, conueyed hir home to hys house, leauing his Greeke mother to gouerne the vsuries gotten by hir dead husband. The Gentleman which amongs two greene, knew one that was ripe, hauing for a certayne tyme well knownen, and learned the maners of hys Wyfe, saw that it behooued hym rather to deale wyth the Bit and brydle than the spur, for that she was wanton, full of desire, and coueted nothing so much as fond and disorderd liberty, and therefore without cruell dealing, disquiet, or trouble, hee vsed by little and little to keepe hir in, and cherished hir more than his nature willingly would suffer, of purpose to holde hir wythin the boundes of duty. And although the Millan Dames haue almost like lyberties that ours haue, yet the Lord Hermes kept hir wythin Dores, and suffred hir to frequent none other house and company, but the Lady Hippolita Sforcia, who

vpon a day demaunded of him wherefore hee kept in his wyfe so short, and perswaded hym to geue her somewhat more the Brydle, bicause diuers already murmured of this order, as to frayte and Frowarde, esteeming hym eyther to be to mutch fond ouer hir, or else to Jealous. "Madame," sayde the Millanoife, "they whych at pleafure so speake of me, know not yet the nature of my Wyfe, who I had rather should be somewhat restrayned, than run at Rouers to hir dishonour, and my shame. I remember wel madame the proper saying of Paulus Emilius that notable Romane: who being demaunded wherefore he had put away his Wyfe being a Gentlewoman so fayre and beautifull. 'O,' quod he and lifted vp his leg whereupon was a new payre of Buskins) 'yee see this fayre Bufkin, meete and seemely for this Leg to outward apparence not greuous or noysome, but in what place it hurteth me, or where it wringeth yee doe neyther see nor yet feele. So I, madame, do feele in what place my Hoafe doeth hurt and wring my Legge. I know madame what it is to graunt to so wanton a dame as my Wyfe is, hir will, and how farre I ought to slip the rayne: iealous I am not vpon the fayth I beare vnto God, but I feare what may chauce vnto me. And by my trouth, madame, I geuee her Lycence to repayre to you both Day and Nyght, at whatfoeuer hour you please, being assured of the vertuous company that haunteth your house: otherwyfe my Pallace shall suffyce hir pleasure for the common ioy of vs both, and therefore I wish no more talk hereof, leaft too importunate suites do offend my nature, and make me thinke that to be true whych of good will I am loth to suspect, contenting my selfe with hir Chastity, for feare leaft to mutch liberty do corrupt hir." These words were not spoken wythout cause, for the wyse husband saw wel that sutch beasts, albeit rudely they ought not to be vsed, yet stiffly to be holden short, and not suffred too mutch to wander at will. And verily his prophecy was to true for respect of that which followed: who had not bene married full vi. yeares, but the Vicecount Hermes departed thys World, whereof she was very sory bycause she loued him derely, hauing as yet not tasted the licorous baites of sutch liberty, as afterwards she drank in gluttonous draughts, when after hir husband's obsequies, she retired to Montferrato, and then to

Cafal to hir Father's houfe, hir mother being alfo dead, and ſhe a lone woman to ioy at pleaſure the fruit of hir defires, bendinge hir only ſtudy to gay and trimme Apparell, and employed the mornings with the vermilion rud to colour hir cheekes by greater curioſity than the moſt ſhameleſſe Curtiſan of Rome, fixing hir eyes vppon ech man, gyring, and laughing with open mouth, and pleaſantly diſpoſed to talk and reaſon with euery Gentleman that paſſed by the ſtreate. This was the way to attayne the glorious feaſt of hir triumphant filthines, who wan the priſe aboute the moſt famous women which in hir tyme made profeſſion of thoſe armes, wherewith Venus once diſpoyled Mars, and toke from him the ſtrongeſt and beſt ſteeled armure of all his furniture. Thinck not fayre maydes, that talk and clattering with youth is of ſmall regarde. For a Citty is halfe won when they within demaunde for parle, as loth to indure the Canon ſhot. So when the eare of yong Wyfe or mayde is pliant to laſciuious talk, and deliteth in wanton words, albeit hir chaſtity receyue no damage, yet occaſion of ſpeech is miniſtred to the people, and perchaunce wyth futch diſaduantage, as neuer after hir good name is recouered. Wherefore needefull it is, not only to auoyde the effect of euill, but alſo the leaſt ſuſpition: for good fame is requiſite for the Woman, as honeſt lyfe. The great Captain Iulius Cæſar, (which firſt of al reduced the common wealth of Rome in fourme of monarchie) beinge once demaunded wherefore hee hadde refuſed hys Wyfe before it was proued that ſhe had offended with Clodius, the night of the ſacrifices done to the Goddeſſe Bona, answered ſo wyfely as truely, that the houſe of Cæſar ought not onely to be voyde of whordome but of ſuſpition therof. Behold therefore what I haue ſayd, and yet doe ſay againe, that ye oughte to take greate heede to youre ſelues, and to laugh in tyme, not reclinyng your eares to vncomely talke, but rather to follow the nature of the Serpent, that ſtoppeth his eare with his tayle, to auoide the charms and forceries of the Enchaunter. Now this Bianca Maria was ſued vnto, and purſued of many at Cafall that deſired hir to Wyfe, and amonges the reſt two did profer themſelues, which were the Lord Giſmondo Gonzaga, the neere kinſman of the Duke of Mantua, and the Counte of Celant, a great Baron of Sauoy, whoſe landes lie in the vale of

Agosta. A great pastyme it was to thys fyne Gentlewoman to feede hir self wyth the Orations of those two Lordes and a ioye it was to hir, to vse her owne discourse and aunfwers expreffinge with right good grace fundry amorous countenances, intermingling therwithall fighes, fobbes, and alteration of cheere, that full well it might haue bene sayde, of loue trickes that shee was the only dame and mistresse. The Marchyonesse of Montferrato desirous to gratify the Lord of Mantua his sonne in law, endeouored to induce this wanton Lady to take for spouse Gismondo Gouzaga, and the sute so well proceeded, as almost the mariage had bene concluded if the Sauoy Earle had not come betwixte, and shewed forth his Nobleness of minde, when he vnderstode how things did passe, and that another was ready to beare away the pryse, and recouer his mistresse. For that cause he came to visit the Lady, who intertayned him wel, as of custome shee did al other. And for that he would not employe hys tyme in vayne, when he founde hir alone and at conuenient leysure, began to preache vnto hir in thys wyse with futch countenance, as shee perceyued the Counte to be far in loue with hir.

*The Oration of the Counte of Celant to his Ladye.*

“ I am in doubt Madame, of whome chiefly I ought to make complaynt, whether of you, or of my selfe, or rather of fortune which guideth and bryngeth us together. I see wel that you receiue some wrong, and that my cause is not very iust, you taking no regarde vnto my passion which is outragious, and lesse hearkeninge vnto my request that so many times I haue giuen you to vnderstand onely grounded vpon the Honest loue I beare you. But I am besides this more to be accused for suffering an other to marche so far over my game and soyle, as I haue almost lost the tracte of the pray after which I most desire, and specially doe condemne my Fortune, for that I am in daunger to lose the thyng which I deferue, and you in peryll to passe into that place where your captiuitie shalbe worse than the slaues by the Portugales condemned to the mines of India. Doeth it not suffice you that the Lord Hermes closed you vp the space of v. or vi. yeares in his Chamber, but wil you nedes attempt the rest of your youthly daies amid the Mantuanes, whose suspitious heads are ful of hammers working in the

fame? Better it were madame, that we approchyng neerer the gallante giife of Fraunce, fhould live after the lyberty of that Countrey, than bee captiue to an Italian houfe, whych wyll refrain you with like bondage, as at other tymes you have felt the experience. Moreover ye fee what opinion is like to be conceiued of you, when it fhallbe bruted that for the Marquize feare, you haue married the Mantuan Lord. And I know well that you like not to be eftemed as a pupil, your nature cannot abyde compulfion, you be free from hir authority, it were no reafon you fhould be constrained. And not to flay in framing of orations, or ftand vpon difcourfe of Words, I humbly befeche you to behold the conftant loue I beare you, and being a Gentleman fo Wealthy as I am, none other caufe induceth me to make this fute, but your good grace and bryngyng vp, whych force me to loue you aboue any other Gentlewoman that liueth. And althoughe I myghte alleage other reafons to proue my faying, yet referre I my felf to the experience and bounty of youre mynd, and to the equity of your Iudgement. If my paffion were not vehement, and my torment without comparifon, I would wifh my fained griefs to be laughed to fcorne, and my difsembled payne rewarded with flouts. But my loue being fincere and pure, my trauail continuall, and my griefs endleffe, for pity fake I befeche you madame to confider my faithfull deferts with your duetiful curtefie, and then fhall you fee how much I ought to be preferred before them, which vnder the fhadow of other mens puiffance, do feke to purchafe power to commaund you: where I do faithfully bynd and tye my word and deede continually to loue and ferue you, wyth promyfe al the dayes of my Lyfe to accomplifh your commaundements. Beholde if it pleafe you what I am, and with what affection I make mine humble playnt, regard the Mefſanger, loue it is himfelf that holdeth me within your fnares, and maketh mee captiue to your beauty and gallant graces, which haue no pierce. But if you refufe my fute, and caufe me breath my words into the aire, you fhallbe accused of cruelty, ye fhall fee the entier defaiçt of a gentleman which loueth you better than loue himfelfe is able to yelde flame and fire to force any wight to loue mortal creature. But, verily, I beleue the heauens haue departed in me futch aboundance, to the intent in

louyng you with vehemence so greate, you may also thinke that it is I which ought to be the Friend and spouse of that gentle and curteous Lady Bianca Maria, which alone may cal her self the mistresse of my Heart." The Ladye whych before was mocked and flouted wyth the Counte his demaunds, hearing thys laste discourse, and remembring his first mariage, and the natural iealofie of Italyans, half wonne, without making other countenance, answered the Counte in thys manner: "Syr counte, albeyt that I am obedyente to the wyll and commaundemente of madame the Marchyonesse, and am loth to dysplease hir, yet wil I not so farre gage my lybertye, but still referue one poynt to faye what reasteth in my thoughte. And what shoulde lette me to chose sutch one, to whome I shalbe both his life and death? And whereof beinge once possed, it is impossyble to be rid and acquitted? I assure you, if I feared not the speach and suspition of malycious mindes, and the venime of slaunderous Tongues, neuer husband should bryng me more to bondage. And if I thought that he whom I pretend to chose, would be so cruel to me, as others whom I know, I would presently refuse mariage for euer. I thanke you neuerthelessse, both of your aduertisements giuen me, and of the honor you doe me, your self desiryng to accomplish that honor by maryage to be celebrated betweene vs. For the fidelity of which your talke, and the little diffimulation I see to be in you, I promise you that there is no gentleman in this countrey to whom I giue more puissance ouer me, than to you, if I chaunce to mary, and thereof make you so good assurance, as if it were already done." The Counte seeing so good an entry would not suffer the tyme to slip, but beating the Bushes vntill the praye was ready to spryng, replied: "And sith you know (madame) what thing is profitable, and what is hurtfull, and that the benefite of lyberty is so much recommended, why doe you not performe the thinge that may redounde to your honor? Assure mee then of your word, and promise me the faith and loyaltie of maryage, then let me alone to deale wyth the rest, for I hope to attayn the effect without offense and displeasure of any." And seeing hir to remaine in a muse without speaking word, he toke hir by the hand and kissing the same a million of tymes, added these Words: "How now,



madame, be you appalled for so pleasaunt an assault, wherin your aduersary confesseth himselfe to be vanquished? Courage, madame, I say courage, and beholde him heere which humbly praieth you to receiue him for your lawfull husband, and who sweareth vnto you all sutch amitye and reuerence that husband oweth to hys loyall spouse." "Ah, fyr Counte," sayd she, "and what wyll the Marquize say, vnto whom I haue wholly referred my self for mariage? shal not she haue iustt occasion to frowne vppon mee, and frowardly to vse me for little respect I heare vnto hir? God be my witnesse if I would not that Gonzaga had neuer come into this cuntry: for although I loue him not, yet I haue almost made him a promyse, which I can not kepe." "And sith there is nothing don," (said the Sauoy Lord) "what nede you to torment your selfe? wyl the Marquize wrecke hir tyrannie ouer the will of hir subiectes, and force Ladyes of hir Lande to marie agaynst their luste? I thinke that so wyse a princeesse, and so well nurtured, will not so far forget hir self, as to fraine that which God hath left at lyberty to euery wight: promyse me onely maryage and leaue me to deale wyth the rest: other thynges shalbe wel prouided for." Bianca Maria vanquished with that importunity, and fearing agayne to fall into seruytude, hoping that the Counte would mainteine sutch liberty as he had assured, agreed vnto hym and plyghted vnto him her faith, and for the tyme vsed mutuall promyses by wordes respectiue one to another: and the better to confirme the fact, and to let the knotte from breakyng, they bedded themselues together. The Counte very ioyfull for that encountre, yelded sutch good beginning by his countenance, and by Famyliar and continuall haunte with Bianca Maria, as shortly after the matter was knowen and came to the Marqueesse eares, that the Daughter of Scappardone had maryed the Counte of Celant. The good lady albeit that shee was wroth beyond measure, and willingly would haue ben reuenged vpon the bride, yet hauing respect to the Counte, which was a noble man of great authority, swallowed down that pille wythout chewing, and prayed the Lord Gonzaga not to be offended, who seing the light behaiour of the Ladie, laughed at the matter, and prayed God for that the thing was so wel broken off: and he did foresee already what issue that Comedye would haue, beyng

very famylyar for certayne Dayes in the House of Bianca Maria. Thys maryage then was publyshed, and the folempnity of the Nuptyals were done very pryncely, accordyng to the Nobylity of hym whych had maryed hir: but the augurie and prefage was heauy, and the melancholike face of the seafon (which was obscured and darkened about the time they should go to church) declared that the mirth and ioy should not long continue in the houle of the counte, according to the common saying: *He that loketh not before he leapeth, may chaunce to stumble before he sleepeth.* For the lord of Celant being retir'd home to his valeys of the Sauoy mountains, began to loke about his busineffe, and perceiued that his wife surpaffed al others in light behaiour and vnbrideled defires, whereuppon hee refolued to take order and stop hir passage before she had won the field, and that frankly she should goe seke hir ventures where shee list, if she would not be ruled by his aduise. The foolish Countesse feeing that hir husband well espied hir fond and foolyshe behaiour, and that wisely he went about to remedy the same, was no whit astonied, or regarded his aduise, but rather by forging complaints did cast him in the teeth sometymes with hir riches that she brought him, sometime with those whom she had refused for his sake, and with whom farre of she liued lyke a sauage creature amid the mountaine deserts and baren dales of Sauoy, and tolde him that by no meanes she minded to be closed and shut vp like a tamelesse beaft. The Counte which was wyfe, and would not breake the Ele vppon his knee, prouidently admonished hir in what wise a Ladye ought to esteeme hir honor, and how the lightest faults of Noble forts appeare mortal finnes before the world: and that it was not sufficient for a Gentlewoman to haue hir body chaste, if hir speach were not accordyng, and the minde correspondent to that outward semblance, and the conseruation agreable to the secreet conceiptes of Mynd: "And I shall be ful-fory swete Wife" (sayd the Counte) "to giue you cause of discontent: for wher you shalbe vexed and molested, I shall receiue no ioy or pleasure, you being [such one as ought to be the second my self, determining] by God's grace to keepe my promise, and vse you like a wyfe, if so be you regard me with duety semblable: for reason will not that the

head obey the members, if they shew not themselues to be futch as depend vpon the health and life of it. The husband being the Wyue's chiefe, ought to be obeyd in that which reason forbiddeth: and shee referring hir selfe to the pleasure of hir head, forceth him to whom she is adioyned, to do and assaye all trauallye and payne for hir sake. Of one thinge I must needes accuse you, which is, that for trifles you frame complaynt: for the mynde occupied in folly, lusteth for nothinge more than vayne things, and those that be of little profite, specially where the pleasure of the Bodye is onely considered: where if it follow reason, it dissembleth his griefes with wordes of wyfedome, and in knowing much, fayneth notwithstanding a subtile and honest ignoraunce: but I may bee much deceyued herein, by thinking that a Woman fraught with fickle Opinions may recline her eares to what so euer thing, except to that whych deliteth hir mynde, and pleaseth the desires framed wyth in hir foolyshe fantasie. Let not thys speach be straunge vnto you, for your woordes vttered without discretion, make me vse thys language: finally (good madame) you shall shew your selfe a Wyfe and louing wyfe, if by taking heede to my requests, you faythfully follow the advise thereof." The Countesse whych was so fine and malicious as the Earle was good and wyfe, dissembling her grieffe, and coueringe the venome hidden in hir mynde, began so well to play the hypocrite before hir husbande, and to counterfayte the simple Dame, as albeit he was right politike, yet he was within hir Snare intrapt, who flattered him wyth so fayre Wordes, as she won him to goe to Casal, to visite the lands of hir Inheritaunce. We see whereunto the intent of this false Woman tended, and what checkmate she ment to geue both to hir husband, and hir honour: whereby we know that when a woman is disposed to giue hir selfe to wickednesse, hir mynde is voyd of no malyce or inuention to sort to ende any daunger or perill offered vnto hir. The factes of one Medea (if credite may be giuen to Poets) and of Phædra, the Woman of Theseus, wel declare with what beastly zeale they began and finished their attempts: the eagles flight is not so high, as the Foolyshe desires, and Conceiptes of a Woman that trusteth in hir owne opinion, and treadeth out of the tract of duety, and way of Wyfedome. Pardon

me, good Ladies, if I speake so largely, and yet think not that I mean to display any other but sutch, as forget the degree wherin their Auncestours haue placed them, and whych digresse from the true path of those that haue immortalized the memory of themselves, of their husbands, and of the houses also whereof they came. I am very lothe to take vpon mee the office of a flaunderer, and no lesse do mean to flatter those, whom I see to their great shame, offende openly in the sight of the worlde: but why should I dyssemble that which I know your selues would not conceyle, yf in conscyence yee were requyred? It were extreame follye to decke and clothe vice wyth the holy garment of Vertue, and to call that Curtesie and Ciuylity, whych is manyfest whoredom and Trechery: let vs terme ech thyng by his due Name, and not deface that whych of it selfe is faire and pure: let vs not also staine the renoume of those, whom their own Vertue do recommende. This gentle Countesse beeing at Casal, making mutch of hir husbände, and kissing him with the kisse of treason, and of him being vnfaindly beloued and cherished, not able to forget his fermons, and mutch lesse hir own filthy lyfe, seeyng that with hir Counte it was impossyble for hir to liue and glut her lecherous lust, determined to runne away and seeke hir aduenture: for the brynging to passe wherof she had already taken order for money, the interest wherof growing to hir daily profite at Millan: and hauynge leuied a good summe of Ducates in hande, vntyll hir other rents were ready, she fled away in the night in companye of certayne of hir men which were priuie to her doings. Hir retire was to Pauie, a City subiecte to the state and Duchy of Millan, where she hired a princely pallace, and apparelled the same according to hir estate and Trayne of hir husband, and as her owne reuenue was able to beare. I leaue for you to thinke what buzzings entred the Counte's head, by the fodayne flight of his wife, who would haue sent and gone him selfe after to seke hir out, and bryng hir home againe, had he not well considered and wayed his owne profite and aduantage, who knowing that hir absence would rid out of his head a fardell of suspitions which he before conceiued, was in the ende resolued to lette hir alone, and suffer hir remaine in what place so euer she was retired, and whence hee

neuer minded to cal hir home agayne. "I were a very foole," (said he) "to keepe in my Houfe fo pernicious and fearfull an enemy, as that arrant whore is, who one day before I beware will caufe some of hir ruffians to cut my throte, besides the Vyolatyon of hir holye Maryage Bed: God defende that futch a Strumpet by hir prefence should any longer profane the houfe of the Lord of Celant, who is well rewarded and punished for the exceffiue loue whych he bare hir: let hir goe whether shee list, and lyue a God's name at hir ease, I do content my self in knowing what Women be able to do, wythout further attempt of fortune or other prooffe of hir wycked Lyfe." He added further, that the honor of fo Noble a personage as he was, depended not upon a woman's mischief: and assure your selfe the whole race of woman kind was not spared by the Counte, against whom he then inueyed more through rage than reason, he considered not the honest sort of women, which deface the vyllany of those that giue themfelues ouer to theyr own lusts, wythout regarde of modesty and shame, which oughte to be Famylyar, as it were by a certain Naturall inclynatyon in all degrees of Women and Maydens. But come we again to Bianca Maria, holding now hir Courte and open houfe at Pauie, wher she got fo holy a fame, as mistresse Lais of Corinth did, whose trumprie was neuer more common in Asia than that of this fayre dame, almost in euery corner of Italy, and whose conuersation was futch as hir frank liberty and famylyar demeanor to ech wyghte, well witnessed hir horryble Lyfe. True it was that her reputatyon ther was very smal, and she hired not hir selfe, ne yet toke pains by setting hir body to sale, but for some resonable gayne and earnest pain: howbeit she (of whom somtimes the famous Greke orator would not buy repentaunce for so high a pryce) was more exceffiue in Sale of hir Merchaundyse, but not more wanton: for she no sooner espyed a comely Gentleman that was youthly, and well made, but would presently shew him fo good countenance, as he had ben a very foole, that knewe not what prouender this Colt did neigh: whose shamelesse Gesture Massalina the Romane princeffe dyd neuer surmount, except it were in that shee visited and haunted common houses: and this dame vsed hir disports wythin hir owne, the other also receiued indyfferently Carters, Galleye slaues, and

Porters: and thys halfe Greeke did hir pastyme wyth Noble Men that were braue and lustye: but in one thing shee well resembled hir, whych was, that Meffalina was foner wearye with tranayle, than she fatiffied with pleasure and the filthy vse of hir body, like vnto a sink that receyueth al filth, wythout disgorgyng any throwne into the same: this was the chaffe lyfe which that good Lady led, after she had taken flight from hir husband. Marke now whether the Milanois that was hir first husbände, were a grosse headed person or a foole, and whither hee were not learned and skilful in the science of Phisognomy, and time for him to make ready the rods to make hir know hir duety, therwith to correct hir wanton youth, and to cut of the lusty twigs and proud sciences that foked the moisture and hart of the stock and braunches. It chaunced whiles she liued at Pauie, in this good and honorable port, the Counte of Maffino called Ardizzino Valperga came to the Emperour's service, and therby made hys abode at Pauie with one of his brothers: the Counte being a goodly Gentleman young and gallant in apparel, giuen to many good quallities had but one onely fault, which was a mayme in one of his legges, by reason of a certain aduerture and blow receiued in the warres, although the same toke away no part of his comelineffe and fyne behayor. The Counte I say, remaining certayne days at Pauie beheld the beauty and singularity of the Countesse of Celant, and stayed with futch deuotion to view and gaze vpon hir, as many times he romed vp and down the streete wherein she dwelt to find meanes to speak vnto hir. His first talke was but a *Bon iour*: and simple salutation, futch as gentlemen commonly vse in company of Ladies, and at the firste brunte Valperga coulde settle none other iudgement vpon that Goddesse, but that she was a wife and honest dame, and yet futch one as needed not the Emperor's camp to force the place, which as he thought was not so well flanked and rampired but that a good man of Armes myght easly winne, and the breache so liuely and sautable, as any souldier might passe the same: he became so famylar with the Lady, and talked with hir so secretly, as vpon a day being with hir alone, hee courted in this wise: "Were not I of all men moste blame worthy, and of greatest folly to be reprod, so long time to be acquainted with a Lady

fo faire and curteous as you be, and not to offre my seruice life and goodes to be difpofed where you pleafed? I fpeake not thys, Madame, for any euil and finifter iudgement that I conceyue of you, for that I prayfe and esteeme you aboute any Gentlewoman that euer I knew til this day, but rather for that I am fo wonderfully attached with your good graces, as wrong I fould doe vnto your honor and my loyal seruice towards you, if I continued dumbe, and did conceyle that whych inceffantly would confume my heart with infynyte numbre of ardent defyres, and waft myne intrailles for the extreame and burning loue I beare you. I do require you to put no credite in me, if I refufe what it fhall pleafe you to commaund me: wherefore Madame, I humbly befech you to accepte me for your owne, and to fauor me as futch one, whych with all fidelity hopeth to paffe hys time in your company." The Counteffe although fhe knew ful wel that the fire was not fo liuely kindled in the ftomacke of the Counte as hee wente aboute to make hir beleue, and that his wordes were to eloquent, and countenance to ioyfull for fo earnest a loue as hee femed to be, at thys firft incountry: yet for that he was a valiant Gentleman, yong, luftly, and ftrongly made, minded to retaine him, and for a tyme to ftaye hir ftomacke by appeafying hir gluttonous appetite in matters of loue, with a morfell fo dainty, as was thys Mynion and luftye young Lorde: and when the Courage of hym began to coole, another fhoulde enter the liftes. And therefore fhe aunfwered hym in thys wife: "Although I (knowying the vfe and manners of men, and with what Baits they Hoke for Ladies, if they take not heede, hauing proued their malice and little loue,) determined neuer to loue other than mine affection, ne yet to fauoure Man excepte it bee by fhewyng fome Familiar manner to heare theyr talke, and for paffime to hearken the braue requetts of thofe which fay they burne for loue, in the mids of fome delyghtfome brooke. And albeit I think you no better than other bee, ne more fayhfully, more affectyonate, or otherwyfe moued than the ref, yet I am contente for refpecte of youre honoure, fomewhat to beeleue you and to accepte you for myne owne, fith your difcretyon is futch (I trufte) as fo Noble a Gentleman as you bee, wyll hym felfe declare in thofe Affayres, and when I fee the effecte of my

hope succede, I cannot be so vnkynde, but wyth all honesty shall assaye to satisfie that your loue." The Countee seeing hir alone, and receyuing the Ladie's language for his aduantage, and that hir countenance by alteration of hir minde did ad a certayne beauty to hir face, and perceyuing a desire in hir that he should not vse delay, or be to squeimish, she demaunding naught else but execucion, tooke the present offred time, forgetting all ceremonies, and reuerence, he embraced hir and kiffed hir a Hundred Thousande tymes. And albeit shee made a certayne simple and prouoking resistance, yet the louer notinge them to be but preparatiues for the sport of loue, he strayed from the bounds of honesty, and threw her vppon a fiede Bed wythin the Chambre, where hee solaced hymselfe wyth hys long desired suite. And finding hir worthy to be beloued, and she him a curteous gentleman, consulted together for continuance of their amity, in sutch wise as the Lorde Ardizino spake no more but by the mouth of Bianca Maria, and dyd nothyng but what she commaunded, being so bewrapped wyth the heauy Mantell of hir Beafly Loue, as hee still abode nyght and day in the house of his beloued: whereby the brute was noyed throughout the Citty, and the songes of their Loue more common in ech Citizen's mouth, than Stanze or Sonnettes of Petrarch, Played and Fayned vpon the Gittrone, Lute, or Lyra, more fine and witty than those vnfauery Ballets that be tuned and chaunted in the mouthes of the common fort. Beholde an Earle well serued, and dressed by enioying so false a Woman, which had already falsified the fayth betrouthed to hir husband, who was more honest, milde, and vertuous than she deserued. Beholde also, yee Noble Gentlemen, the simplicity of this good Earle, how it was deceyued by a false and filthy strumpet, whose stincking lyfe and common vse of body woulde haue withdrawen ech simple creature from mixture of their owne wyth sutch a Carrion. A lesson to learne al youth to refrayne the Whoorishe lookes of lighte conditioned Dames, a number (the more to be pittied) shewing foorth themselues to the Portfale of euery Cheapener, that list demaunde the pryce, the grozenes whereof before considered, were worthy to be defied and loathed. This Ladye seeinge her Louer nouled in hir lust, dandled him with a thousand trumperyes, and made



hym holde the Mule, while other enioyed the secrete sporte which earst hee vsed hymself. This acquayntance was so dangerous to the Counte, as she hir selfe was shamelesse to the Counte of Celant: for the one bare the armes of Cornwall, and became a seconde Acteon, and the other wickedly led his lyfe, and lost the chiefest of that hee loked for by the seruice of great Princes, throughe the treason of an arrante common queane. Whiles this Loue continued in al Pleasure and lyke contentation of either parts: fortune that was ready to mounte the stage, and shew in fight that her mobylytye was no more stable than a woman's wyll: for vnder futch habite and sexe Painters and Poets describe hir) made Ardizzino suspecte what desire she had of chaunge: and within a while after, sawe himselfe so farre misliked of his Lady, as though he had neuer bene acquainted. The cause of which recoile was, for that the Countesse was not contented with one kind of fare, whose Eyes were more greedy than hir stomake able to digest, and aboue al desired chaunge, not seking meanes to finde him that was worthy to be beloued and intertayned of so great a Lady, as she esteemed hir selfe to be, and as futch of their owne opinion thinke themselves, who counterfaiçte more grautie and reputation than they doe, whome Nature and vertue for theyr maiesty and holynes of lyfe make Noble and praise worthy. That desire deceiued hir nothing at all, for a certayne time after that Ardizzino possessed the forte of this fayre Countesse, there came to Pauia, one Roberto Sanfeuerino earle of Gaiazzo, a yong and valiaunte gentleman, whose Countreye lyeth on this side the Mountaines, and was verry famylyar with the Earle of Maffino. This vnfaythful Alcina and cruel Medea had no foner cast hir Eye vppon Signor di Gaiazzo, but was pierced with loue in futch wife, as if forthwith shee had not attained hir desyres, she would haue run mad, bycause that Gentleman bare a certayne statelye representatyon in hys Face, and promysed futch dexteritie in hys deedes, as todaynly she thought him to be the man that was able to staunch hir filthy thurst. And therefore so gently as she could, gave ouer hir Ardizzino, with whom she vtterly refused to speake, and shunned hys company when she saw him, and by shutting the gates agaynst him: the Noble man was notable to forbear from throwing forth

some words of choler, wherby she tooke occasion both to expell him, and also to beare hym futch displeafure, as then she conspired his death, as afterwards you shall perceyue. This greate hatred was the cause that she fell in loue as you haue harde wyth the Counte of Gaiazzo, who shewed vnto him all signe of Amitye, and seeing that hee made no greate fute vnto hir, she wrote vnto him in this manner.

*The Letter of Bianca Marie, to the Counte of Gaiazzo.*

SIR, I doubt not by knowing the state of my degree, but that ye blush to see the violence of my mynd, which passing the limites of modesty, that ought to guard futch a Lady as I am, forceth me (vncertayn of the cause) to doe you vnderstand the gryef that doeth torment me, which is of futch constreynt, as if of curtesie ye do not vouchsafe to come vnto me, you shall commyt two faults, the one leauing the thing worthy for you to loue and regard, and which deserueth not to be cast of, the other in causing the Death of hir, that for Loue of you, is bereft of rest: wherby loue hath uery little in me to seafe vpon, either of heart or liberty. The ease of which gryef proceedeth from your only grace, which is able to vanquy she hir, whose victorious hap hath conquered all other, and who attending your resolut aunfwer, shal rest vnder the mercifull refuge of hope, whych deceiuing hir, shal se by that very meanes the wretched end of hir that is al your owne.

Bianca Maria Countesse of Celant.

The yong Lorde much maruelled at this message, were it for that already hee was in loue with hir, and that for loue of his friend Ardizzino, durst not be known therof, or for that he feared she wold be fraught of wits, if she were despised, he determined to goe vnto hir, and yet stayed thinking it not to be the part of a faythfull companion to deceiue his Friend: but in the end pleasure furmouting reason, and the beauty ioyned wyth the good grace of the Lady hauing blinded him, and bewitched his wits so wel as Ardizzino, he toke his way towards hir house, who waited for him wyth good deuotion, whither being arriued, he failed not to vse like spech that Valperga did, either of them (after certain reuerences and other fewe words) minding and defyring one kinde of intertayne-

ment. This practize dured certayn months, and the Countesse was so farre rapt with her new louer, as she only employed hir self to please him, and he shewed himself so affected as therby she thought to rule and gouerne him in all things: wherof she was afterwards deceiued as you shall vnderstand the maner. Ardizzino seing himself wholly abandoned the prefence and loue of his Lady, knowing that she railed vpon him in al places where she came, departed Pauia halfe out of his wittes for Anger, and so strayed from comely ordyr by reason of his rage, as hee displayed the Countesse thre times more liuely in hir colours, than she could be paynted, and reprodud hir wyth the termes of the vilest and moste common strumpet that euer ran at rouers, or shot at random. Bianca Maria vnderstode hereof, and was aduertised of the vile report that Ardizzino spread of hir, throughout Lombardie, which chaffed hir in futch wyfe as she fared like the Bedlem fury, ceasing night nor day to playne the vnkindnes and folly of hir reiected louer: somtimes saying, that she had iust cause so to do, then flattering hir selfe, alledged, that men were made of purpose to suffer futch follyes as were wroughte by hir, and where they termed themselues to bee Women's Seruauntes, they ought at theyr Mystresse Handes to endure what pleased them. In the end, not able any longer to restrayne hir cholere, ne vanquish the appetite of reuenge, purposed at all aduerture to prouide for the death of her auncient Enemy, and that by meanes of him whom she had now tangled in her Nettles. See the vnshamefastnesse of this mastife bitch, and the rage of that Female Tiger, howe shee goeth about to arme one friend against an other, and was not content onely to abuse the Counte Gaiazzo, but deuised how to make him the manqueller. And as one night they were in the middest of their embracements, she began pitifully to weepe and figh, in futch wyfe as a man would haue thought (by the vexation of hir hearte) that the soule and body would haue parted. The younge Lorde louingly enquired the cause of hir heauinesse: and sayd vnto hir, that if any had done hir displeasure, hee would reuenge hir cause to hir contentment. She hearing him say so, (then in studie vpon the deuice of hir Enimie's death) spake to the Counte in this manner: " You know sir, that the thing whych moste tormenteth the

Gentle heart and minde that can abide no wronge, is defamation of honoure and infamous reporte. Thus much I say for that the Lord of Massino, (who to say the truth, was faoured of me in like forte as you be now) hath not been ashamed to publishe open slaunders agaynst me, as thoughe I were the arrantest Whore that euer had giuen her self ouer to the Galley slaues alongs the shore of Scicile. If he had vaunted the faour which I haue done him but to certayne of his privat Friendes, I had incurred no slander at all, much lesse any lyttle suspition, but hearyng the common reportes, the wrongfull Woordes and wycked brutes that he hath rayfed on me: I beseech you fyr, to do me reafon that he may feele his offence and the smart for his committed fault agaynst hir that is al yours." The Lord Sanfeuerino hearyng this discourse, promised hir to do hys best, and to teache Valperga to talke more soberly of hir, whom he was not worthy for to serue, but in thought. Notwithstandyng, he sayde more than he ment to do, for he knew Ardizzino to be so honest, sage and curteous a personage, as hee would neyther doe nor say any thing without good cause, and that Ardizzino had iuster quarell agaynst him, by takyng that from hym whych hee loued (althoughe it was after his discontinuance from that place, and vpon the onely request of hir.) Thus he concluded in mind styl to remayne the fryend of Ardizzino, and yet to spend his time with the Countesse, which he did the space of certayn months without quarelling with Valperga, that was retired to Pauie, with whom he was conuersant, and liued familiarly, and most commonly vsed one table and bed together. Bianca Maria seeing that the Lord of Gaiazzo cared not much for hir, but onely for his pleasure, determined to vse like practife agaynst him, as she did to hir former louer, and to banish him from hir House. So that when he came to see hir, either she was sicke, or hir affaires were sutch, as she could not kepe hym company: or else hir gate was shut vpon him. In the end (playing double or quit) she prayed the sayd Lord to shewe hir sutch pleasure and friendship, as to come no more vnto hir, bicause she was in termes to goe home to hir husband the Counte of Celant, who had sent for hir, and feared least his seruants shoulde finde her house ful of suters, alleaging that she had liued long inoughe in

that most sinful life, the lightest faultes whereof were to heynous for dames of hir port and calling, concluding that so long as she lyued she would beare him good affection for the Honest Company and conuersation had betwene them, and for hys curtesie towards hir. The yong Earle, were it that he gaue credit vnto hir tale or not, made as though he did beleue the same, and without longer dyscourse, forbare approche vnto hir house, and droue out of his heade al the Amorous affection which he caried to the Piedmont Circes. And to the ende he might haue no cause to thinke vpon hir, or that his presence should make hym slaue againe to hir that first pursued him, he retired in good time to Millan: by which retire hee avoided that mishap, wherewith at length this Pestilent women would haue cut him ouer the shinnes, euen when his mind was least theron. Such was the malice and mischief of hir heart, who ceasing to play the whore, applied hir whole pastime to murder. Gaiazzo being departed from Pauie, thys Venus once agayne assayed the embracements of hir Ardizzino, and knew not wel how to recouer hym agayne, bycause she feared that the other had discovered the Enterpryse of his Murder. But what dare not shee attempte whose mynde is slaue to sinne? The first assayes be harde, and the minde doubtfull, and conscience gnaweth vpon the worme of repentaunce, but the same once noursed in vice, and rooted in the heart, it is more pleasaunte, and gladfome for the wicked to execute, than vertue is familiar to those that follow hir: So that shame separate from before the eyes of youth, riper age noursed in impudency, their sight is so daseled, as they can see nothing that eyther shame or feare can make them blush, which was the cause that this Lady, continuinge still in hir mischief, so much practised the freendes of hym whom she desired to kill, and made sutch fit excuse by hir Ambassades, as hee was content to speake to hir, and to here hir Iustifications, whych were easy enough to doe, the Iudge being not very guilty. Shee promised and swore that if the fault were proued not to be in him, neuer man should see Bianca Maria, (so long as she lyued) to be other than a friend and slaue to the Lord Ardizzino, wholly submitting hirselfe vnto his will and pleasure. See how peace was capitulated betwene the two reconciled Louers, and what were the articles of

the fame, the Lorde of Maffino entringe Poffeffion agayne of the fort that was reuolted, and was long tyme in the power of another. But when he was seized agayne, the Lady faw full wel, that hir recouered friend was not fo hard to pleafe, as the other was, and that wyth him ſhe liued at greater liberty. Continuing then their amorous Daunce, and Ardizzino hauing no more care but to reioyce himfelfe, nor hys Lady, but to cheriſhe and make much of hir friend, beholde eftfoones the defire of Bloud and wyll of murder, newly reuiued in that new Megera, who incited (I knowe not with what rage,) fanſied to haue him flayne, whych refused to kill hym, whom at this preſent ſhee loued as hirfelfe. And he that had inquired the cauſe thereof, I thyncke none other reaſon coule be rendred, but that a brayneleſſe heade and reaſonleſſe minde, doe thincke moſt notable murders, and myfchiefe be eaſie to be brought to paſſe, who ſo frangely proceeded in diſordred Luſtes, which in ſine cauſed their myſerable ſhame, and ruine, wyth the death of hirfelfe and hym, whom ſhe had ſtirred to the fact, boldening him by perſuaſion, to make him beleue Vyce to be Vertue, and Gloriously commended hym in hys follies, whych you ſhall heare by readinge at lengthe the diſcourſe of thys Hyſtory. Bianca Maria, ſeeing hirfelfe in full poſſeſſion of hir Ardizzino, purpoſed to make hym chiefe executioner of the murder, by hir intended, vpon Gaiazzo, for the doing whereof one night holdinge hym betwene hir armes, after ſhee had long time dalyed with hym, like a cunninge Maiſtreſſe of hir Art, in the ende weauinge and trayning hir treaſon at large, ſhe ſayd thus vnto him: “Syr, of long time I haue bene deſirous to require a good turne at your hands, but fearing to trouble you, and thereupon to be denied, I thought not to be importunate: and albeit the matter toucheth you, yet did I rather holde my peace then to here refusall of a thinge, which your ſelfe ought to profer, the ſame concerning you.” “Madame,” ſayd hir Louer, “you know the matter neede to be haynous and of great importaunce, that I ſhould deny you, ſpecially if it concerne the bleamiſh of your honor. But you ſay the ſame doth touch mee ſomewhat neerely, and therefore if ability be in me, ſpare not to vtter it, and I wyll aſſay your ſatiſfaction to the vttermoſt of my power.” “Syr,” ſayd ſhe, “is the Counte

of Gaiazzo one of your very frends?" "I thinke" (aunſwered Valperga) "that he is one of the ſureſt frends I haue, and in reſpect of whoſe frendſhip, I will hazarde my ſelfe for him no leſſe than for my Brother, being certaine that if I haue neede of him, he will not fayle to do the like for me. But wherefore doe you aſke me that queſtion?" "I will then tel you," ſayd the Traytreffe (kiffing him ſo ſweetely as euer he felt the like of any Woman,) "for ſomutch as you be ſo deceyued of your opinion in him who is wicked in diſſembling of that, which maliciously lieth hidden in hys heart. And briefly to ſay the effect: affure your ſelfe hee is the greateſt and moſt mortall Ennimy that you haue in the Worlde. And to the intent that you do not think this to be ſome forged Tale, of light inuention, or that I heard the report of ſome not worthy of credit, I will ſay nothinge but that whych hymſelfe did tell me, when in your abſence he vſed my company. He ſware vnto me, without declaration of the cauſe, that hee coulde neuer bee mery, nor hys mynde in reſt, before hee ſaw you cut in pieces, and ſhortly woulde giue you ſutch affaulte, as al the dayes of our lyfe, you ſhoulde neuer haue luſt or mynde on Ladies loue. And albeit then, I was in choler agaynſt you, and that you had miniſtred ſome cauſe, and reaſon of hatred, yet our firſt loue had taken ſutch force in my hart, and I beſought him not to do that enterpriſe ſo long as I was in place where you did remayne, becauſe I cannot abide (wythout preſent death) to ſee your finger ake, mutch leſſe your lyfe berieued from you. Vnto which my fute his Eare was deafe, ſwearing ſtill and proteſting that either he woulde be ſlayne himſelfe, or elſe diſpatch the Countee Ardizino. I durſt not" (quod ſhe) "ne wel could as then aduertife you thereof, for the ſmal acceſſe that my ſeruants had vnto your lodging, but now I pray you to take good heede by preuenting his diueliſhe purpoſe: For better it were for you to take his lyfe, than he to kill and murder you, or otherwyſe work you miſchiefe, and you ſhal be eſteemed the wiſer man, and he pronounced a traytor to ſeeke the death of him, that bare him ſutch good will. Doe then accordinge to myne aduice, and before he begin, doe you kill hym, by the which you ſhall ſaue your ſelfe, and doe the part of a valyaunt knight, biſides, the ſatiſfying of the mynde of hir that

about all pleasures of the World doth chiefly desire the same. Experience now will let me prove whether you love me or not, and what you will do for him that loveth you so dearly, who openeth this conspired murder, as well for your safety, as for lengthening of the life of him, which without yours cannot endure: grant this my suit (O friend most dear) and suffer me not in sorrowful plight to be despoiled of thy presence: and wilt thou suffer that I should die, and that yonder Proud, Traitorous, and unfaithful varlet should live to laugh me to scorn?" If the Lady had not added those last words to his foolish sermon, perchance she might have provoked Ardizzino to follow his Counsel: but seeing him so obstinately continue his request, and to prosecute the same with such violence, concluding upon his own quarrel, his conscience throbbed, and his mind measured the malice of that Woman, with the honesty of him, against whom that tale was told, who knew his friend to be so sound and trusty, as willingly he would not do the thing that should offend him, and therefore would give no credit to false report without good, and apparent proof: for which cause hee was persuaded that it was a malicious tale devised by some that went about to sow debate between those two friendly ears. Notwithstanding, upon further pause, and not to make him chafe, or force him into rage, he promised the execution of his cursed will, thanking him for his advertisement, and that he would provide for his defence and surety: and to the intent that shee might thynke he went about to performe his promise, he took his leave of him to goe to Milan, which hee did, not to follow the abominable will of that ravenous Mastiff, but to reveale the matter to his companion, and direct the same as it deserved. Being arrived at Milan, the chief City of Lombardy, he imparted to Gaiazzo from point to point the discourse of the Countesse, and the petition shee made unto him, upon the conclusion of his Tale: "O God" (said the lord Sanfeuerino,) "who can beware the traps of Whores, if by thy grace our hands be not forbidden, and our hearts and thoughts guided by thy goodness? Is it possible that the Earth can breed a Monster more pernicious than this most Pestilent Beast? This is truly the gift of his Father's v fury, and the stench of all his Predecessors villanies: it is impossible of a



Kyte or Cormerant to make a good Sparhawk, or Tercle gentle. This carion no doubt is the Daughter of a Vilayne, sprong of the basest race amongs the common people, whose mother was more fine than chaste, more subtile than sober: this minion hath forsaken hir husband, to erect bloody Skaffoldes of murder amid the Nobles of Italy: and were it not for the dishonour which I should get to soyle my hands in the bloude of a Beast so corrupt, I woulde teare hir with my Teeth in a hundreth Thousand peeces: how many times hath she entreated mee before: in how many fundry fortes with ioyned handes hath she besought mee to kill the Lorde Ardizzino? Ah, my Companion, and right well beloved Freende, can you thincke mee to bee so Trayterous, and Cowarde a Knaue, as that I dare not tell to them to whome I heare displeasure what mallice lurketh in my heart?" "By the fayth of a Gentleman," (sayd Ardizzino,) "I would be fory my mynd should feaze on futch Folly, but I am come to reueale thys vnto you, that the Song might found no more wythin myne eares. It behoueth vs then, sith God hath kept vs hytherto, to avoyde the ayre of that infection, that our braynes be not putrified, and from henceforth to fly those Blondfuckers, the Schollers of Venus: and truely great dishonour would redound to vs, to kill one an other for the onely pastime and fottish fanfie of that mynion: I haue repented me an hundred times when she first mooued mee of the deuice to kill you, that I did not geeue a hundred Poignaldoes wyth my Dagger, to stop the way by that example for all other to attempt futch Butcheries: for I am well assured that the mallyce which shee beareth you, proceedeth but of the delay you made for satisfaction of hir murderous desire, whereof I thancke you, and yelde my selfe in all causes to imploy my lyfe, and that I haue, to do you seruice." "Leaue we of that talk" (sayd Gaiazzo) "for I haue done but my duety, and that which ech Noble heart ought to euery wight, doing wrong to none, but prone to help, and doe good to all: whych is the true marke and Badge of Nobility. Touching that malignant Strumpet, hir owne lyfe shall reuenge the wrongs which she hath gone about to venge on vs. In meane while let vs reioyce, and thincke the goods, and richeffe shee hath gotten of vs, wil not cause hir Bagges mutch to Strout and Swel.

To be short, she hath nothing whereby she may greatly laugh vs to scorne, except our good entertainment of hir night and day do prouoke hir: let other coyne the pence henceforth to fill her Coafers, for of vs (so farre as I see) she is deceyued." Thus the two Lordes passed forth their tyme, and in all Companies where they came, they spent their Talke, and Communication of the disordered lyfe of the Countesse of Celant. The whole City also rang of the sleights and meanes she vsed to trappe the Noblemen, and of her pollicies to be rid of them when her thirst was stanchd, or diet grew lothesome for want of change. And that which greued hir most, an Italyan Epigram blafed forth hir prowes to hir great dishonour, whereof the Copy I cannot get, and some say that Ardizzino was the author: for it was composed, when he was dispossessed of pacience: and if shee coulde haue wrecked hir will on the knights, I beleue in hir rage she would hane made an Anatomy of their Bones. Of which hir two enimies, Ardizzino was the greatest, agaynst whom hir displeasure was the more, for that he was the first with whom she entred skirmish. Nothing was more frequent in Pauy, than villanous Iests, and Playes vpon the filthy Behaiour of the Countesse, which made hir ashamed to goe out of hir Gates. In the ende shee purposed to change the Ayre and place, hoping by that alteration to stay the Infamous Brute, and Slaunder: so she came to Millan, where first she was inuested wyth state of honour, in honest Fame of Chaste lyfe so longe as Vicount Hermes liued, and then was not pursued to stanch the thirst of those that did ordinarily draw at hir Fountayne. About the tyme that she departed from Pauy, Dom Pietro de Cardone a Scicilian, the Bastard Brother of the Counte of Colifano, whose Lieuetenaunt he was, and their father slayn at the Battayle of Bicocca wyth a band of horfemen arriued at Milan. This Scicilian was about the age of one or two and twenty yeres, fomwhat black of face, but well made and sterne of countenance: whiles the Countesse sojorned at Milan, this gentleman fell in lone with hir, and searched all meanes he coulde to make hir hys friende, and to enioy hir: who perceyuing him to be young, and a Nouice in Skirmishes of Loue, lyke a Pigeon of the first coate, determined

to lure him, and to serue hir turne in that which shee purposed to doe on those agaynst whom shee was outrageously offended. Now the better to entice thys younge Lorde vnto her Fantasye, and to catch hym wyth hir bayte, when hee passed through the Strete, and faluted hir, and when he Syghed after the manner of the Spaniard, rominge before hys Lady, shee shewed him an indifferent mery Countenance, and sodaynely refrayned that Cheere, to make hym taste the pleasure mingled with the soure of one desire, which he could not tel how to accomplishe: and the more faynt was his hardines for that he was neuer practifed in the daliance and seruice of Lady of noble house or calling, who thincking that the Gentlewoman was one of the Principall of Millan, he was straungely vexed, and tormented for hir loue, in futch wyfe as in the night he could not rest for fantasying, and thynking vpon hir, and in the Day passed up and downe before the Doore of her lodging. One eueninge for his disport hee went forth to walke in company of another Gentleman, which well could play vpon the Lute, and desired him to gieue awake vnto hys Lady, that then for ieaalousie was harkeninge at hir window, both of the sounde of the Instrument, and the Ditty of hir amorous Knight, where the Gentleman fong thys Sonet.

The death with trenchant dart, doth brede in brest futch il,  
As I cannot forget the smart, that thereby rifeth stil.  
Yet neerthelesse I am, the ill it felse in deede,  
That death with daily dolours deepe, within my brest doth breede.

I am my Mistresse thrall, and yet I doe not kno,  
If she beare me good will at all, or if she loue or no.  
My wound is made so large, with bitter wo in brest,  
That still my heart prepares a place to lodge a carefull guesst.

O dame that hath my lyfe and death at thy desire.  
Come ease my mind, wher fancies flames doth burne like Ethn:  
fire,  
For wanting thee my life is death and doleful cheere,  
And finding fauor in thy fight, my dayes are happy heere.

Then he began to figh fo terribly, as if already he had geuen  
fentence, and difinitiuē Iudgement of his farewell, and difputed  
with his fellow in futch fort, and wyth Opinion fo affured of hys  
contempt, as if he had bene in loue with fome one of the Infants  
of Spayne: for which caufe he began very pitifully to fing thefe  
verfes.

That God that made my foule, and knows what I haue felt,  
Who caufeth fighes and forows oft, the fely foule to fwelt,  
Doth fee my torments now, and what I suffer fill,  
And vnderftands I taft mo griefs, than I can shew by skill.

Hee doth confent I wot, to my ill hap and woe,  
And hath accorded with the dame that is my pleafaunt foe,  
To make my boyling breft abound in bitter bliffe,  
And fo bereue me of my reft, when heart his hope fhall miffe.

O what are not the fongs, and fighs that louers haue,  
When night and day with sweete defires, they draw vnto their  
graue,  
Their grief by frendfhip growes, where ruth nor pity raynes,  
And fo like fnow againft the Sun, they melt away with pains.

My dayes muft finifh fo, my deftny hath it fet,  
And as the candle out I goe, before hir grace I get.  
Before my fute be heard, my feruice throughly knowne,  
I fhallbe layd in Toumbe ful low, fo colde as Marble ftone.

To thee fayre Dame I cry, that makes my fenfes arre,  
And planteft peace within my breft and then makes fodain war:  
Yet at thy pleasure fill, thou muft my fowre make sweete,  
In graunting me the fauour due, for faythfull Louers meete.

Which fauor geue me now, and to thy Noble mynde,  
I doe remayne a Galley flauē, as thou by prooffe fhall finde.  
And fo thou fhalt releafe my heart from cruell bandes,  
And haue his fredome at thy wil that yelds into thy handes.

So rendring all to thee, the gods may ioyne vs both  
 Within one lawe and league of loue, through force of constant  
 troth.

Then shalt thou mistresse be, of lyfe, of Limme and all,  
 My goods, my golde, and honour, loe! shall so be at thy call.

Thys gentle order of loue greatly pleased the Lady, and therefore opened hir gate to let the Scicilian lorde, who seeing hymselfe fauoured (beyond all hope) of his Lady, and cheerefully intertayned, and welcommed with great curtesie stode so still astonied, as if hee had beene fallen from the Cloudes: but she which coulede teache hym good manner, to make hym the minister of hir myschiefe, takyng hym by the hande, made hym fit downe vpon a greene Bed befydes hir, and seeing that he was not yet imboldened, for all hee was a Souldiour, shee shewed hir selfe more hardy than hee, and firste assayled hym wyth talke, sayinge: "Syr, I praye you thinke it not straunge, if at thys houre of the nyght, I am bolde to cause you enter my houle, beinge of no great acquayntaunce wyth you, but by hearinge your curteous salutations: and wee of thys Countrey bee somewhat more at liberty than they in those partes from whence you come: besides it lyketh mee well (as I am able) to honour straunge gentlemen, and to retayne theym with right good willinge heart, sith it pleaseth theym to honour mee wyth repayre vnto my houle: so shall you be welcome styll when you please to knocke at my Gate, whych at all tymes I wyll to be opened for you, wyth no lesse good wyll than if yee were my naturall Brother, the same wyth all the thinges therein, it may please you to dispose as if they were your own." Dom Pietro of Cardonne well satisfied, and contented wyth thys vnlooked for kyndnesse, thanked her very Curteously, humbly praying hir besides to dayne it in good parte, if he were so bolde to make requeste of loue, and that it was the onely thyng which hee aboue all other defyred moste, so that if shee would receiue him for hir friende and Seruaunt, shee shoulde vnderstande him to be a Gentleman, which lightly woulde promise nothing excepte the accomplishment did followe: she that sawe a greater onset than she loked for, answered hym smilyng with a very good grace:

“ Sir, I haue knowne very many that haue vouched slipperie promyses, and proffered lordly seruices vnto Ladies, the effect wherof if I myght once see, I would not thinke that they coulede vanishe so foone, and consume like smoake.” “ Madame ” (fayde the Scicilian) “ yf I fayle in any thing which you commaunde mee, I praye to God neuer to receiue any fauor or grace of those Curtesies whych I craue.” “ If then ” (quod shee) “ you wyl promise to employ your selfe aboute a businesse that I haue to do when I make request, I wyll also to accept you for a friende, and graunt futch secrecie as a faithful louer can desyre of his Lady.” Dom Pietro which would haue offred hym selfe in Sacrifice for hir, not knowyng hir demaunde, tooke an othe, and promysed hir so lyghtly as madly afterwarde he did put the same in prooffe. Beholde the preparatiues of the obsequies of their first loue, and the guages of a bloudie Bed: the one was prodigall of hir honoure, the other the tormente of his reputation, and neglected the duety and honor of his state, which the house wherof he came, commaunded hym to kepe. Thus all the nyght he remained with Bianca Maria, who made him so wel to like hir good entertaynment and imbracements, as he neuer was out of her Company. And the warie Circes fayned her self so fare in loue wyth hym, and vsed so many toyes and gametricks of her filthy science, as he not onely esteemed hym selfe the happiest Gentleman of Scicilia, but the most fortunate wight of all the Worlde, and by bibbing of hir Wyne was so straungely charmed with the Pleasures of his fayre Mystresse, as for hir sake he would haue taken vpon him the whole ouerthrowe of Milan, so well as Blofe of Cumes to fette the Cittye of Rome on fire, if Tyberius Gracchus the fedicious, woulde haue giuen it him in charge. Sutch is the manner of wilde and foolish youth, whych suffreth it selfe to be caried beyonde the boundes of reason. The same in time past did ouerthrow many Realmes, and caused the chaunge of diuers Monarchies: and truely vnseemely it is for a man to be subdued to the will of a common strumpet. And as it is vncomly to submit him selfe to futch one, so not requisite to an honest and vertuous Dame, his married Wyfe. Which vnmanly deedes, be occasions that diuers Foolishe Women commit futch filthy factes, with

their inspekable trumperies begiling the simple man, and perchance through to much losing the Bridle raynes to the lawfull Wyfe, the poore man is strangely deceyued by some adulterous varlet, whych at the Wyue's commaundment, when the feeth oportunity, wil not shrinke to hazarde the honour of them both, in futch wife as they serue for an example vppon a common Scaffold to a whole generation and Posterity. I wyll not seeke farre of for examples, being satiffied with the folly of the Bastard Cardonne, to please the cruelty and malice of that infernall fury the Countesse, who hauinge lulled, flattered, and bewitched with hir louetricks (and peradventure with some charmed drinke) her new Pigeon, feeinge it time to folicite his promise, to be reuenged of those, whych thought no more of hir conspiracies and trayterous deuises, and also when the time was come for punishinge of hir whoredome, and chastising of the breach of fayth made to hir husbände, and of hir intended murders, and some of them put in execution, she I say, desirous to see the ende of that, which in thought she had contryued, vppon a day tooke Dom Pietro aside, and secretly began this Oration: "I take God to witnes (fir) that the request which I pretend presently to make, proceedeth of desire rather that the Worlde may know how iustly I seeke meanes to mayntayne myne honour, than for desire of reuenge, knowinge very well, that there is nothing so precious, and deere vnto a woman, as the preferuation of that inestimable Iewell, specially in a Lady of that honourable degre whych I mayntayne amonge the best. And to the intent I seeme not tedious with prolixity of words, or vse other than direct circumstances before him that hath offred iust reuenge for the wrongs I haue receyued: knowe you fir, that for a certain tyme I continued at Pauie, keypyng a house and Trayne so honest, as the best Lords were contented wyth myne ordinarye: It chaunced that two honest Gentlemen of Noble House haunted my Palace in lyke fort, and with the same intertainment whych as you see, I doe receiue ech Gentleman, who beyng well intreated and honoured of me, in the ende forgat themselves so farre, as without respect of my state and callinge, wythout regard of the race and family wherof they come, haue attempted the flaunder of my good name, and vtter subuersion of my

renoume: and sufficient it was not for them thus to deale with mee poore Gentlewoman, without defert (excepte it were for admytyng them to haue accessē vnto my houfe) but also to continue their Blasphemies, to myne extreame reproach and shame: and howe true the fame is, they that know me can well declare, by reason whereof, the vulgar people prone and ready to wycked reportes, haue conceiued futch opynion of me, as for that they see me braue and fine in Apparell, and specyally throughe the slaundersous speache of those gallantes, do deeme and repute me for a common Whoore, wherof I craue none other wytnesse than your selfe and my conscience. And I sweare vnto you, that sith I came to Milan, it is you alone that hath vanquished, and made the Triumphe of my Chastytye: and yf you were absent from this Citye, I assure you on my fayth that I would not tarry heere xxiiii. houres. These infamous ruffians I say, these persecuters and termagantes of my good name, haue chased mee out of all good Cityes, and made me to be abhorred of ech honest company, that weary I am of my lyfe, and lothe to lyue any longer except spedye redresse bee had for reuengement of thys wronge: wherefore except I finde some Noble Champion and Valyaunte Personage to requyte these Vyllains for their spitefull Speach blasēd on me in euerye Corner of Towne and Countreye, and to paye them theyr rewarde and hire that I may lyue at Lybertye and quyet, Sorrowe wyll eyther consume mee or myne owne handes shall hasten spedye Death.” And in speakyng those Woordes, shee beganne to weepe with futch abundance of teares streaming downe hir Cheekes and Necke of Alabafter hewe, as the Scicilian which almost had none other God but the Countesse, sayd vnto hir: “And what is he, that dare molest and slander hir that hath in hir puiffaunce so many Souldiers and men of Warre? I make a vow to God, that if I know the names of those two arrant vilaynes, the which haue so defamed my Mystresse name, the whole worlde shall not faue their liues, whose carrion Bodies I will hew into so many gobbets, as they haue members vpon the fame: wherefore Madame” (sayd he, imbracing her) “I pray you to grieue your selfe no more, commit your wronges to me, only tell me the names. of those Gallaunts, and afterwards you shall vnderstande



what difference I make of woorde and deede, and if I doe not trimme and dresse theym so finely, as hereafter they shall haue no neede of Barber, neuer trust me any more." Shee, as reuiued from death to lyfe, kyssed and embraced him a thousand tymes, thankinge hym for his good will, and offering him all that she had. In the ende she tolde him that hir enimies were the counties of Maffino and Gaiazza, which but by theyr deaths alone were not able to amend and repayre hir honour. "Care not you" (sayde hee) "for before that the Sunne shall spreade his Beames twice 24 houres vpon the earth, you shall heare newes, and know what I am able to do for the chastisement of those deuils." As he promised, hee fayled not to do: for wythin a whyle after as Ardizzino was goinge to supper into the Citty, he was espyed by hym, that had in company attendaunt vpon hym fyue and twenty men of Armes, which waited for Ardizzino, in a Lane on the left hand of the Strete called Merauegli, leading towards the church of Sainct Iames, through which the Countee must needes passe. Who as he was going very pleafantly disposed with his brother, and 5 or 6 of his men, was immediatly assailed on euey side, and not knowinge what it ment, would haue fled, but the Wayes, and Passages were stopped rounde aboute: to defende himselfe it auayled not hauing but their single Swords, and amid the troupe of futch a bande that were throughly armed, which in a moment had murdred, and cut in peeces all that company. And although it was late, yet the Countie Ardizzino many times named Dom Pietro, which caused hym to be taken, and imprisoned by the Duke of Bourbon, that was fled out of Fraunce, and then was Lieutenant for the Emperour Charles the fifth in Milan. Whofoeuer was astonned and amazed with that Imprisonment, it is to bee thoughte that the Scicilan was not greatly at his ease and quiet, who needed no torments to force him confesse the fact, for of his owne accorde voluntarily he dysclofed the same, but he sayde he was prouoked thervnto by the persuation of Bianca Maria telling the whole discourse as you haue heard before. She had already intelligence of this chaunce, and might haue fled and saued hir selfe before the fact (by the confession of Dom Pietro) had ben discovered, and attended in some secrete place till that stormie

time had bene calmed and appeafed. But God which is a rightfull iudge woulde not fuffer hir wickedneffe fretch any further, fith ſhe hauing found out futch a nimble and wilful executioner, the Countee of Gaiazzo could not long haue remained aliue, who then in good time and happy houre was abſent out of the City. So ſoone as Dom Pietro had accused the Counteſſe, the Lord of Bourbon ſente her to pryſon, and being examined, confeſſed the whole matter, truſtinge that hir infinite nombre of Crownes woulde haue corrupted the Duke, or thoſe that repreſented his perſon. But hir Crownes and Lyfe paſſed all one way. For the day after hir impryſonment ſhee was condemned to loſe hir heade: and in the meane time Dom Pietro was ſaued, by the diligence and fuite of the Captaynes, and was employed in other Warres, to whom the Duke gaue him, for that he was lothe to loſe ſo notable a Souldiour, the very right hand of his Brother the Countee of Colifano. The Counteſſe hauing ſentence pronounced vpon hir, but truſting for pardon, would not prepare hir ſelfe to dy, ne yet by any meanes craue forgiuenes of hir faults at the hands of God, vntil ſhe was conueyed out of the Caſtell, and ledde to the common place of execution, where a Scaffolde was prepared for hir to play the laſt Acte of thys Tragedy. Then the miſerable Lady began to know hirſelfe, and to confeſſe hir faults before the people, deuoutly praying God, not to haue regard to hir demerites, ne yet to determine his wrath agaynſt hir, or enter with hir in iudgement, for ſo much as if the ſame were decreed accordinge to hir iniquity, no ſaluation was to be looked for. She befought the people to pray for hir, and the countee of Gaiazzo that was abſent, to pardon hir malice, and treaſon which ſhe had deuifed agaynſt him. Thus miſerably and repentantly dyed the Counteſſe, which in hir lyfe refuſed not to imbrace and follow any wickednes, no miſchiefe ſhee accompted euill done, ſo the ſame were employed for hir pleaſure and paſtime. A goodly example truly for the youth of our preſent time, ſith the moſt part indifferently do launch into the gulfe of diſordred lyfe, ſuffring themſelues to bee plunged in the puddles of their owne vayne conceiptes, without conſideration of the miſchieues that may enſue. If the Lord of Cardonne had not bene beloued of his generall, into what calamity had he fallen for

yeldinge himfelfe a pray to that bloody Woman who had more regarde to the light, and wilfull fanfie of hir, whom he ferued like a flauē, than to his duety and estimation? And truly all futch be voyde of their right wits, which thincke themfelues beloued of a Whoore. For their amity endureth no longer than they fucke from their purffes and bodies any profit or pleafure. And becaufe almost euery day femblable examples be feene, I will leaue of this difcourfe, to take me to a matter, not farre more pleafaunt than this, although founded vpon better grounde, and ftablished upon loue, the firft onfet of lawfull mariage, the fucceffe whereof chaunced to murderous ende, and yet the fame intended by neyther of the beloued: as you fhall be iudge by the continuance of reading of the hiftory enfuing. Beare with me good Ladyes (for of you alone I craue this pardon) for introducing the Whoorifh lyfe of the Counteffe, and hir bloody enterprife: bicaufe I know right wel, that recitall of murders, and bloody factts wearieth the mindes of thofe that loue to lyue at reft, and wifh for fayre weather after the troublefome ftormes of raging Seas, no leffe than the Pilote and wife Mariner, hauing long time endured and cut the perillous fttraights of the Ocean Sea. And albeit the corruption of our nature be fo great, as follies delighte vs more than ernest matters fraught wyth reafon and wifedome, yet I thinke not that our mindes be fo peruerted and diuided from trouth, but fometimes wee care and feeke to fpeake more grauely than the countrey Hynde, or more foberly than they, whofe lyues do beare the marke of infamy, and be to euery wight notorious for the onely name of their vocation. Sufficeth vs that an Hyftory, be it neuer fo full of fporte and pleafure, do bring with it inftruction of our lyfe, and amendement of our maners. And wee ought not to be fo curious or fcrupulous, to reiect merry and pleafant deuifes that be voyde of harmeful talke, or wythout futch glee as may hynder the education of Youth procliue, and ready to choofe that is corrupt, and naught. The very bookes of holy fcriptures doe describe vnto vs perfons that bee vicious, and fo deteftable as nothing more, whose facttes vnto the fimple may feeme vnfeemely, vpon the leaft recitall of the fame. And fhall wee therefore reiect the readinge, and efchue thofe holy bookes? God forbid, but with diligence to

beware, that we do not resemble those that be remembered there for example, forso much as speedely after sinne, ensueth grieuous, and as sodayne punishment. For which cause I haue selected these Histories, of purpose to aduertise Youth, how they that follow the way of damnable iniquity, fayle not shortly after their great offences, and execution of their outrageous vices, to feele the iust and mighty hand of God, who guerdoneth the good for their good works and deedes, and rewardeth the euil for their wickednes and mischief. Now turne we then to the Hystory of two, the rarest Louers that euer were, the performauce, and finishinge whereof, had it bene so prosperous as the beginning, they had ioyed ioyfully the Fruicts of their intent, and two noble houses of one City reconciled to perpetuall frendship.

When in comp. of this with ed. by N. Shaks. Socy.

## THE TWENTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

*The goodly Hyftory of the true, and constant Loue between Rhomeo and Iulietta, the one of whom died of Poyfon, and the other of sorrow, and heuineffe: wherein be compryfed many aduentures of Loue, and other deuifes touchinge the fame.*

I AM fure that they which meafure the Greatneffe of Goddes workes accordinge to the capacity of their Rude, and fimple vnderftandinge, wyll not lightly adhibite credite vnto thys Hiftory, fo wel for the variety of ftraunge Accidents which be therein defcribed, as for the nouelty of fo rare, and perfect amity. But they that haue read Plinie, Valerius Maximus, Plutarche, and diuers other Writers, do finde, that in olde time a great number of Men and Women haue died, fome of exceffiuue ioy, fome of ouermutch forrow, and fome of other paffions: and amongs the fame, Loue is not the leaft, whych when it feazeth vppon any kynde and gentle fubie&t, and findeth no refiftaunce to ferue for a rampart to ftay the violence of his courfe, by little and little vndermineth, melteth and confumeth the vertues of naturall powers in futch wyfe as the fpyrite yealdinge to the burden, abandoneth the place of lyfe: which is verified by the pitifull, and infortunate death of two Louers that furrendered their laft Breath in one Toumbe at Verona a Citty of Italy, wherein repofe yet to thys day (with great maruell) the Bones, and remnauntes of their late louing bodies: an hyftory no leffe wonderfull than true. If then perticular affection which of good right euery man ought to beare to the place where he was borne, doe not deceyue thofe that trauayle, I thincke they will confeffe wyth me, that few Citties in Italy, can furpaffe the fayd Citty of Verona, aswell for the Nauigable riuier called Adiffa, which paffeth almoft through the midft of the fame, and thereby a great trafique into Almayne, as alfo for the profpect towards the Fertile Mountaynes, and pleafant valeys whych do enuiron the fame, with a great number of very clere and lyuely fountaynes, that ferue for the eafe and commodity of the place. Omittinge (bifides many other fingularities) foure Bridges, and an

infinite number of other honourable Antiquities dayly apparaunt vnto thofe, that be to curious to viewe and looke vpon them. Which places I haue fomewhat touched, bicaufe thys moft true Hiftory which I purpofe hereafter to recite, dependeth thereupon, the memory whereof to thys day is fo wel known at Verona, as vnneths their blubbred Eyes be yet dry, that faw and beheld that lamentable fight. When the Senior Efcala was Lord of Verona, there were two families in the Citty, of farre greater fame than the reft, afwell for riches as Nobility: the one called the Montefches, and the other the Capellets: but lyke as moft commonly there is difcorde amongs theym which be of femblable degree in honour, euen fo there hapned a certayne enmity betweene them: and for fo mutch as the beginning thereof was vnlawfull, and of ill foundation, fo lykewyfe in proceffe of time it kindled to futch flame, as by diuers and fundry deuyfes practifed on both fides, many loft their lyues. The Lord Bartholmew of Efcala, (of whom we haue already fpoken) being Lord of Verona, and feeing futch diforder in his common weale, affayed diuers and fundry waies to reconcile thofe two houfes, but all in vayne: for their hatred had taken futch roote, as the fame could not be moderated by any wyfe counfell or good aduice: betweene whom no other thing could be accorded, but geuing ouer Armour, and Weapon for the time, attending fome other feafon more conuenient, and wyth better leysure to appeafe the reft. In the time that thefe thinges were adoining, one of the family of Montefches called Rhomeo, of the age of 20 or 21. yeares, the comlieft and beft conditioned Gentleman that was amonges the Veronian youth, fell in loue with a yong Gentlewoman of Verona, and in few dayes was attached with hir Beauty, and good behauiour, as he abandoned all other affaires and bufines, to ferue and honour hir: and after many Letters, Ambaffades, and presents, he determined in the ende to fpeake vnto hir, and to difclofe hys paffions, which he did without any other practife. But ſhe which was vertuouſly brought vp, knew how to make him fo good answer to cut of his amorous affections, as he had no luſt after that time to returne any more, and ſhewed hir ſelf ſo auſtere, and ſharpe of Speech, as ſhe vouchſafed not with one looke to behold him. But how mutch the young Gentleman ſaw hir whiſt,

and silent, the more he was inflamed: and after he had continued certayne months in that seruice wythout remedy of his grieffe, he determined in the ende to depart Verona, for prooffe if by chaunge of the place he might alter his affection, saying to himselfe: "What do I meane to loue one that is so vnkinde, and thus doth disdayn me: I am all hir owne, and yet she flieth from me: I can no longer liue, except hir prefence I doe enioy: and she hath no contented mynde, but when she is furthest from me: I will then from henceforth Estrauge my selfe from hir, for it may so come to passe by not beholding hir, that thys fire in me which taketh increafe and nourishment by hir fayre Eyes, by little and little may dy and quench." But minding to put in prooffe what he thought, at one instant hee was reduced to the contrary, who not knowing whereupon to resolute, passed dayes and nights in marueilous Playnts, and Lamentations: for Loue vexed him so neare, and had so well fixed the Gentlewoman's Beauty within the Bowels of his heart, and mynde, as not able to resist, hee faynted with the charge, and consumed by little and little as the Snow agaynst the Sunne: whereof hys parenttes, and kinred did maruayle greatly, bewaylinge hys misfortune, but aboue all other one of hys Companions of riper Age, and Counsell than hee, began sharply to rebuke him: for the loue that he bare him was so great as hee felt hys Martirdome, and was pertaker of hys passion: which caused him by ofte viewyng his friend's disquietnesse in amorous panges, to say thus vnto him: "Rhomeo, I maruell much that thou spendest the best time of thine age, in pursute of a thing, from which thou seest thy self despised and banished, wythout respecte either to thy prodigall dispenfe, to thine honor, to thy teares, or to thy myserable lyfe, which be able to moue the most constant to pity: wherefore I pray thee for the Loue of our auncient amity, and for thyne health sake, that thou wilt learn to be thine owne man, and not to alenat thy lyberty to any so ingrate as she is: for so farre as I coniecture by things that are passed betwene you, either she is in loue wyth some other, or else determineth neuer to loue any. Thou arte yong, rich in goods and fortune, and more excellent in beauty than any Gentleman in thys Cyty: thou art well learned, and the onely sonne of the house wherof thou comcest: what gryef would

it bee to thy poore olde Father and other thy parentes, to see the fo drowned in this dongeon of Vyce, specially at that age wherein thou oughtest rather to put them in some Hope of thy Vertue? begyn then from henceforth to acknowledge thyne error, wherein thou hast hitherto lyued, doe away that amorous vaile or couerture whych blyndeth thyne Eyes and letteth thee to folow the ryghte path, wherein thine auncestors haue walked: or else if thou do feele thy self so subiect to thyne owne wyll, yelde thy hearte to some other place, and chose some Mistresse accordyng to thy worthyneffe, and henceforth doe not sow thy Paynes in a Soyle fo harrayne whereof thou reapest no Fruycte: the tyme approacheth when al the Dames of the Cyty shal assemble, where thou mayst behold futch one as shall make thee forget thy former gryefs." Thys younge Gentleman attentyuely hearyng all the persuad- yng reasons of hys fryend, began somewhat to moderate that heate and to acknowledge all the exhortatyons which hee had made to be directed to good purpose: and then determined to put them in prooffe, and to be present indifferently at al the feasts and assemblies of the City, without bearing affection more to one Woman than to an other: and continued in thys manner of Lyfe, II. or III. monthes, thinking by that meanes to quench the sparks of auncient flames. It chaunced then within few dayes after, about the feast of Chrystmasse, when feasts and bankets most commonly be vsed, and maskes accordinge to the custome frequented, that Anthonie Capellet being the Chief of that Familye, and one of the principall Lords of the City too, made a banket, and for the better Solempnization thereof, inuited all the Noble men and dames, to which Feast resorted the most part of the youth of Verona. The family of the Capellets (as we haue declared in the beginninge of thys Hyfory) was at variance with the Montesches, which was the cause that none of that family repaired to that Banket, but onely the yong Gentleman Rhomeo, who came in a maske after supper with certaine other yong Gentlemen: and after they had remained a certayne space with their visards on, at length they did put of the same, and Rhomeo very shamefast, withdrew himself into a Corner of the Hall: but by reason of the light of the Torches which burned very bright, he was by and by



knownen and loked vpon of the whole Company, but specially of the Ladies, for besides his Native Beauty wherewyth Nature had adorned him, they maruelled at his audacity how hee durst presume to enter so secretly into the House of that Famylye which had litle cause to do him any good. Notwithstanding, the Capellets dissembling their mallice, either for the honor of the company, or else for respect of his Age, did not misuse him eyther in Worde or Deede: by meanes whereof wyth free liberty he behelde and viewed the Ladies at hys Pleasure, which hee dyd so well, and wyth grace so good, as there was none but did very well lyke the presence of his person: and after he had particularly giuen Iudgement vppon the excellency of each one, according to his affection, hee sawe one Gentlewoman amonges the reste of surpassinge Beautye who (althoughe hee had neuer seene hir tofore) pleased him aboute the rest, and attributed vnto hir in heart the Chyefest place for all perfection in Beautye: and feastyng hir incessantlye with piteous lookes, the Loue whych hee bare to his first Gentlewoman, was ouercomen with this newe fire, that toke futch norishment and vigor in his hart, as he was not able neuer to quench the same but by Death onely: as you may vnderstande by one of the strangest discourses, that euer any mortal man deuised. The yong Rhomeo then felying himselfe thus tossed wyth thys newe Tempest, could not tell what countenance to vse, but was so surprised and chaunged with these last flames, as he had almost forgotten himselfe, in futch wise as he had not audacity to enquire what she was, and wholly bente himself to feede hys Eyes with hir sighte, wherewyth he moystened the sweete amorous venome, which dyd so empoyson him, as hee ended hys Dayes with a kinde of most cruell death. The Gentlewoman that dydde put Rhomeo to futch payne was called Iulietta, and was the Daughter of Capellet, the mayster of the house wher that affembly was, who as hir Eyes did rolle and wander too and fro, by chaunce espied Rhomeo, which vnto hir seemed to be the goodliest personage that euer shee sawe: and Loue (which lay in wayte neuer vntill that time,) assaying the tender heart of that yong Gentlewoman, touched hir so at the quicke, as for any resistance she coulde make, was not able to defende his forces, and then began to set at naught

the royalties of the feaft, and felt no pleasure in hir heart, but when ſhe had a glimpse by throwing or receiuing ſome light or looke of Rhomeo. And after they had contented eche others troubled heart with millions of amorous lookes which oftentimes interchangeably encountred and met together, the burning Beames gaue ſufficient teſtimony of loue's priuy onſettes. Loue hauing made the heartes breache of thoſe two louers, as they two fought meanes to ſpeake together, Fortune offered them a very meete and apt occaſion. A certayne Lord of that troupe and companie tooke Iulietta by the Hande to Daunce, wherein ſhee behaued hir ſelfe fo well, and wyth ſo excellent grace, as ſhee wanne that Daye the priſe of Honour from all the Damofels of Verona. Rhomeo hauynge foreſeene the place wherevnto ſhee mynded to retire, approached the ſame, and ſo dyſcretelye vſed the matter, as hee founde the meanes at hir returne to fit beſide hir: Iulietta when the daunce was finiſhed, returned to the very place where ſhe was ſet before, and was placed betwene Rhomeo and an other gentleman called Mercutio, which was a courtlyke Gentleman, very well be loued of all men, and by reaſon of his pleaſaunt and curteous behaiour was in euery company wel intertayned. Mercutio that was of audacity among Maydens, as a Lyon is among Lambes, ſeazed incontynently vpon the hande of Iulietta, whoſe hands wontedly were ſo cold both in Wynter and Sommer as the Mountayne yce, although the fire's heat did warm the ſame. Rhomeo whych ſat vpon the left ſide of Iulietta, ſeynge that Mercutio held hir by the right hand, toke hir by the other that he myght not be deceiued of his purpoſe, and ſtraying the ſame a little, he felt himſelf ſo preſt wyth that newe fauor, as he remayned mute, not able to aunſwer: but ſhe perceyuyng by his change of color, that the fault proceded of the vehemence of loue, defyryng to ſpeake vnto hym, turned hir ſelfe towards hym, and wyth trembling voyce ioyned with virginal ſhamefaſtneſſe, intermedled with a certayn baſhfulneſſe, ſayd to hym: "Bleſſed be the houre of your neare approche:" but mynding to procede in further talke, loue had ſo cloſed vp hir mouth, as ſhe was not able to end hir Tale. Wherunto the yong Gentleman all rauiſhed with ioy and contentation, ſighing, aſked hir what was the cauſe of that ryght fortunate

bleffing: Iulietta, fomwhat more emboldened with pytyful loke and fmyling countenance, faid vnto him: "Syr, do not maruell yf I do bleffe your comminge hither, bicaufe fir Mercutio a good tyme wyth frofty hand hath wholly frofen mine, and you of your curtefy haue warmed the fame agayne." Wherunto immediatly Rhomeo replied: "Madame, if the heauens haue ben fo fauorable to employe me to do you some agreeable feruice, being repaired hither by chance amongs other Gentlemen, I esteeme the fame well beftowed, crauyng no greater benefite for fatiffaction of all my contentations receiued in this World, than to ferue obey and honor you fo long as my lyfe doth laft, as experience fhall yeld more ample prooffe when it fhall pleafe you to geue further affaye: moreouer, if you haue receined any Heat by touche of my Hand, you may be well affured that thofe flames be dead in refpect of the lyuely Sparkes and violent fire which forteth from you fayre Eyes, which fire hath fo fiercely inflamed all the moft fenfible parts of my body, as if I be not fuccored by the fauoure of your good graces, I do attend the time to be confumed to duft." Scarfe had he made an ende of thofe laft words but the daunce of the Torche was at an end: whereby Iulietta, which wholly burnt in loue, ftraightly clafpyng her Hand with hys, had no leysure to make other aunfwer, but softly thus to fay: "My deare frend, I know not what other affured wytnesse you defire of loue, but that I let you vnderftand that you be no more your own, than I am yours, beyng ready and dyspofed to obey you fo farre as honour fhall permyt, befeechying you for the prefent tyme to content your felfe wyth thys aunfwere, vntyll fome other feafon meeter to Communicate more secretly of our affaires." Rhomeo feeing himfelfe preffed to part of the Company, and for that hee knew not by what meanes he myght fee hir agayne that was hys Life and Death, demanded of one of his friends what fhee was, who made aunfwer that fhe was the Daughter of Capellet, the Lord of the houfe, and Mayfter of that daye's feaft (who wroth beyonde meafure that Fortune had fent him to fo daungerous a place, thought it impoffible to bring to end his enterprife begon.) Iulietta conetous on the other fide, to know what yong Gentleman he was which had fo curteoufly intertayned hir that Nyght, and of whome fhee felt

the new wound in hir heart, called an olde Gentlewoman of honor which had nurfed hir and brought her vp, vnto whom she fayd leaning vpon hir shoulder: "Mother, what two young Gentlemen be they which first goe forth with the two Torches before them." Vnto whome the old Gentlewoman told the name of the houfes wherof they came. Then she asked hir againe, what young gentleman that was which holdeth the visarde in his hand, wyth the damaske cloke about him. "It is" (quod she) "Romeo Montefche, the sonne of youre Father's capytall Enimye and deadly foe to all your kinne." But the Mayden at the onely Name of Montefche was altogyther amazed, despayrynge for euer to attayne to husband hir great affectyoned fryend Rhomeo, for the auneynt hatreds betweene those two Families. Neuerthelesse she knewe so well how to dissemble hir grief and discontented Minde, as the olde Gentlewoman perceiued nothing, who then began to persuaide hir to retire into hir Chamber: whom she obeyed, and being in bed, thinking to take hir wonted rest, a great tempest of diuers thoughtes began to enuiron and trouble hir Mynde, in sutch wyse as shee was not able to close hir Eyes, but turninge heere and there, fantasied diuers things in hir thought, sometymes purposed to cut of the whole attempte of that amorous practife, sometymes to continue the same. Thus was the poor pucell vexed with two contraries, the one comforted hir to pursue hir intent, the other proposed the immynente Perill wherevnto vndyscretly she headlong threwe hir self: and after she had wandred of long time in this amorous Labyrinth, she knew not whereuppon to resolue, but wept incessantly, and accused hir selfe, saying: "Ah, Caitife and myserable Creature, from whence do rise these vnaccustomed Trauayles which I feele in Mynde, prouokyng me to loofe my reste: but infortunate wretch, what doe I know if that yong Gentleman doe loue mee as hee sayeth. It may be vnder the vaile of fugred woordes he goeth about to steale away mine honore, to be reuenged of my Parentes whych haue offended his, and by that meanes to my euerlastinge reproche to make me the fable of the Verona people." Afterwardes sodainly as she condempned that which she suspected in the beginning, sayd: "Is it possible that vnder sutch beautye and rare comelynesse, dyfloyaltye and treason may haue theyr

Syedg and Lodgyng? If it bee true that the Face is the faythfull Messanger of the Mynde's Conceypte, I may bee assured that hee doeth loue mee: for I marked so many chaunged Colours in his Face in time of his talke with me, and sawe hym so transported and besides himselfe, as I cannot wyfhe any other more certayne lucke of Loue, wherein I wyll perfyft immutable to the laste gaspe of Lyfe, to the intente I may haue hym to bee my husband: for it maye so come to passe, as this newe aliaunce shall engender a perpetuall peace and Amity betweene hys House and mine." Arrestinge then vpon this determynation styll, as she saw Rhomeo passinge before hir Father's Gate, she shewed hir selfe with merry countenance, and followed him so with loke of Eye, vntill she had lost his sight. And continuing this manner of Lyfe for certayne Dayes, Rhomeo not able to content himself with lookes, daily did behold and marke the situation of the house, and one day amongs others hee espied Iulietta at hir Chamber Window, bounding vpon a narrow Lane, ryght ouer against which Chamber he had a Gardein which was the cause that Rhomeo fearing discouery of their loue, began the day time to passe no more before the Gate, but so soone as the Night with his browne Mantell had couered the Earth, hee walked alone vp and downe that little strete: and after he had bene there many times, missing the chiefest cause of his comming, Iulietta impacient of hir euill, one night repaired to hir window, and perceiued throughe the bryghtnessse of the Moone hir friend Rhomeo vnder hir window, no lesse attended for, than hee hymselfe was waighting. Then she secretly with Teares in hir Eyes, and wyth voyce interrupted by sighes, sayd: "Signior Rhomeo, me thinke that you hazarde your person to mutch, and commyt the same into great Daunger at thys time of the Nyght, to protrude your self to the Mercy of them which meane you little good. Who yf they had taken would haue cut you in pieces, and mine honor (which I esteeme dearer than my lyfe,) hindred and suspected for euer." "Madame" aunswered Rhomeo, "my Lyfe is in the Hand of God, who only can dispose the same: howbeyt yf any Man had foughte menes to beryeue mee of my Lyfe, I should (in the presence of you) haue made him knowen what mine ability had ben to defend the same. Notwythstandyng Lyfe is not so deare, and

of futch estimation wyth me, but that I coulde vouchsafe to facryfice the fame for your fake: and althoughe my myfhappe had bene fo greate, as to bee dyfpatched in that Place, yet had I no caufe to be forrye therefore, excepte it had bene by lofyng the meanes, and way how to make you vnderftande the good wyll and duety which I beare you, defyryng not to conferue the fame for anye commodytie that I hope to haue thereby, nor for anye other refpecte, but onely to Loue, Serue, and Honor you, fo long as breath fhall remaine in me." So foone as he had made an end of his talke, loue and pity began to feaze vpon the heart of Iulietta, and leaning hir head vpon hir hand, hauing hir face all befprent wyth teares, ſhe ſaid vnto Rhomeo: "Syr Rhomeo, I pray you not to renue that grief agayne: for the onely Memory of futch inconuenyence, maketh me to counterpoyſe betwene death and Lyfe, my heart being fo vnited with yours, as you cannot receyue the leaſt Iniury in this world, wherein I ſhall not be fo great a Partaker as your ſelf: beſeechyng you for concluſion, that if you deſire your owne health and mine, to declare vnto me in fewe Wordes what youre determynation is to attaine: for if you couetany other ſecrete thing at my Handes, more than myne Honoure can well allowe, you are maruelouſly deceiued: but if your deſire be godly, and that the frendſhip which you proteſt to beare mee, be founded vpon Vertue, and to bee concluded by Maryage, receiuing me for your wyfe and lawfull Spouſe, you ſhall haue futch part in me, as whereof without any regard to the obedience and reuerence that I owe to my Parentes, or to the auncient Enimity of oure Famylyes, I wyll make you the onely Lord and Mayſter [ouer me], and of all the thyngs that I poſſeſſe, being preſt and ready in all poyntes to folow your commaundement: but if your intent be otherwyſe, and thinke to reape the Fruycte of my Virginity, vnder pretenſe of wanton Amity, you be greatly deceiued, and doe pray you to auoide and ſuffer me from henceforth to lyue and reſt amongs myne equals." Rhomeo whych looked for none other thyng, holding vp his Handes to the Heauens, wyth incredible ioy and contentation, aunſwered: "Madame, for ſo much as it hath pleaſed you to doe me that honour to accepte me for futch a one, I accorde and conſent to your requeſt, and doe offer vnto you the beſt part

of my heart, which shall remayn with you for guage and fure testimony of my faying, vntill futch tyme as God shall giue me leauē to make you the entier owner and poffeffor of the fame. And to the intent I may begyn myn enterpryfe, to morrow I will to the Frier Laurence for counfell in the fame, who besides that he is my ghostly father is accustomed to giue me instruction in al my other secreet affaires, and fayle not (if you please) to meete me agayne in this place at this very hour, to the intent I may giue you to vnderstand the deuice betwene him and me." Which she lyked very well, and ended their talke for that time. Rhomeo receyuing none other fauour at hir hands for that night, but only Wordes. Thys Fryer Laurence, of whom hereafter wee shall make more ample mention, was an auncient Doctōr of Diuinity, of the order of the Fryers Minors, who besides the happy profession which he had made in study of holy writ, was very skilful in Philosophy, and a great searcher of nature's Secrets, and exceeding famous in Magike knowledge, and other hidden and secreet sciences, which nothing diminished his reputation, bicause hee did not abuse the fame. And this Frier through his vertue and piety, had so well won the citizens hearts of Verona, as he was almost the Confessor to them all, and of all men generally reuerenced and beloued: and many tymes for his great prudence was called by the lords of the Citty, to the hearing of their weighty causes. And amonges other he was greatly fauored by the Lorde of Escalē, that tyme the principall gouernor of Verona, and of all the Family of Montefches, and of the Capellets, and of many other. The young Rhomeo (as we haue already declared) from his tender age, bare a certayne particuler amity to Frier Laurence, and departed to him his secrets, by meanes whereof so soone as he was gone from Iulietta, went strayght to the Fryers Franciscians, where from point to point he discourfed the successe of his loue to that good father, and the conclusion of mariage betwene him and Iulietta, adding vpon the ende of talke, **that hee woulde rather choose shamefull death, than to fayle hir of his promise.** To whom the good Frier after he had debated diuers matters, and proposed al the inconueniences of that secreet mariage, exhorted hym to more mature deliberation of the fame: notwithstandinge, all the alleged persua-

fions were not able to reuoke his promyse. Wherefore the Frier vanquished with his stubborneffe, and also forecasting in his mynde that the mariage might be some meanes of reconciliation of those two houfes, in th'end agreed to his request, intreating him, that he myght haue one dayes respit for leysure to excogitate what was best to be done. But if Rhomeo for his part was carefull to prouide for his affayres, Iulietta lykewise did her indeuour. For seeing that shee had none about her to whom she might discouer her passions, shee deuised to impart the whole to hir Nurse which lay in her Chamber, appoynted to wayte vppon hir, to whom she committed the intier secrets of the loue between Rhomeo and hir. And although the olde Woman in the beginninge resisted Iulietta hir intent, yet in the ende she knew so wel how to persuaide and win hir, that she promised in all that she was able to do, to be at hir commaundement. And then she sent hir with all diligence to speake to Rhomeo, and to know of him by what meanes they might be married, and that he would do hir to vnderstand the determination betwene Fryer Laurence and him. Whom Rhomeo aunswered, how the first day wherein he had informed Fryer Laurence of the matter, the sayde Fryer deferred aunswere vntil the next, which was the very same, and that it was not past one houre sithens he returned with finall resolution, and that Frier Laurence and he had deuised, that she the Saterdag following, should craue leaue of hir mother to go to confession, and to repayre to the Church of Saynct Francis, where in a certayne Chappell secretly they should be married, praying hir in any wyfe not to fayle to be there. Which thinge she brought to passe with sutch discretion, as hir mother agreed to hir request: and accompanied onely wyth hir gouerneffe, and a young mayden, she repayred thither at the determined day and tyme. And so soone as she was entred the Church, she called for the good Doctor Fryer Laurence, vnto whom answere was made that he was in the shriuing Chappell, and forthwith aduertisement was giuen him of hir comming. So soone as Fryer Laurence was certified of Iulietta, hee went into the body of the Church, and willed the olde Woman and yong mayden to go heare seruice, and that when hee had heard the confession of Iulietta, he would fend for them agayn. Iulietta beinge entred a little Cell wyth Frier Laurence,



he shut fast the dore as he was wont to do, where Rhomeo and he had bin together shut fast in, the space of one whole hour before. Then Frier Laurence after that he had shruied them, sayd to Iulietta: "Daughter, as Rhomeo here present hath certified me, you be agreed, and contented to take him to husband, and he likewise you for his Espouse and Wyfe. Do you now still persist and continue in that mynde?" The Louers aunswered that they desired none other thing. The Fryer seeing theyr conformed and agreeable willes, after he had discourfed somewhat vpon the commendation of mariage dignity, pronounced the vsuall woordes of the Church, and she hauing receyued the Ring from Rhomeo, they rose vp before the Fryer, who sayd vnto them: "If you haue any other thing to conferre together, do the same wyth speede: for I purpose that Rhomeo shall goe from hence so secretly as he can." Rhomeo sory to goe from Iulietta fayde secretly vnto hir, that shee should send vnto hym after diner the old Woman, and that he would cause to be made a corded Ladder the same euening, thereby to climbe vp to her Chamber window, where at more leifure they would deuise of their affaires. Things determined betwene them, either of them retyred to their house with incredible contentation, attendinge the happy houre for consummation of their mariage. When Rhomeo was come home to his house, he declared wholly what had passed betwen him and Iulietta, vnto a Seruaunt of his called Pietro, whose fidelity he had so greatly tryed, as he durst haue trusted him with hys life, and commaunded hym wyth expedition to prouide a Ladder of Cordes wyth 2 strong Hookes of Iron fastned to both endes, which he easily did, because they were much vsed in Italy. Iulietta did not forget in the Euening about fise of the Clocke, to send the olde Woman to Rhomeo, who hauing prepared all things necessary, caused the Ladder to be deliuered vnto her, and prayed hir to require Iulietta the same euening not to fayle to bee at the accustomed place. But if this Iorney seemed long to these two passioned Louers, let other Iudge, that haue at other tymes affayed the lyke: for euery minute of an houre seemed to them a Thousande yeares, so that if they had power to commaund the Heauens (as Iosua did the Sunne) the Earth had incontinently bene shadowed wyth darkest Cloudes. The

apoynted houre come, Rhomeo put on the most sumptuous apparell hee had, and conducted by good fortune neere to the place where his heart tooke lyfe, was so fully determined of hys purpose, as easly hee clymed vp the Garden wall. Beinge arriued hard to the wyndow, he perceyued Iulietta, who had already so well fastned the Ladder to draw him vp, as without any daunger at all, he entred hir chambre, which was so clere as the day, by reason of the Tapers of virgin Wax, which Iulietta had caused to be lighted, that she might the better beholde hir Rhomeo. Iulietta for hir part, was but in hir night kerchief: who so soon as she perceyued him colled him about the Neck, and after shee had kiffed and re-kiffed hym a million of times, began to imbrace hym betwene hir armes, hauing no power to speake vnto him, but by Sighes onely, holding hir mouth close against his, and being in this trauce beheld him with pitifull eye, which made him to liue and die together. And afterwards somewhat come to hir selfe, she sayd with sighes deeply fetched from the bottom of hir heart: "Ah Rhomeo, the exampler of al vertue and gentlenes, most hartely welcome to this place, wherein for your lacke, and absence, and for feare of your person, I haue gushed forth so many Teares as the spring is almost dry: but now that I hold you betwen my armes, let death and fortune doe what they list. For I count my selfe more than satisfied of all my sorrowes past, by the fauour alone of your presence." Whom Rhomeo with weeping eye, giuing ouer silence aunswered: "Madame, for somutch as I neuer receyued so mutch of fortune's grace, as to make you feeble by liuely experience what power you had ouer me, and the torment euery minute of the day sustained for your occasion, I do assure you the least grief that vexeth me for your absence, is a thousand times more paynefull than death, which long time or this had cut of the threede of my lyfe, if the hope of this happy Iourney had not bene, which paying mee now the iust Tribute of my weepings past, maketh me better content, and more glad, than if the whole Worlde were at my commaundement, beseeching you (without further memory of auncient grieffe) to take aduice in tyme to come how we may content our passionate hearts, and to sort our affayres with sutch Wyfedome and discretion, as our enimies without aduantage may

let vs continue the remnant of our dayes in rest and quiet." And as Iulietta was about to make answere, the Olde woman came in the meane time, and sayd vnto them: "He that wasteth time in talke, recouereth the same to late. But for so much as eyther of you hath endured futch mutuall paynes, behold (quoth shee) a campe which I haue made ready:" (shewing them the Fielde bed which shee had prepared and furnished,) whereunto they easly agreed, and being then betwene the Sheets in priuy bed, after they had gladded and cherished themselues with al kinde of delicate embracements which loue was able to deuise, Rhomeo vnloosing the holy lines of virginity, tooke possession of the place, which was not yet besieged with futch ioy and contentation as they can iudge which haue assayed like delites. Their marriage thus consummate, Rhomeo perceyuing the morning make to hasty approach, tooke his leaue, making promise that he would not fayle wythin a day or two to resort agayne to the place by lyke meanes, and femblable time, vntil Fortune had prouided sure occasion vnfearefully to manifest their marriage to the whole Worlde. And thus a month or twayne, they continued their ioyful mindes to their incredible satiffaction, vntil lady Fortune enuious of their prosperity, turned hir Wheele to tumble them into such a bottomlesse pit, as they payed hir vfury for their pleasures past, by a certayne most cruell and pitifull death, as you shal vnderstand hereafter by the discourse that followeth. Now as we haue before declared, the Capellets and the Montefches were not so well reconciled by the Lord of Verona, but that there rested in them futch sparks of auncient displeasures, as either partes waited but for some light occasion to draw together, which they did in the Easter holy dayes, (as bloody men commonly be most willingly disposed after a good time to commit some nefarious deede) besides the Gate of Bourfarie leading to the olde castel of Verona, a troupe of Capellets rencountred with certayne of the Montefches, and without other woordes began to set vpon them. And the Capellets had for Chiefe of their glorious enterprife one called Thibault, cofin Germayne to Iulietta, a yong man strongly made, and of good experience of armes, who exhorted his Companions with stout Stomakes to repressse the boldnes of the Montesches, that ther

might from that time forth no memory of them be left at all. The rumoure of this fray was disperfed throughout al the corners of Verona, that succour might come from all partes of the Citty to depart the fame. Whereof Rhomeo aduertized, who walked alonges the Citty with certayne of his Companions, hasted him speedily to the place where the slaughter of his Parents and alies were committed: and after he had well aduised and beholden many wounded and hurt on both sides, he sayd to hys Companions: "My frends let vs part them, for they be so flesht one vpon an other, as will all be hewed to pieces before the game be done." And saying so, he thrust himselfe amidst the troupe, and did no more but part the blowes on eyther side, crying vpon them aloud: "My frends, no more, it is time henceforth that our quarel cease. For besides the prouocation of God's iust wrath, our two families be slaundersous to the whole World, and are the cause that this common wealth doth grow vnto disorder." But they were so egre and furious one agaynst the other, as they gaue no audience to Rhomeo his counsel, and bent theymselues too kyll, dysmember and teare eche other in pieces. And the fyght was so cruell and outragious betweene them as they which looked on, were amafed to see them endure those blowes, for the grounde was all couered with armes, legges, thighes, and bloude, wherein no signe of cowardnes appeared, and mayntayned their feyghte so longe, that none was able to iudge who hadde the better, vntill that Thibault Cousin to Iulietta inflamed with ire and rage, turned towards Rhomeo thinkinge with a pricke to runne him through. But he was so wel armed and defended with a priuye coat whiche he wore ordinarily for the doubt he had of the Capellets, as the pricke rebounded: vnto whom Rhomeo made answere: "Thibault thou maiest know by the pacience which I haue had vntill this present tyme, that I came not hether to fyght with thee or thyne, but to seeke peace and attonement betweene vs, and if thou thinkest that for defaulte of courage I haue fayled myne endeour, thou doest greate wronge to my reputacion. And impute thys my suffrance to some other perticular respecte, rather than to wante of stomacke. Wherefore abuse mee not but be content with this greate effusion of Bloude and murders already committed. And

prouoke mee not I befeche thee to paffe the boundes of my good will and mynde.” “Ah Traitor;” fayd Thibault, “thou thinkeft to faue thy felfe by the plotte of thy pleafaunt tounge, but fee that thou defende thy felfe, els prefently I will make thee feele that thy tounge fhall not gard thy corps, nor yet be the Buckler to defende the fame from prefent death.” And faying fo, he gaue him a blow with fuch furye, as hadde not other warded the fame hee had cutte of his heade from his fhoulders, and the one was no readyer to lende, but the other incontinentlye was able to paye agayne, for hee being not onelye wroth with the blowe that hee had receiued, but offended with the iniury which the other had don, began to perfue his enemy with fuche courage and viuacity, as at the third blowe with his fwerd hee caufed him to fall backwarde ftarke deade vpon the grounde with a pricke vehementlye thruft into his throte, whiche hee followed till hys Sworde appeared throughe the hynder parte of the fame, by reafon wherof the conflicte ceaffed. For befides that Thibault was the chiefe of his companye he was alfo borne of one of the Nobleft houfes within the Cittye, which caufed the Potefstate to affemble his Souldiers with diligence for the apprehenfion and imprifonment of Rhomeo, who feyeng yl fortune at hande, in fcrete wife conuayed him felfe to Fryer Laurence at the Friers Francifcanes. And the Fryer vnderftanding of his fafte, kepte him in a certayne fcrete place of his couente vntil fortune did otherwyfe prouyde for his fafe goinge abroade. The bruite fpred throughout the citty, of this chaunce don vpon the Lorde Thibault, the Capellets in mourning weedes caufed the deade bodye to be caryed before the fygnyory of Verona, fo well to moue them to pytty, as to demaunde iuftice for the murder: before whom came alfo the Montefches, declaryng the innocencye of Rhomeo, and the wilfull affault of the other. The councell affembled and witneffes heard on both partes a ftraight commaundemente was geuen by the Lorde of the Cittye to geeue ouer their weapons, and touchinge the offence of Rhomeo, becaufe he hadde killed the other in his owne defence, he was banifhed Verona for euer. This common miffortune published throughout the Cittye, was generally forowed and lamented. Som complayneth the death of the Lorde Thibault, fo well for his dexterity in armes as for the

hope of his great good seruice in time to come, if hee hadde not bene preuented by futch cruell Death. Other bewailed (specially the Ladies and Gentlewomen) the ouerthrow of yong Rhomeo, who besides his beauty and good grace wherwith he was enriched, had a certayne naturall allurement, by vertue whereof he drew vnto him the hearts of eche man, like as the stony Adamante doth the cancred iron, in futch wife as the whole nation and people of Verona lamented his mischaunce: but aboue all infortunate Iulietta, who aduertised both of the death of hir cofin Thibault, and of the banishment of hir husband, made the Ayre found with infinite number of mornefull playnts and miserable lamentations. Then feeling hirselfe to mutch outraged with extreeme passion, she went into hir chamber, and ouercome with forrowe threwe hir selfe vpon hir bed, where she began to reinforce hir dolor after so fraunge fashion, as the most constant would haue bene moued to pittie. Then like one out of hir wits, she gazed heere and there, and by fortune beholding the Window wher at Rhomeo was wont to enter into hir chamber, cried out: "Oh vnhappy Windowe, oh entry most vnlucky, wherein were wouen the bitter toyle of my former mishaps, if by thy meanes I haue receyued at other tymes some light pleafure or transitory contentation, thou now makest me pay a tribute so rigorous and paynefull, as my tender body not able any longer to support the same, shall henceforth open the Gate to that lyfe where the ghost discharged from this mortal burden, shal seeke in some place els more assured rest. Ah Rhomeo, Rhomeo, when acquayntaunce first began betweene vs, and reclined myne eares vnto thy suborned promisses, confirmed with so many othes, I would neuer haue beleued that in place of our continued amyty, and in appeasing of the hatred of our houses, thou wouldest haue fought occasion to breake the same by an acte so shamefull, whereby thy fame shall be spotted for euer, and I miserable wretch desolate of Spouse and Companion. But if thou haddest beene so greedy after the Cappellets bloud, wherefore didst thou spare the deare bloud of mine owne heart when so many tymes, and in futch secret place the same was at the mercy of thy cruell handes? The victory which thou shouldest haue gotten ouer me, had it not bene glorious inough for thine ambitious minde, but for more trium-

phant solemnity to bee crowned wyth the bloude of my dearest kinsman? Now get thee hence therefore into some other place to deceiue some other, so vnhappy as my selfe. Neuer come agayne in place where I am, for no excuse shall heereafter take holde to affwage mine offended minde: in the meane tyme I shall lament the rest of my heauy lyfe, with futch store of teares, as my body dried vp from all humidity, shall shortly search reliefe in Earth." And hauing made an ende of those hir wordes, hir heart was so grieuously strayed, as shee coulde neyther weepe nor speake, and stoode so immoueable, as if she had bene in a traunce. Then being somewhat come agayne vnto hirselfe, with feeble voyce shee sayd: "Ah, murderous tongue of other men's honor, how darest thou so infamously to speake of him whom his very enimies doe commend and prayse? How presumest thou to impute the blame vpon Rhomeo, whose vnguiltines and innocent deede euery man alloweth? Where from henceforth shall be hys refuge, sith she which ought to bee the onely Bulwarke, and assured rampire of his distresse, doth pursue and defame him? Receyue, receyue then Rhomeo the satisfaction of mine ingratitude by the sacrifice which I shall make of my proper lyfe, and so the faulte which I haue committed agaynste thy loyaltie, shall bee made open to the Worlde, thou being reuenged and my selfe punished." And thinking to vse some further talke, all the powers of hir body fayled hir wyth signes of present death. But the good olde Woman which could not imagine the cause of Iulietta hir longe absence, doubted very much that she suffred some passion, and fought hir vp and downe in euery place wythin hir Father's Pallace, vntill at length shee founde hir lyinge a long vpon hir Bed, all the outwarde parts of hir body so colde as Marble. But the goode Old woman which thought hir to bee deade, began to cry like one out of hir Wittes, saying: "Ah deare Daughter, and Nourfechylde, howe much doeth thy death now grieue mee at the very heart?" And as she was feeling all the partes of hir body, shee perceyued some sparke of Lyfe to bee yet within the same, which caused hir to call hir many tymes by her name, til at length she brought her oute of her founde, then sayde vnto her: "Why Iulietta, myne owne deare dareleng, what meane you by this tormoyling of your selfe? I

cannot tel from whence this youre behaiour and that immoderate heuines doe proceede, but wel I wot that within this houre I thought to haue accompanied you to the graue." "Alas good mother" (aunfwered woful Iulietta) "do you not most euidently perceiue and see what iust caufe I haue too forrow and complayne, loofyng at one infante two perfons of the world which wer vnto mee most deare?" "Methinke," aunfweared the good woman, "that it is not seemely for a gentlewoman of your degree to fall into fuch extremetye: for in tyme of tribulation wyfedome should most preuaile. And if the lord Thibault be deade do you thinke to get him agayn by teares? What is he that doth not accufe his ouermutch presumption: woulde you that Rhomeo hadd done that wronge to him, and hys houe, to suffer himfelfe outraged and affayled by one to whom in manhoode and prowesse he is not inferioure? Sufficeth you that Rhomeo is alyue, and his affayres in futche estate whoe in tyme may be called home agayne from banifhmente, for he is a greate lorde, and as you know well allied and faoured of all men, wherefore arme your felfe from henceforth with pacyence: for albeit that Fortune doth estraunge him from you for a tyme, yet sure I am, that hereafter fhee will reftore him vnto you agayne wyth greater ioye and Contentatyon than before. And to the Ende that wee bee better affured in what ftate he is, yf you wyll promyfe me to gyue ouer your heauyneffe, I wyll to Daye knowe of Fryer Laurence whether he is gone." To which request Iulietta agreed, and then the good woman repayred to S. Frauncis, wher fhee founde Fryer Laurence who tolde her that the fame nyghte Rhomeo would not fayle at hys accustomed houre to vifite Iulietta, and there to do hir to vnderftande what he purpofed to doe in tyme to come. This iorney then fared like the voiages of mariners, who after they haue ben toft by greate and troublous tempeft feeyng some Sunne beame pearce the heauens to lyghten the lande, affure themfelues agayne, and thinkinge to haue auoyded fhipwracke, and fodaynlye the feas begynne to fwell, the waues do roare with futch vehemence and noyfe, as if they were fallen agayne into greater danger than before. The assigned hour come, Rhomeo fayled not accordinge to hys promife to bee in his Garden, where he founde his furniture preft to mount



the Chamber of Iulietta, who with displayed armes, began so frayghtly to imbrace hym, as it seemed that the foule would haue abandoned hir body. And they two more than a large quarter of an hour were in futch agony, as they were not able to pronounce one word, and wetting ech others Face fast clofed together, the teares trickeled downe in futch abundance as they seemed to be throughly bathed therein, which Rhomeo perceyuing, thinking to stay those immoderate teares, sayd vnto hir: "Myne owne dearest freend Iulietta, I am not now determined to recite the particulars of the straung happes of frayle and inconstaunte Fortune, who in a moment hoisteth a man vp to the hyghest degree of hir wheele, and by and by, in lesse space than in the twynckeling of an eye, she throweth hym downe agayne so lowe, as more misery is prepared for him in one day, than fauour in one hundred yeares: whych I now proue, and haue experience in my selfe, which haue bene nourished delicately amonges my frends, and maynteyned in futch prosperous state, as you doe little know, (hoping for the full perfection of my felicity) by meanes of our mariage to haue reconciled our Parents, and frends, and to conduct the residue of my lyfe, according to the scope and lot determined by Almighty God: and neuerthelesse all myne enterprises be put backe, and my purposes tourned cleane contrary, in futch wise as from henceforth I must wander lyke a vagabonde through diuers Prouinces, and sequestrate my selfe from my Frends, wythout assured place of myne abode, whych I desire to let you weete, to the intent you may be exhorted in tyme to come, patiently to beare so well myne absence, as that whych it shal please God to appoint." But Iulietta, al affrighted wyth teares and mortal agonies, would not suffer hym to passe any further, but interruptinge his purpose, sayd vnto hym: "Rhomeo, how canst thou be so harde hearted and voyde of all pity, to leaue mee heere lone, besieged with so manye deadlye myseries? There is neyther houre nor Minute, wherein death doth not appeare a thousand tymes before mee, and yet my missehappe is futch, as I can not dye, and therefore doe manyfestlye perceyue, that the same death preferueth my lyfe, of purpose to delight in my gryefes, and tryumphe ouer my euyls. And thou lyke the mynister and tyrante of hir cruelty, doest make

no conscience (for ought that I can see) hauing atchieued the Summe of thy defyres and pleasures on me, to abandon and forsake me: whereby I well perceyue, that all the lawes of Amity are deade and vtterly extinguyshed, forsomutch as he in whom I had greatest hope and confidence, and for whose sake I am become an enemy to my self, doth disdayne and contemne me. No, no Rhomeo, thou must fully resolue thy selfe vppon one of these 11. points, either to see me incontinently thrown down headlong from this high Window after thee: or else to suffer me to accompany thee into that Countrey or Place whither Fortune shall guide thee: for my heart is so much transformed into thine, that so soone as I shall vnderstande of thy departure, presently my lyfe will depart this wofull body: the continuance whereof I doe not desire for any other purpose, but only to delight my selfe in thy presence, to bee pertaker of thy misfortunes: and therefore if euer there lodged any pity in the heart of gentleman, I beseeche the Rhomeo with al humility, that it may now finde place in thee, and that thou wilt vouchsafe to receyue me for thy seruauant, and the faithful companion of thy mishaps: and if thou thinke that thou canst not conueniently receyue me in the estate and habite of a Wyfe, who shall let me to chaunge myne apparell? Shall I be the first that haue vsed like shiftestoescape the tyranny of parentes? Doste thou doubt that my seruice will not bee so good vnto thee as that of Petre thy seruauante? Wyll my loyaltie and fidelity be lesse than his? My beauty which at other tymes thou hast so greatly commended, it is not esteemed of thee? my teares, my loue, and the aunciente pleasures and delights that you haue taken in mee shal they be in obliuyon?" Rhomeo seing hir in these alterations, fearing that worffe inconuenience would chaunce, tooke hir agayne betweene hys armes, and kissing her amorously, sayd: Iulietta, the onely mistresse of my heart, I pray thee in the Name of God, and for the feruent Loue whych thou bearest vnto me, to doe away those vayne cogitations, excepte thou meane to seeke and hazard the destruction of vs both: for if thou perseuer in this purpose, there is no remedye but wee muste both perish: for so soone as thyne absence shalbe knownen, thy Father will make sutch earnest pursute after vs, that we cannot choose but be discried and taken, and in the ende cruelly

punished, I as a theefe and stealer of thee, and thou as a dyfobedyent Daughter to thy Father: and so in stead of pleasaunt and quiet Lyfe, our Dayes shalbe abridged by most shamefull Death. But if thou wylt recline thy self to reason, (the ryght rule of humane Lyfe,) and for the tyme abandon our mutuall delygths, I will take sutch order in the time of my banishment, as within three or foure Months wythoute anydelay, I shalbe reuoked home agayne: but if it fall out otherwyse (as I trust not,) howfoeuer it happen, I wyll come agayne vnto thee, and with the helpe of my Fryendes wyll fetch the from Verona by strong Hand, not in Counterfeit Apparell as a straunger, but lyke my spoufe and perpetuall companion: in the meane tyme quyet your selfe, and be sure that nothing else but death shall deuide and put vs a funder." The reasons of Rhomeo so much preuailed with Iulietta, as shee made hym thys aunswere: "My deare fryend, I wyll doe nothing contrary to your wyll and pleasure: and to what place so euer you repayre, my hearte shall bee your owne, in like forte as you haue giuen yours to be mine: in the meane while I pray you not to faile oftentimes to aduertise me by Frier Laurence, in what state your affaires be, and specially of the place of your abode." Thus these two pore louers passed the Night together, vntil the day began to appeare which did dyuyde them, to their extreame sorrow and gryef. Rhomeo hauinge taken leaue of Iulietta, went to S. Fraunces, and after he hadde aduertified Frier Laurence of his affaires, departed from Verona in the habit of a Marchaunt straunger, and vsed sutch expedytyon, as without hurt he arriued at Mantuona, (accompanied onely wyth Petre his Seruaunt, whome hee hastily sente backe agayne to Verona, to serue his Father) where he tooke a house: and lyuyng in honorable companye, assayed certayne Monthes to put away the gryefe whych so tormented him. But duryng the tyme of his absence, miserable Iulietta could not so cloke hir sorrow, but that through the euyll colour of hir face, hir inwarde passion was discryed: by reason whereof hir Mother, who heard hir oftentimes sighing, and incessantly complayning, coulede not forbear to say vnto hir: "Daughter, if you continue long after thys fort, you wyll hasten the Death of your good Father and me, who loue you so dearely as

our owne lyues: wherefore henceforth moderate your heuineffe, and endeour your felf to be mery: think no more vpon the Death of your cofin Thibault, whome (fith it pleased God to cal away) do you thinke to reuoke wyth Teares, and fo withftande his Almightye will?" But the pore Gentlewoman not able to dyffemble hir grieffe, fayd vnto hir: "Madame, long time it is fithens the laft Teares for Thibault were poured forth, and I beleue that the fountayne is fo well foked and dried vp, as no more will fpryng in that place." The mother which could not tell to what effect thofe Woords were fpoken held hir peace, for feare ſhe ſhould trouble hir Daughter: and certayne Dayes after ſeeing hir to continue in heuineffe and continuall griefs, affaid by al meanes poſſible to know, aſwell of hir, as of other the houſholde Seruauntes, the occaſion of their forrow, but al in vayne: wherwith the pore mother vexed beyonde meaſure, purpoſed to let the Lord Antonio hir Husband to vnderſtand the caſe of hir Daughter: and vpon a day ſeeing him at conuenient leiſure, ſhe fayd vnto him: "My Lord, if you haue marked the countenance of our daughter, and hir kinde of behavior ſithens the Death of the Lord Thibault hir Coſyn, you ſhall perceiue ſo ſtraunge mutation in hir, as it will make you to maruell, for ſhe is not onely contented to forgoe meate, drinke and ſlepe, but ſhe ſpendeth hir tyme in nothinge elſe then in Weeping and Lamentatyon, delighting to kepe hir ſelf folytarye wythin hir Chamber, where ſhe tormenteth hir ſelf ſo outrageouſly as yf wee take not heede, hir Lyfe is to be doubted, and not able to knowe the Oryginall of hir Payne, the more difficulte ſhall be the remedye: for albeit that I haue ſought meanes by all extremity, yet cannot I learne the cauſe of hir ſickneſſe: and where I thought in the beginning, that it proceded vpon the Death of hir Coſin, now I doe manifeſtly perceiue the contrary, ſpecially when ſhe hir ſelf did aſſure me that ſhe had already wept and ſhed the laſt teares for him that ſhe was mynded to doe: and vncertaine wherevpon to reſolue, I do thinke verily that ſhe mourneth for ſome deſpite, to ſee the moſt part of theyr companions married, and ſhe yet vnprouyded, perſuading with hir ſelfe (it may be) that wee hir Parents do not care for hir: wherefore deare Husband, I heartely beſeech you for our reſt and hir quiet, that hereafter ye be carefull

to proude for hir some maryage worthy of our state." Whereunto the Lord Antonio, willingly agreed, saying vnto hir: "Wyfe, I haue many times thought vppon that whereof you speake, notwithstanding sith as yet shee is not attained to the age of XVIII. yeares, I thought to prouide a husband at leysure: neuerthelesse things beinge come to these Termes, and knowing the Virgins chastity is a dangerous Treasure, I wyll be mindfull of the same to your contentation, and shee matched in sutch wyfe, as she shall thynke the tyme hitherto well delayed. In the meane while marke dylygently whyther shee bee in loue wyth any, to the end that we haue not so greate regarde to goodes, or the Nobylitye of the house wherein we meane to bestow hir, as to the Lyfe and Health of our Daughter who is to me so deare as I had rather die a Begger without Landes or goods, than to bestow hir vpon one which shall vse and intreat hir ill." Certayne dayes after that the Lorde Antonio had bruted the maryage of his daughter, many Gentlemen were suters, so wel for the excellency of hir Beauty, as for hir great Rycheffe and reuenue. But aboue all others the alyauce of a young Earle named Paris, the Counte of Lodronne, lyked the Lord Antonio: vnto whom lyberally he gaue his consent, and told his Wyfe the party vppon whom he dyd mean to bestow his Daughter. The mother very ioyful that they had found so honest a Gentleman for theyr Daughter, caused hir secretly to be called before hir, doying hir to vnderstande what things had passed between hir father and the Counte Paris, discourfing vnto hir the beauty and good grace of the yong Counte, the vertues for which he was commended of al men, ioyning therevnto for conclusion the great richeffe and fauor which he had in the goods of fortune, by means whereof shee and hir Fryends should liue in eternal honor: but Iulietta which had rather to haue ben torne in pieces than to agree to that maryage, answered hir mother with a more than accustomed stoutnesse: "Madame, I mutch maruel, and therewithal am astonned that you being a Ladye discrete and honorable, will be so liberal ouer your Daughter as to commit hir to the pleasure and wil of an other, before you do know how hir mind is bent: you may do as it pleafeth you, but of one thing I do wel assure you, that if you bring it to passe, it shal be against my wil: and

touching the regard and estimation of Counte Paris, I shal first lose my Lyfe before he shal haue power to touch any part of my body : which being done, it is you that shal be counted the murderer, by deliueying me into the handes of him, whome I neyther can, wil, or know whiche way to loue : wherefore I praye you to suffer me henceforth thus to lyue, wythout taking any further care of me, for so mutche as my cruell fortune hath otherwyse disposed of me." The dolorous Mother which knewe not what Iudgement to fixe vpon hir daughter's aunswere, lyke a woman confused and besides hir selfe went to seeke the Lord Antonio, vnto whom without conceyling any part of hir Daughter's aunswer, she dyd him vnderstand the whole. The good olde man offended beyond measure, commaunded her incontinently by Force to be brought before him, if of hir own good will she would not come : so soone as she came before hir Father, hir eyes full of teares, fel down at his fete, which she bathed with the luke warme drops that distilled from hir Eyes in great abundance, and thynkyng to open hir mouth to crye him mercy, the sobbes and sighes many tymes stopt hir speach, that shee remained dumbe not able to frame a Woorde. But the olde man nothing moued with his Daughter's Teares, sayd vnto hir in great rage : "Come hither thou vnkynd and dyfobedient Daughter, hast thou forgotten how many tymes thou hast hearde spoken at the Table, of the puiffance and authority our aunicyente Romane Fathers had ouer their chyldren? vnto whom it was not onelye lawfull to sell, gauge, and otherwyse dispose them (in theyr necessity) at their pleasure, but also which is more, they had absolute power ouer their Death and Lyfe? With what yrons, with what torments, with what racks would those good Fathers chasten and correct thee if they were a lieue againe, to see that ingratitude, misbehavior and dyfobedience which thou vsest towards thy Father, who with many prayers and requestes hath prouided one of the greatest Lords of this prouince to be thy husband, a Gentleman of best renoume, and indued wyth all kynde of Vertues, of whom thou and I be vnworthy, both for the notable masse of goods and substance wherewith he is enriched, as also for the Honoure and generositie of the house whereof hee is descended, and yet thou playest the parte of an obstinate and

rebellyous Chyld agaynst thy Father's will. I take the omnipotency of that Almightye God to witnesse, which hath vouchsafed to bryng the forth into this world, that if vpon Tuesday nexte thou failest to prepare thy selfe to be at my Castell of Villafranco, where the Counte Paris purpofeth to meete vs, and there giue thy consent to that whych thy Mother and I haue agreed vpon, I will not onely depriue thee of my worldly goodes, but also will make the espouse and marie a pryson so straight and sharpe, as a thousande times thou shalt curse the Day and tyme wherein thou wast borne: wherefore from henceforth take aduisement what thou doest, for excepte the promise be kept which I haue made to the counte Paris, I will make the feele how greate the iust choler of an offended Father is against a Chylde vnkynde." And without staying for other answer of his Daughter, the olde man departed the Chamber, and lefte hir vpon hir knees. Iulietta knowing the fury of hir Father, fearing to incurre his indignation, or to prouoke his further wrath, retired for the day into hir Chamber, and contriued that whole Nyght more in weeping then slepyng. And the next Morning fayning to goe heare seruice, she went forth with the woman of hir Chamber to the Fryers, where she caused father Laurence to be called vnto hir, and prayed him to heare hir confession: and when she was vpon hir knees before hym, shee began hir Confession wyth Teares, tellinge him the greate mischyeffe that was prepared for hir, by the maryage accorded betweene hir Father and the Counte Paris: and for conclusion sayd vnto him: "Sir, for so much as you know that I cannot by God's law bee married twice, and that I haue but one God, one husband and one faith, I am determined when I am from hence, with these two hands which you see ioyned before you, this Day to ende my sorowful lyfe, that my soule may beare wytnesse in the Heauens, and my bloude vpon the Earth of my faith and loyalty preferred." Then hauyng ended hir talke, shee looked about hir, and seemed by hir wylde countenance, as though she had deuised some sinister purpose: wherefore Frier Laurence, astonned beyonde measure, fearyng least she would haue executed that which she was determyned, sayd vnto hir: "Mistresse Iulietta, I pray you in the name of God by little and little to moderate youre con-

ceiued grieffe, and to content your felf whilst you bee heere, vntill I haue prouided what is best for you to doe, for before you part from hence, I will giue you futch confolation and remedy for your afflictions, as you shall remaine fatisfied and contented." And resolued vpon thys good minde, he speedily wente out of the Churche vnto his chamber, where he began to confider of many things, his conscience beyng moued to hinder the marriage betwene the Counte Paris and hir, knowing by his meanes she had espoused an other, and callinge to remembraunce what a daunge-rous enterprife he had begonne by committing ymself to the mercy of a fymple damofell, and that if shee fayled to bee wyfe and secrete, all theyr doyngs should be discried, he defamed, and Rhomeo hir spouse punished. Hee then after he had well debated vpon infinite numbere of deuises, was in the end ouercome with pity, and determined rather to hazarde his honour, than to suffer the Adultery of the Counte Paris with Iulietta: and being deter- mined herevpon, opened his clofet, and takynge a vyall in his Hande, retourned agayne to Iulietta, whom he found lyke one that was in a Traunce, wayghtinge for newes, eyther of Lyfe or Death: of whome the good olde Father demaunded vpon what Day hir maryage was appoynted. "The firste daye of that ap- poyntment (quod shee) is vpon Wednesdays, whych is the Daye ordeyned for my Consente of Maryage accorded betweene my father and Counte Paris, but the Nuptiall solemnyte is not before the x. day of September." "Wel then" (quod the religious father) "be of good cheere daughter, for our Lord God hath opened a way vnto me both to deliuer you and Rhomeo from the prepared thraldom. I haue knowne your husband from his cradle, and hee hath daily committed vnto me the greatest secretes of hys Conscience, and I haue so dearely loued him agayne, as if hee had ben mine owne sonne: wherefore my heart can not abide that anye man should do him wrong in that specially wherein my Counsell may stande him in stede. And forsomutch as you are his wyfe, I ought lykewyse to loue you, and seke meanes to delyuer you from the martyrdome and Anguish wherewith I see your heart besieged: vnderstande then (good Daughter) of a secrete which I purpose to manifest vnto you, and take heede aboue all



things that you declare it to no liuing creature, for therein confisteth your life and Death. Ye be not ignorant by the common report of the Cityzens of this City, and by the fame published of me, that I haue trauailed through all the Prouinces of the habyttable Earthe, wherby duryng the continuall tyme of xx. yeres, I haue foughte no rest for my wearied body, but rather haue many times protruded the same to the mercy of brute beafts in the Wyldernesse, and many times also to the mercieffe Waues of the Seas, and to the pity of common Pirates together with a thousand other Daungers and shipwracks vppon Sea and Land. So it is good Daughter that all my wandring Voyages haue not bene altogether vnprofitable. For besides the incredible contentation receiued ordinarily in mind, I haue gathered some particular fruyct, whereof by the grace of God you shall shortly feele some experience. I haue proued the secrete properties of Stones, of Plants, Metals, and other things hydden within the Bowels of the Earth, wherewith I am able to helpe my selfe againste the common Lawe of Men, when necessity doth ferue: specially in thynges wherein I know mine eternal God to be least offended. For as thou knowest I beyng approached as it were, euen to the Brymme of my Graue, and that the Tyme draweth neare for yeldyng of myne Accompte before the Audytor of all Audytors, I oughte therefore to haue some deepe knowledge and apprehension of God's iudgement more than I had when the heat of inconsidered youth did boyle within my lusty body. Know you therefore good daughter, that with those graces, and fauours which the heauens prodigally haue bestowed vpon me, I haue learned and proued of long time the composition of a certayne Paaste, which I make of diuers soporiferous simples, which beaten afterwards to Pouder, and dronke wyth a quantity of Water, within a quarter of an houre after, bringeth the receiuer into futch a sleepe, and burieth so deeply the senses and other sprites of life, that the cunningest Phisitian will iudge the party dead: and besides that it hath a more marueillous effect, for the person which vseth the same feeleth no kinde of grieffe, and according to the quantity of the dough, the pacient remayneth in a sweete sleepe, but when the operation is wrought and done, hee returneth into his first estate. Now then Iulietta receiue myne

instruction, put of all Feminine affection by taking vpon you a manly stomacke for by the only courage of your minde consisteth the hap or mishap of your affayres. Beholde here I geue you a Vyale which you shall keepe as your owne propre heart, and the night before your mariage, or in the morning before day, you shall fil the same vp with water, and drink so mutch as is contayned therein. And then you shall feele a certayne kynde of pleasaunt sleepe, which incroching by litle and litle all the partes of your body, wil constrayne them in sutch wyse, as vn moueable they shall remayne: and by not doing their accustomed dueties, shall loofe their naturall feelinges, and you abide in sutch extasie the space of 40 houres at the least, without any beating of poulse or other perceptible motion, which shall so astonne them that come to see you, as they will iudge you to be deade, and according to the custome of our Citty, you shall be caried to the Churchyarde hard by our Church, where you shall be intoumbed in the common monument of the Capellets your auncestors, and in the meane tyme we will send word to lord Rhomeo by a speciall messanger of the effect of our deuce, who now abideth at Mantua. And the night following I am sure he will not fayle to be heere, then he and I together will open the graue, and lift vp your body, and after the operation of the Pouder is past, hee shall conuey you secretly to Mantua, vnknown to all your Parents and frends. Afterwards (it may be) Tyme, the mother of Truth, shall cause concord betwene the offended City of Verona, and Rhomeo. At which time your common cause may be made open to the general contentacion of all your frends." The words of the good father ended, new ioy surprisid the heart of Iulietta, who was so attentiuie to his talke as she forgat no one poynct of hir lesson. Then she sayd vnto him: "Father, doubt not at all that my heart shall fayle in performauce of your commaundement: for were it the strongest Poyson, or most pestiferous Venome, rather would I thrust it into my body, than to consent to fall in the hands of him, whom I vtterly mislike: with a right strong reason then may I fortifie my selfe, and offer my body to any kinde of mortall daunger to approach and draw neare to him, vpon whom wholly dependeth my Life and all the solace I haue in this World." "Go your wayes then my

X

daughter" (quod the Frier) "the mighty hand of God keepe you, and hys furpassing power defende you, and confirme that will and good mynde of yours, for the accomplishment of this worke." Iulietta departed from frier Laurence, and returned home to hir father's Pallace about 11. of the clock, where she found hir mother at the Gate attending for hir: And in good deuotion demaunded if shee continued still in hir former follies? But Iulietta with more glad-some cheere than she was wont to vse, not suffering hir mother to aske agayne, sayd vnto hir: "Madame I come from S. Frauncis Church, where I haue taried longer peradventure than my duety requireth: how be it not without fruiçt and great rest to my afflicted conscience, by reason of the godly persuasions of our ghostly Father Frier Laurence, vnto whom I haue made a large declaration of my life. And chiefly haue communicated vnto him in confession, that which hath past betwene my Lord my father and you, vpon the mariage of Countee Paris and me. But the good man hath reconciled me by his holy words, and commendable exhortations, that where I had minde neuer to mary, now I am well disposed to obey your pleasure and commaundement. Wherefore, madame, I beseech you to recouer the fauor and good wyl of my father, aske pardon in my behalfe, and say vnto him (if it please you) that by obeying his Fatherly request, I am ready to meete the Countee Paris at Villafranco, and there in your presence to accept him for my Lorde and husband: In assuraunce whereof, by your pacience, I meane to repayre into my Closet, to make choise of my most pretious Iewels, that I being richly adorned, and decked, may appeare before him more agreeable to his mynde, and pleasure. The good mother rapt with exceeding great ioy, was not able to aunswere a word, but rather made speede to seeke out hir husband the Lord Antonio, vnto whom she reported the good will of hir daughter, and how by meanes of Frier Laurence hir minde was chaunged. Whereof the good olde man maruellous ioyfull, prayed God in heart, saying: "Wife this is not the firste good turne which we haue receiued of that holy man, vnto whom euery Cittizen of this Common wealth is dearely bounde. I would to God that I had redeemed 20 of his yeares with the third parte of my goods, so grieuous is to me his extreme old age."

The selfe same houre the Lord Antonio went to seeke the Countee Paris, whom hee thought to perswade to goe to Villafranco. But the countee told him agayne, that the charge would be to great, and that better it were to referue that cost to the mariage day, for the better celebration of the same. Notwithstanding if it were his pleasure, he would himselfe goe visite Iulietta: and so they went together. The Mother aduertised of his comming, caused hir daughter to make hir selfe ready, and to spare no costly Iewels for adorning of hir beauty agaynst the Countee's comming, which she bestowed so well for garnishing of hir Personage, that before the Countee parted from the house, shee had so stolne away his heart, as he liued not from that time forth, but vpon meditation of hir beauty, and slacked no time for acceleration of the mariage day, ceasing not to be importunate vpon father and mother for th'ende and consummation thereof. And thus with ioy inough passed forth this day and many others vntil the day before the mariage, against which time the mother of Iulietta did so well prouide, that there wanted nothing to set forth the magnificence and nobility of their house. Villafranco whereof we haue made mention, was a place of pleasure, where the Lord Antonio was wont many tymes to recreate himselfe a mile or two from Verona, there the dynner was prepared, for so much as the ordinary solemnity of necessity muste be done at Verona. Iulietta perceyuing hir time to approche dysembled the matter so well as shee coulde: and when tyme forced hir to retire to hir Chamber, hir Woman would haue waited vpon hir, and haue lyen in hir Chambre, as hir custome was: but Iulietta sayd vnto hir: " Good and faithfull mother, you know that to morrow is my maryage Day, and for that I would spend the most parte of the Nyght in prayer, I pray you for this time to let me alone, and to morrow in the Mornyng about vi. of the clocke come to me agayne to helpe make mee readie." The good olde woman willing to follow hir minde, suffred hir alone, and doubted nothyng of that which she did meane to do. Iulietta beinge within hir Chambre hauing an eawer ful of Water standing vpon the Table filled the viole which the Frier gaue her: and after she had made the mixture, she set it by hir bed side, and went to Bed. And being layde, new thoughtes began to assaile hir, with a con-

ceipt of grieuous Death, which brought hir into futch cafe as ſhe could not tell what to doe, but playning inceſſantly ſayd: “Am not I the moſt vnhappy and deſperat creature, that euer was borne of Woman? For mee there is nothyng left in this wretched worlde but miſhap, miſery, and mortall woe, my diſtreſſe hath brought me to futch extremity, as to ſaue mine honor and conſcience, I am forced to deuoure the drynke whereof I know not the vertue: but what know I (ſayd ſhe) whether the Operatyon of thys Pouder will be to foone or to late, or not correſpondent to the due tyme, and that my fault being diſcouered, I ſhall remayne a Fable to the People? What know I moreouer, if the Serpents and other venomous and crawling Wormes, whych commonly frequent the Graues and pittes of the Earth wyll hurt me, thynkyng that I am deade. But howe ſhall I indure the ſtynche of ſo many carions and Bones of myne aunceſtors whych reſt in the Graue, yf by fortune I do awake before Rhomeo and Fryer Laurence doe come to help mee?” And as ſhee was thus plunged in the deepe contemplatyon of thynges, ſhe thought that ſhe ſaw a certayn viſion or fanſie of hir Couſin Thibault, in the very ſame fort as ſhee ſawe him wounded and imbrued wyth Bloud, and muſing how that ſhe muſt be buried quick amongs ſo many dead Carcafes and deadly naked bones, hir tender and delycate body began to ſhake and tremble, and hir yelow lockes to ſtare for feare, in futch wyſe as fryghtned with terroure, a cold ſweate beganne to pierce hir heart and bedewe the reſte of al hir membres, in futch wiſe as ſhe thought that an hundred thouſand Deathes did ſtande about hir, haling hir on euery ſide, and plucking hir in pieces, and feelyng that hir forces diminyſhed by lyttle and lyttle, fearing that through to great debilyty ſhe was not able to do hir enterpryſe, like a furious and inſenſate Woman, with out further care, gulped vp the Water wythin the Voyal, then croſſing hir armes vpon hir ſtomacke, ſhe loſt at that instante all the powers of hir Body, reſtyng in a Traunce. And when the morning lyght began to thruſt his head out of his Oryent, hir Chaumber Woman which had lockte hir in with the Key, did open the doore, and thynkyng to awake hir, called hir many tymes, and ſayd vnto hir: “Miſtreſſe, you ſleepe to long, the Counte Paris will come to raiſe you.” The poore olde

Woman spake vnto the wall, and fange a song vnto the deafe. For if all the horrible and tempeftuous foundes of the world had bene cannoned forth out of the greateft bombardes and founded through hir delycate Eares, hir fpyrites of Lyfe were fo fast bounde and ftopt, as ſhe by no meanes coulde awake, wherewith the pore olde Woman amazed, began to ſhake hir by the armes and Handes, whych ſhe found fo colde as marble ſtone. Then puttyng Hande vnto hir Mouthe, ſodainely perceyued that ſhe was dead, for ſhee perceyued no breath in hir. Wherefore lyke a Woman out of hir Wyttes, ſhee ranne to tell hir mother, who fo madde as a Tigre, berefte of hir Faunes hied hir ſelfe into hir Daughter's Chamber, and in that pitiful ſtate beholdynge hir Daughter, thinkyng hir to be deade, cried out: "Ah cruell Death, which haſt ended all my ioye and Blyſſe, vſe the laſt ſcourge of thy wrathfull ire agaynſt me, leaſt by ſufferyng mee to liue the reſt of my woefull Dayes, my Torment doe increaſe." Then ſhe began to fetch ſutch ſtrayning ſighes, as hir heart did ſeeme to cleaue in pieces. And as hir cries began to encreaſe, behold the Father, the County Paris, and a great troupe of Gentlemen and Ladies, which were come to honour the feaſte, hearing no ſooner tell of that which chaunced, were ſtroke into ſutch forrowfull dumpes as he which had beheld their Faces would eaſily haue iudged that the ſame had ben a day of ire and pity, ſpecially the Lord Antonio, whoſe heart was frapped with ſutch ſurpaſſing woe, as neither teare nor word could iſſue forth, and knowing not what to doe, ſtraight way ſent to ſeeke the moſt expert Phifitians of the towne, who after they had inquired of the life paſt of Iulietta, deemed by common reporte, that melancoly was the cauſe of that ſodayne death, and then their ſorows began to renue a freſh. And if euer day was Lamentable, Piteous, Vnhappy, and Fatall, truly it was that wherein Iulietta hir death was publiſhed in Verona: for ſhee was fo bewayled of great and ſmall, that by the common playnts, the Common wealth ſeemed to be in daunger, and not without cauſe: for beſides hir naturall beauty (accompanied with many vertues wherewith nature had enriched hir) ſhe was elſe fo humble, wiſe, and debonaire, as for that humility and curteſie ſhe had ſtollen away the hearts of euery wight, and there was none but did lament hir Miſfortune. And whileſt theſe thinges

were in this lamented state, Frier Laurence with diligence dispatched a Frier of his Couent, named Frier Anselme, whom he trusted as himselfe, and deliuered him a Letter written with hys owne hande, commaunding him expreffely not to giue the same to any other but to Rhomeo, wherein was conteyned the chaunce which had passed betwene him and Iulietta, specially the vertue of the Pouder, and commaunded him the nexte ensuinge Nighte to speede himselfe to Verona, for that the operation of the Pouder that time would take ende, and that he should cary wyth him backe agayne to Mantua his beloued Iulietta, in dissembled apparell, vntill Fortune had otherwise provided for them. The frier made futch hast as (too late) hee arriued at Mantua, within a while after. And bicause the maner of Italy is, that the Frier traauyling abroad ought to take a companion of his couent to doe his affaires wythin the City, the Fryer went into his couent, and for that he was within, it was not lawfull for him to come oute againe that Day, bicause that certain dayes before, one relygious of that couent as it was sayd, dyd dye of the plague: wherefore the Magistrates appoynted for the health and visitation of the sick, commaunded the Warden of the Houe that no Friers should wander abroad the city, or talke with any Citizen, vntill they were licensed by the officers in that behalfe appoynted, which was the cause of the great mishap which you shal heare hereafter. The Friar being in this perplexitye, not able to goe forth, and not knowing what was contayned in the Letter, deferred hys Journey for that Day. Whilst things were in thys plyght, preparation was made at Verona, to doe the obsequies of Iulietta. There is a custome also (which is common in Italy,) to laye all the best of one lignage and Familie in one Tombe, wherevpon Iulietta was intoumbed, in the ordinary Graue of the Capelletes, in a Churcheyarde, hard by the Church of the Fryers, where also the Lord Thibault was interred, whose Obsequies honorably done, euery man returned: whereunto Pietro, the seruaunt of Rhomeo, gaue hys assystance: for as we haue before declared, hys mayster sente hym backe agayne from Mantua to Verona, to do his father seruice, and to aduertise him of that which should chaunce in his absence there: who seeyng the Body of Iulietta, inclosed in Toumbe, thinkyng

with the reſte that ſhee had bene dead in deede, incontinently tooke poſte horſe, and with dyligence rode to Mantua, where he founde his Mayſter in his wonted houſe, to whom he ſayde, wyth hys Eyes full of Teares: “Syr, there is chaunced vnto you ſo ſtraunge a matter as if ſo be you do not arme your ſelfe with Conſtancye, I am afrayed that I ſhall be the cruell minyſter of your Death: be it known vnto you fir, that yeſterday morning my miſtreſſe Iulietta left hir Lyfe in thys Worlde to ſeeke reſt in an other: and wyth theſe Eyes I ſaw her buryed in the Churchyarde of S. Francis.” At the founde of whych heauye meſſage, Rhomeo begann woefullye to Lamente, as though hys ſpyrites gryeued wyth the Tormente of his Paſſion at that inſtant would haue abandoned his Bodye. But ſtronge Loue which woulde not permytte him to faynt vntyl the extremity, framed a thoughte in hys fantaſie, that if it were poſſyble for him to dye beſides hir his Death ſhould be more gloryous, and ſhee (as he thought) better contented: by reaſon whereof, after he had waſhed his face for feare to diſcouer his ſorrowe, hee wente out of his Chamber, and commaunded hys man to tarry behynd him, that he myght walke through out all the Corners of the Citye, to finde propre remedye (if it were poſſyble) for hys gryefe. And amonges others, beholdyng an Apotycarye’s ſhop of lyttle furnytur and leſſe ſtore of Boxes and other thinges requiſite for that ſcyence, thought that the verye pouerty of the mayſter Apothecarye would make hym wyllingle yeld to that which he pretended to demaunde: and after he had taken hym aſide, ſecretly ſayde vnto him: “Syr, if you be the Mayſter of the Houſe, as I thynk you be, beholde here Fifty Ducates, whych I gyue you to the intent you delyuer me ſome ſtrong and vyolente Poyſon that within a quarter of an houre is able to procure Death vnto hym that ſhall vſe it.” The couetous Apothecarye entyfed by gayne, agreed to his requeſt, and faynyng to gyue hym ſome other medycine before the People’s Face, he ſpeedily made ready a ſtrong and cruell Poyſon, afterwarde he ſayd vnto him ſoftly: “Syr, I gyue you more than is needefull, for the one halfe is able to deſtroy the ſtrongeſt manne of the world:” who after he hadde receyued the poyſon, retourned home, where he commaunded his man to departe with diligence to Verona, and that he ſhould make



prouifon of candels, a tynder Boxe, and other Infrumentes meete  
 for the opening of the graue of Iulietta, and that about all things  
 hee fhoulde not fayle to attende his commynge befides the  
 Churchyarde of S. Frauncis, and vppon Payne of Life to keepe hys  
 intente in filence. Which Pietro obeied in order as hys maifter  
 had requyred, and made therin futch expedityon, as he arriued in  
 good time to Verona, taking order for al things that wer com-  
 maunded him. Rhomeo in the meane while being folycyted  
 wyth mortall thoughtes caufed incke and paper to be broughte  
 vnto hym, and in few words put in wryting all the difcourfe of his  
 loue, the mariage of him and Iulietta, the meane obserued for con-  
 fummatation of the fame, the helpe that he had of Frier Laurence,  
 the buying of his Poyfon, and laft of all his death. Afterwardes  
 hauing finished his heauy tragedy, hee closed the letters, and  
 fealed the fame with his feale, and directed the Superfcription  
 thereof to hys Father: and puttyng the letters into his purffe, he  
 mounted on horfebacke, and vfed futch dylygence, as he arriued  
 vppon darke Nyght at the Citye of Verona, before the gates were  
 fhut, where he founde his feruaunte taryng for him with a Lan-  
 terne and infrumentes as is before fayd, meete for the opening of  
 the graue, vnto whome hee faid: "Pietro, helpe mee to open this  
 Tombe, and fo foone as it is open I commaunde thee vppon payne  
 of thy life, not to come neere mee, nor to ftay me from the thing  
 I purpofe to doe. Beholde, there is a letter which thou fhalt pre-  
 fent to morrow in the mornyng to my Father at his vprying,  
 which peradventure fhall pleafe him better than thou thinkeft."  
 Pietro, not able to imagine what was his maifter's intent, ftode  
 fomewhat aloofe to beholde his maifter's geftes and Countenance.  
 And when they had opened the Vaulte, Rhomeo defcended downe  
 two fteppes, holdyng the candel in his hand and began to behold  
 wyth pityfull Eye, the body of hir, which was the organ of his  
 Eyes, and kyft it tenderly, holdyng it harde between his armes,  
 and not able to fatiffie him felfe with hir fight, put hys fearefull  
 handes vppon the colde ftomacke of Iulietta. And after he had  
 touched hir in many places, and not able to feele anye certayne  
 Iudgemente of Lyfe, he drewe the Poyfon out of hys boxe, and  
 fwallowyng downe a great quantytye of the fame, cryed out:

*of his Eye, and washt the fame with the teares of his Eyes. ed. 1567  
 then carelesly dropped in 1575.*

“O Iulietta, of whome the Worlde was vnworthye, what Death is it poffyble my Hearte coulde choofe oute more agreeable than that whych yt suffereth harde by thee? what Graue more Gloryous, than to bee buried in thy Toumbe? what more woorthy or excellent Epytaphe can bee vowed for Memorye, than the mutuall and pytyfull Sacryfice of our lyues?” And thinkinge to renew his forrowe, his hearte began to frette through the vyolence of the Poyfon, whiche by lyttle and lyttle affailed the fame, and looking about hym, espied the Bodye of the Lorde Thibault, lying nexte vnto Iulietta, whych as yet was not al together putrified, and fpeakyng to the bodye as though it hadde bene alyue, fayde: “In what place fo euer thou arte (O Cousyn Thibault) I moft heartely do crye the mercye for the offence whych I haue done by depryuing of thy Lyfe: and yf thy Ghofte doe wyfhe and crye out for Vengeaunce vppon mee, what greater or more cruell fatisfaction canfte thou defyre to haue, or henceforth hope for, than to fee him whych murdered thee, to bee empoyfoned with his owne handes, and buried by thy fide?” Then endyng hys talke, felyng by lyttle and lyttle that his lyfe began to fayle, falling prostrate vppon his knees, wyth feeble voyce hee foftely fayd: “O my Lord God, which to redeeme me didest difcend from the bofom of thy Father, and tookeft humane flefhe in the Wombe of the VyrGINE, I acknowledge and confeffe, that this body of myne is nothing elfe but Earth and Duft.” Then feazed vppon wyth desperate forrow, he fell downe vppon the Body of Iulietta with futch vehemence, as the hearte faint and attenuated with too great torments, not able to beare fo hard a vyolence, was abandoned of all his fenfe and Naturall powers, in futch sorte as the fiege of hys foule fayled him at that instant, and his members stretched forthe, remayned ftiffe and colde. Fryer Laurence whych knew the certayne tyme of the pouder’s operation, maruelled that he had no anfwere of the Letter which he fent to Rhomeo by his fellowe Fryer Anfelme, departed from S. Frauncis and with Instruments for the purpofe, determined to open the Graue to let in aire to Iulietta, whych was ready to wake: and approchyng the place, hee espied a lyght within, which made him afraide vntyll that Pietro whych was hard by, had certyfyed hym

that Rhomeo was with in, and had not ceased there to Lamente and Complayne the space of halfe an Houre: and when they two were entred the Graue and finding Rhomeo without Lyfe, made futch sorrowe as they can well conceyue whych Loue their deare Fryende wyth lyke perfection. And as they were making their complaints, Iulietta rising out of hir traunce, and beholding light within the Toumbe, vncertayne wheather it were a dreame or fantasie that appeared before his eyes, comming agayne to hir selfe, knew Frier Laurence, vnto whom she said: "Father, I pray thee in the name of God to perfourme thy promise, for I am almost deade." And then frier Laurence concealing nothing from hir, (bycause he feared to be taken through his too long abode in that place) faythfully rehearsed vnto hir, how he had sent frier Anselme to Rhomeo at Mantua, from whom as yet hee had receiued no aunswere. Notwithstanding he found Rhomeo dead in the graue, whose body he poynted vnto, lyinge hard by hir, praying hir sith it was so, patiently to beare that sodayne misfortune, and that if it pleased hir, he would conuey hir into some monastery of women where she might in time moderate hir sorrow, and giue rest vnto hir minde. Iulietta had no sooner cast eye vpon the deade corps of Rhomeo, but began to breake the fountayne pipes of gushing teares, which ran forth in futch abundance, as not able to support the furor of hir grieffe, she breathed without ceasing vpon his mouth, and then throwen hir selfe vpon his body, and embracing it very hard, seemed that by force of sighes and sobs, she would haue reuiued, and brought him againe to life, and after she had kissed and rekiſſed hym a million of times, she cried out: "Ah the sweete reste of my cares, and the onely port of all my pleasures and pastimes, hadst thou so sure a hearte to choose thy Churchyarde in this place betwene the armes of thy perfect Louer, and to ende the course of thy life for my sake in the floure of thy Youth when lyfe to thee should have bene most deare and delectable? how had this tender body power to resist the furious Coumbat of death, very death it selfe here present? how coulde thy tender and delicate youth willingly permit that thou shouldest approach into this filthy and infected place, where from henceforth thou shalt be the pasture of Worms vnworthy of

thee? Alas, alas, by what meanes shall I now renew my playnts, which time and long pacience ought to haue buried and clearly quenched? Ah I, miserable and Caitife wretch, thinking to finde remedy for my griefs, haue sharpned the Knife that hath giuen me this cruell blow, whereof I receiue the cause of mortall wound. Ah, happy and fortunate graue which shalt serue in world to come for witnesse of the most perfect aliaunce that euer was betwene two most infortunate louers, receyue now the last sobbing sighes, and intertayment of the most cruell of all the cruell subiects of ire and death." And as she thought to continue hir complainys, Pietro aduertifed Frier Laurence that he heard a noyse besides the citadell, wherewyth being afrayd, they speedily departed, fearing to be taken: and then Iulietta seeing hir selfe alone, and in full Liberty, tooke agayne Rhomeo betwene hir armes, kissing him with futch affection, as she seemed to be more attaynted with loue than death, and drawing out the Dagger which Rhomeo ware by his side, she pricked hir selfe with many blowes against the heart, sayinge with feeble and pitiful voice: "Ah death the end of sorrow, and beginning of felicity, thou art most hartely welcome: feare not at this time to sharpen thy dart: giue no longer delay of life, for feare that my sprite trauayle not to finde Rhomeo's ghost amongs futch number of carion corpses: and thou my deare Lord and loyall husband Rhomeo, if there rest in thee any knowledge, receyue hir whom thou hast so faythfully loued, the onely cause of thy violent death, which frankly offreth vp hir soule that none but thou shalt ioy the loue whereof thou hast made so lawfull conquest, and that our soules passing from this light, may eternally liue together in the place of euerlasting ioy." And when she had ended those wordes shee yelded vp hir ghost. While these things thus were done, the garde and watch of the City by chance passed by, and seeing light within the graue, suspected straight that there were some Necromancers which had opened the Toumbe to abuse the deade bodies for ayde of their arte: and desirous to knowe what it ment, went downe into the vault, where they found Rhomeo and Iulietta, with their armes imbracing ech other's neck, as though there had bene some token of lyfe. And after they had well viewed them at leysure, they perceyued in what case they were:

and then all amazed they fought for the theeues which (as they thought) had done the murther, and in the ende founde the good father Fryer Laurence, and Pietro the seruante of deade Rhomeo (whych had hid themfelues under a stall) whom they caryed to Pryfon, and aduerted the Lord of Escala, and the magistrates of Verona of that horrible murder, which by and by was published throughout the City. Then flocked together al the Citizens, women and children leauyng their houfes, to loke vppon that pityful fighte, and to the Ende that in presence of the whole Cytie, the murder should be knowne, the Magistrates ordayned that the two deade Bodies should be erected vppon a stage to the view and fight of the whole World, in futch forte and manner as they were found withyn the Graue, and that Pietro and frier Laurence should publikely bee examyned, that afterwardes there myght be no murmure or other pretended cause of ignoraunce. And thys good olde Frier beyng vppon the Scaffold, hauinge a whyte Bearde all wet and bathed with Teares, the Iudges commaunded him to declare vnto them who were the Authors of that Murder, sith at vntimely houre hee was apprehended with certayne Irons besides the Graue. Fryer Laurence, a rounde and franke Man of talke, nothyng moued with that accusation, answered them with stoute and bolde voyce: "My maisters, there is none of you all (if you haue respect vnto my forepassed Life, and to my aged Yeres, and therewithall haue consideration of this heauy spectacle, whereunto vnhappy fortune hathe presently brought me) but doeth greatly maruell of so sodaine mutation and change vnlooked for so much as these three score and Ten or twelue Yeares sithens I came into this Worlde, and began to proue the vanities thereof, I was neuer suspected, touched, or found guilty of any crime which was able to make me blushe, or hide my face, although (before God) I doe confesse my self to be the greatest and most abhominable finner of al the redeemed flocke of Christ. So it is notwithstanding, that sith I am prest and ready to render mine accompte, and that Death, the Graue and wormes do dailye summon this wretched corps of myne to appeare before the Iustyce seate of God, still wayghtyng and attending to be carried to my hoped graue, this is the houre I say, as you likewise may thinke wherein I am

fallen to the greatest damage and preiudice of my Lyfe and honest porte, and that which hath ingendred thys synnyfter opynyon of mee, may peraduenture bee these greate Teares which in abundaunce tryckle downe my Face as though the holy scriptures do not witnesse, that Iesus Christ moued with humayne pittie, and compaffion, did weepe, and poure forth teares, and that many times teares be the faythfull messengers of a man's innocency. Or else the most likely euidence, and presumption, is the suspected hour, which (as the magistrate doth say) doth make mee culpable of the murder, as though all houres were not indifferently made equall by God their Creator, who in his owne person declareth vnto vs that there be twelue houres in the Day, shewing thereby that there is no exception of houres nor of minutes, but that one may doe eyther good or ill at all times indifferently, as the party is guided or forsaken by the sprite of God: touching the Irons which were founde about me, needefull it is not now to let you vnderstand for what vse Iron was first made, and that of it selfe it is not able to increase in man eyther good or euill, if not by the mischieuous minde of hym which doth abuse it. Thus much I haue thought good to tell you, to the intent that neyther teares nor Iron, ne yet suspected houre, are able to make me guilty of the murder, or make me otherwyse than I am, but only the witnesse of mine owne conscience, which alone if I were guilty should be the accuser, the witnesse, and the hangman, whych, by reason of mine age and the reputation I haue had amonges you, and the little time that I haue to liue in this World shoulde more torment me within, than all the mortall paynes that could be deuised: but (thankes be to myne eternall God) I feele no worme that gnaweth, nor any remorse that pricketh me touching that fact, for which I see you all troubled and amazed: and to set your harts at rest, and to remoue the doubts which hereafter may torment your consciences, I sweare vnto you by all the heauenly parts wherein I hope to be, that forthwith I will disclose from first to last the entire discourse of this pitifull tragedy, whych peraduenture shall driue you into no lesse wondre and amaze, than those two poore passionate Louers were strong and pacient, to expone themselues to the mercy of death, for the feruent and indiffoluble loue betwene

then." Then the Fatherly Frier began to repeate the beginning of the loue betwene Iulietta, and Rhomeo, which by certayne space of time confirmed, was profecuted by wordes at the first, then by mutual promise of mariage, vnknown to the world. And as within few dayes after, the two Louers feelinge themselues sharned and incited with stronger onfet, repaired vnto him vnder colour of confession, protesting by othe that they were both married, and that if he woulde not solempnize that mariage in the face of the Church, they should be constraigned to offend God to liue in difordred lust: in consideration whereof, and specially feeing their alliaunce to be good, and comfortable in dignity, richeffe and Nobility on both sides, hoping by that meanes perchance to reconcile the Montesches, and Capellets, and that by doing sutch an acceptable worke to God, he gaue them the Churches blessing in a certayne Chappel of the friers church whereof the night following they did consummate the mariage fruiçts in the Pallace of the Capellets. For testimony of which copulation, the woman of Iuliettae's Chamber was able to depose: Adding moreouer, the murder of Thibault, which was Cousin to Iulietta: by reason whereof the banishment of Rhomeo did followe, and howe in the absence of the sayd Rhomeo, the mariage being kept secreet betwene them, a new Matrimony was intreated wyth the Countee Paris, which misliked by Iulietta, she fell prostrate at his feete in a Chappell of S. Frauncis church, with full determination to haue killed hirself with hir owne hands, if he gaue hir not counsell how she should auoyde the mariage agreed betwene hir father and the Countee Paris. For conclusion, he sayd, that although he was resolued by reason of his age, and nearenesse of death to abhorre all secreete Sciences, wherein in his younger yeares he had delight, notwithstanding, pressed with importunity, and moued with pittie, fearing least Iulietta should do some cruelty agaynst hirselfe, he strayned his conscience, and chose rather with some little fault to grieue his minde, than to suffer the young gentlewoman to destroy hir body, and hazarde the daunger of hir foule: and therefore he opened some part of his auncient cunning, and gaue her a certayne Pouder to make hir sleepe, by meanes whereof she was thought to be deade. Then he

tolde them how he had sent Frier Anselme to carry letters to Rhomeo of their enterprize, whereof hitherto he had no answer. Then briefly he concluded how he found Rhomeo dead within the graue, who as it is most likely did impoyson himselfe, or was otherwise smothered or suffocated with sorrow by findinge Iulietta in that state, thinking shee had bene dead. Then he tolde them how Iulietta did kill herselfe with the Dagger of Rhomeo to beare him company after his death, and how it was impossible for them to save hir for the noyse of the watch which forced them to flee from thence. And for more ample approbation of his saying, he humbly besought the Lord of Verona and the Magistrats to send to Mantua for Frier Anselme to know the cause of his slack returne, that the content of the letter sent to Rhomeo might be seene: to examine the Woman of the Chamber of Iulietta, and Pietro the seruant of Rhomeo, who not attending for further request, sayd vnto them: "My Lordes, when Rhomeo entred the graue, he gaue me this Pacquet, written as I suppose with his owne hand, who gaue me expresse commaundement to deliuer it to his father." The pacquet opened, they found the whole effect of this story, specially the Apothecarie's name, which told him the Poyson, the price, and the cause wherefore he used it, and all appeared to be so cleare and euident, as there rested nothing for further verification of the same, but their presence at the doing of the particulars thereof, for the whole was so well declared in order, as they were out of doubt that the same was true: and then the Lord Bartholomew of Escala, after he had debated with the Magistrats of these euents, decreed that the Woman of Iulietta hir chamber should bee banished, because shee did conceale that priuy mariage from the Father of Rhomeo, which if it had bene knowne in tyme, had bred to the whole Citty an vniuersall benefit. Pietro because he obeyed hys mayster's commaundement, and kept close hys lawfull secrets, according to the well conditioned nature of a trusty seruant, was set at liberty. The Poticary taken, racked, and founde guilty, was hanged. The good olde man Frier Laurence, as well for respect of his auncient seruice which he had done to the common wealth of Verona, as also for his vertuous life (for the which hee was specially recommended) was let goe in peace, with-



out any note of Infamy. Notwithstanding by reason of his age, he voluntarily gaue ouer the World, and closed himselfe in an Hermitage, two miles from Verona, where he liued 5 or 6 yeares, and spent hys tyme in continuall prayer, vntil he was called out of this transitory worlde, into the blifful state of euerlasting ioy. And for the compassion of so straunge an infortune, the Montesches, and Capellets poured forth such abundaunce of teares, as with the same they did euacuate their auncient grudge and choler, whereby they were then reconciled: and they which coulde not bee brought to attonement by any wisedome or humayne councell, were in the ende vanquished and made friends by pity: and to immortalize the memory of so intier and perfect amity, the Lord of Verona ordayned, that the two bodies of those miraculous Louers should be fast intoumbed in the graue where they ended their lyues, in which place was erected a high marble Piller, honoured with an infinite number of excellent Epytaphes, which to this day be apparaunt, with such noble memory, as amongst all the rare excellencies, wherewith that City is furnished, there is none more Famous than the Monument of Rhomeo and Iulietta.

## THE TWENTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

*Two gentlemen of Venice were honourably deceived of their Wyues, whose notable practises, and secret conference for atchieuinge their desire, occuſioned diuers accidentes, and ingendred double benefit: wherein alſo is recited an eloquent oration, made by one of them, pronounced before the Duke and ſtate of that Cittie: with other chaunces and actes concerninge the ſame.*

HEERE haue I thought good to ſummon 2 Gentlewomen of Venice to appeare in Place, and to mount on Stage amongs other Italian Dames to ſhew cauſe of their bolde incountrye agaynſt the Folly of their two Huſbands, that vncharitably without reſpect of neyghbourhoode, went about to aſſaile the honeſty of eyther's wyfe, and weening they had enioyed others felicity, by the womens prudence, foreſight and ware gouernment, were both deceived, and yet attained the chiefeſt benefit that marriage ſtate doth looke for: ſo that if ſearch bee made amonges antiquities, it is to be doubted wheather greater chaſtity, and better pollicy could be founde for accompliſhment of an intended purpoſe. Many deedes haue ben done by women for fauegard of their Huſbandes lyues, as that of the Minyæ, a ſort of Women whoſe huſbandes were imprifoned at Lacedæmon, and for treaſon condemned, who to ſaue their liues, entred into priſon the night before they ſhould dy, and by exchange of apparell, deliuered them, and remayned there to ſuffer for them. Of Hipſicratea alſo the Queene and Wyfe of Mithridates king of Pontus, who ſpared not hir Noble beauty and golden lockes to manure hir ſelfe in the uſe of armes, to keepe hir huſband company in perils and daungers: and being overcome by Pompeius, and flying away, neuer left him vnaccompanied, ne forſooke ſutch trauayle as he himſelfe ſuſtained. The like alſo of Æmilia, Turia, Sulpitia, Portia, and other Romane Dames. But that ſutch haue preuented their huſband's folly, feldome we reade, ſauing of Queene Marie, the Wife of Don Pietro king of Arragon, who marking the infoleny of hir huſband, and fory for his difordred life, honeſt iealouſie opening hir continent

eyes, forced hir to seeke meanes to remoue his wanton acts, or at leastwise by pollicy and wise foresight to make him husbände and culture his own soyle, that for want of seasonable tillage was barren and voyde of fruiçte. Wherefore consulting with the Lord chamberlayne, who of custome brought whom the king liked best, was in place of his woman bestowed in his Bed, and of her that night begat the yong Prynce Giacomo, that afterwarde proued a valiaunte, and wise king. These passing good pollicies of women many times abolish the frantik lecherous fits of husbands giuen to superfluous lusts, when first by their chaste behauiour and womanly patience they contayne that which they be loth to see or heare of, and then demanding counsell of sobriety and wisedome, excogitate sleights to shun folly, and expell discourtesie, by husbände's carelesse vse. Sutch practises, and deuises, these two Gentlewomen whom I now bringe forth, disclose in this discourse ensuing. In the City of Venice, (which for riches and fayre Women excelleth all other within the region of Italy) in the time that Francesco Focari, a very wyse Prynce, did gouerne the state, there were two young Gentlemen, the one called Girolamo Bembo, and the other Anselmo Barbadico, betwene whom as many times chaunceth amongs other, grew sutch great hatred and cruel hostility, as ech of them by secret and all possible meanes deuised to doe other shame and displeasure, which kindled to sutch outrage, as it was thought impossible to be pacified. It chaunced that at one tyme both of them did mary two noble young Gentlewomen, excellent and fayre, both brought vp vnder one Nurse, and loued ech other lyke two Sisters, and as though they had been both borne of one body. The Wyfe of Anselmo, called Ifotta, was the Daughter of Messer Marco Gradenigo, a man of great estimation in that City, one of the procuratours of San Marco, whereof there were not so great number in those dayes as there bee now, because the Wyfest men, and best Approued of Lyfe were chosen to that great and Noble dignity, none allotted thereunto by Bribes or Ambition. The Wyfe of Girolamo Bembo was called Lucia, the Daughter of Messer Gian Francesco Valerio Caualiere, a Gentleman very well learned, and many times sent by the State, Ambassador into diuers Countreys, and after he had bene Orator wyth the Pope, for his

wifedome in the execution of the same was in great estimation wyth the whole Citty. The two Gentlewomen after they were married, and heard of the hatred betwene their Husbands, were very forrowfull and penſiue, becauſe they thought the Freendſhyp and Loue betwene them twayne, continued from their tender yeares, could not bee, but with greate difficulty kept, or elſe altogether diſſolued and broken. Notwithſtanding beyng diſcrete and wyſe, for auoyding occaſion of eche Huſbande's offence, determined to ceaſe their accuſtomed conuerſation and louinge Familiarity, and not to frequent others company, but at Places and Tymes conuenient. To whom Fortune was ſo fauourable, as not onely theyr Houſes were neere together but alſo adioyninge, in the Backſides whereof theyr Gardeyns alſo Confined, ſeperated onely wyth a lyttle Hedge, that euery day they myght ſee one another, and many tymes talke together: moreouer the Seruauntes, and People of eyther houſes were frendly, and familiar, whych didde greatly content the two Louynge Gentlewomen, becauſe they alſo in the abſence of theyr Husbands, myghte at pleaſure in their Gardens diſport themſelues. And continuing this order the ſpace of three yeares neyther of them within that terme were with chyld. In which ſpace Anſelmo many times viewing and caſting his eyes vpon Madonna Lucia, fell earneſtly in loue with hir, and was not that day well at eaſe, wherein he had not beholden hir excellent beauty. She that was of Spirite, and Wit ſubtle, marked the lookes and maner of Anſelmo, who neyther for loue, ne other cauſe did render like lookes on him, but to ſee to what ende his louing cheere and Countenance would tend. Notwithſtanding the ſeemed rather deſirous to behold him, than elſwhere to imploye hir lookes. On the other ſide the good behauiour, the wiſe order and pleaſaunt beauty of Madonna Ifotta was ſo excellent and plauſible in the ſight of mayſter Girolamo, as no Louer in the World was better pleaſed with his beloued than he with hir: who not able to liue wythout the ſweete ſight of Ifotta (that was a crafty and wily Wench) was by hir quickly perceiued. She being right honeſt and wiſe, and louing hir huſband very dearely, did beare that countenance to Girolamo, that ſhe generally did to any of the Citty, or to other ſtraunger that ſhe neuer ſaw before. But hir

husband more and more inflamed, hauing lost the liberty of himselfe, wounded and pierced with the amorous arowes of Loue, could not conuert his minde to any other but to mistresse Lucia. These two women wanted to heare seruice euery day ordinarily at the church of Sanfantino, bicause they lay long a bed in the mornings, and commonly seruice in that church was sayd somewhat late: their pewes also somewhat distant one from an other. Whether their 2 amorous husbands continually vsed to follow them a loofe of, and to place themselues where eyther of them might best view his beloued: by which custome they seemed to the common people to be iealous ouer their Wyues. But they prosecuted the matter in sutch wyse, as eyther of them without shipping, fought to fend other into Cornouale. It came to passe then, that these 2 beloued gentlewomen one knowing nothing of another's intent, determined to consider better of this loue, because the great good will long time borne, should not be interrupted. Vppon a certayne day when their husbands were abrode, resorting together to talk at their Garden hedge according to theyr wanted maunier, they began to be pleasaunte and merry: and after louynge salutations, Mistresse Lucia spake these Woordes vnto hir Companyon: "Ifotta my deare beloued sifter, I haue a tale to tell you of your husband, that perchance will seeme straunger than anye newes that euer you heard." "And I" (answered mistresse Ifotta) "I haue a story to tel you that wil make you no lesse to wonder than I at that which you haue to say, and it may be will put you into some choler and chafe." "What is that?" quod the one and other. In the ende eyther of them told what practizes and loue their husbands went about. Whereat although they were in great rage for theyr husbandes follye, yet for the time they laughed out the matter, and thought that they were sufficient (as in very deede they were, a thing not to be doubted) and able to satisfie their husbands hunger and therewithall began to blame them and to say that they deserued to learn to play of the Cornets, if they had no greater feare of God, and care of honesty than their husbands had. Then after much talke of this matter, concluded that they should do wel to expect what their husbands would demaund. Hauing taken order as they thought meete, they agreed dailye to espye what shoulde

chance, and purposed first with sweete and pleasaunte lookes to bayte and lure eche other feere, to put them in hope therby that they should satisfie their desires, which done for that tyme they departed. And when at the Church at Sanfantino or other place in Venice, they chanced to meete their louers, they shewed vnto them cheareful and mery Countenance: whych the Louers well notyng, were the gladdest Men of the Worlde: and seeing that it was impossible in Speache to vtter their Myndes, they purposed by Letters to signify the fame. And hauing found Purciuants to goe betwene parties (whereof this City was wont to be ful) either of them wrote an Amorous Letter, to his beloued, the content whereof was, that they were verye desyrous secretly to talke with them, thereby to expresse the burnynge affectyons that inwardly they bare them, whych without declaration and vtterance by Mouthe in their owne pefence, woulde breede them Torments more bytter than Deathe. And wythin fewe Dayes after (no greate dyfference of Tyme betweene,) they wrote their Letters. But Girolamo Bembo hauing a pregnant Wit, who coulde well Endite both in prose, and Rime, wrote an excellent sonnet in the prayse of his Darling in Italian Meeter, and wyth hys Letter sent the fame vnto hir, the effect whereof doth follow.

A liuely face and pearcing beauty bright  
 Hath linkt in loue my fely fences all:  
 A comely porte, a goodly shaped wight  
 Hath made me slide that neuer thought to fall:  
 Hir eyes, hir grace, hir deedes and maners milde,  
 So straines my heart that loue hath Wit begilde.

But not one dart of Cupide did me wounde,  
 A hundred shaftes lights all on me at ones:  
 As though dame kind some new deuise had founde,  
 To teare my flesh, and crash a two my bones:  
 And yet I feele sutch ioy in these my woes  
 That as I die my sprite to pleasure goes.

These new found fits sutch change in me doe breede,  
 I hate the day and draw to darknesse, lo!

Yet by the Lampe of beauty doe I feede  
 In dimmest dayes and darkeſt nights alſo,  
 Thus altring State and changing Diet ſtill,  
 I feele and know the force of Venus will.

The beſt I finde, is that I doe confeſſe,  
 I loue you Dame whoſe beauty doth excell :  
 But yet a toy doth breede me ſome diſtreſſe,  
 For that I dread you will not loue me well,  
 Than loue yee wot ſhall reſt in me alone :  
 And fleſhly breſt, ſhall beare a heart of ſtone.

O goddeſſe mine, yet heare my voyce of ruthe,  
 And pitie him that heart preſents to thee :  
 And if thou want a witneſſe for my truth  
 Let ſighes and teares my iudge and record be,  
 Vnto the ende a day may come in haſt,  
 To make me thinke I ſpend no time in waſte.

For nought preuayles in loue to ſerue and ſue  
 If full effect ioyne not with words at neede,  
 What is deſire or any fanſies newe  
 More than the winde? that ſpreades abroad in deede,  
 My words and works, ſhall both in one agree,  
 To pleaſure hir, whoſe Seruaunt would I bee.

The ſubtill Dames receiuing thoſe amorous letters and ſong,  
 diſdanfully at the firſt ſeemed to take them at the bringers hands,  
 as they had determined, yet afterwardeſ they ſhewed better coun-  
 tenaunce. Theſe letters were toſſed from one to an other, whereat  
 they made great paſtime, and thought that the ſame would come  
 to very good ſucceſſe, eyther of theym keepinge ſtyll their Hus-  
 bande's Letter, and agreed without iniury done one to an other  
 trimly to deceyue their husbands. The maner how you ſhall  
 perceyue anone. They deuifed to fend word to their Louers, that  
 they were ready at al times to ſatiſſie their futes, if the ſame might  
 be ſecretly done, and ſafely might make repayre vnto their houſes,  
 when their Huſbands were abſent, which in any wiſe they ſayde,

must be done in the night, for feare leaft in the day tyme they were difcried. Agayne thefe prouident and fubtill Women had taken order wyth their Maydes, whom they made priuy to their praçtyfe that through their Gardens they ſhould enter into other's houfe, and bee ſhut in their Chambers without Lyght, there to tary for their Huſbands, and by any meanes not to bee ſeene or knowne. This order preſcribed and giuen, Miſtreſſe Lucia firſt did hir louer to vnderſtand, that the night inſuing at foure of the Clock at the Poſterne dore, which ſhould be left open, he ſhould come into hir houſe, where hir mayde ſhould be ready to bring him vp to hir Chaumbre, becauſe hir huſband Maiſter Girolamo woulde that Night imbarke himſelfe to goe to Padua. The like Miſtreſſe Iſotta did to Maiſter Girolamo, appointing him at fiue of the clock, whych ſhe ſayd was a very conuenient time, bicauſe mayſter Anfelmo that night would ſup and lye with certayne of his Fryends at Murano, a place beſides Venice. Vpon theſe newes, the 2 Louers thought them ſelues the moſt valiaunt and fortunate of the World, no Enterpriſe now there was but ſeemed eaſie for them to bring to paſſe, yea if it were to expell the Saracens out of Hieruſalem, or to deprivie the great Turke of his Kingdome of Conſtantinople. Their ioy was futch, as they coulde not tell where they were, thinking euery houre a whole day till night. At length the tyme was come ſo long deſired, and the Huſbandes accordingly gaued diligent attendaunce, and let their Wyues to vnderſtande, (or at leaſt wyſe beleued they had) that they could not come home that night for matters of great importaunce. The Women that were very wiſe, ſeeing their ſhip ſayle wyth ſo prosperous wynde, fayned themſelues to credite all that they offered. Theſe young men tooke eyther of them his Gondola (or as we tearm it they Barge) to diſport themſelues, and hauing ſupped abroade, rowed in the Canali, which is the Water that paſſeth through diuers Streates of the City, expecting their appoynted houre. The Women ready at three of the Clocke, repayed into their Gardens, and after they had Talked, and Laughed together a præty whyle, went one into an other's houſe, and were by the maydes brought vp to the Chambers. There eyther of them the Candle being light, began diligently to view the order and ſituation of the



Place, and by little and little marked the chiefeſt things they looked for, committing the ſame to memory. Afterwards they put out the Candle, and both in trembling maner expected the comming of their Huſbandes. And iuſt at four of the Clocke the Mayden of Madonna Lucia ſtoode at the dore to wayte for the comminge of Maſter Anfelmo, who within a while after came, and gladly was let in by the mayde, and by hir conducted vp to hir Bed ſide. The place there, was ſo dark as Hel, and impoſſible for him to know his Wyfe. The two Wyues were ſo like of bigneſſe and Speach as by darke wythout great difficulty they could be known: when Anfelmo had put of his clothes, he was of his Wyfe amorouſly intertayned, thinking the Wyfe of Girolamo had receyued him betwene hir armes, who aboute a Thouſande times kiſſed hir very ſweetely, and ſhe for hir parte ſweetely rendred agayne to hym ſo many: what followed it were Folly to deſcribe. Girolamo lyke-wiſe at 5 of the clocke appeared, and was by the mayde conueied vp to the Chamber, where he lay with his own Wife, to their great contentations. Now theſe 2 huſbands thinking they had ben embraced by their beloued Ladies, to ſeeme braue, and valiaunt men of Warre, made greater prooue of their Manhoode, than they were wont to do. At what time their Wyues (as it pleaſed God to manifeſt by their deliuery) were begotten with child of 2 fayre Sons, and they the beſt contented Women of the World. This practiſe continued betwene them many times, fewe weekes paſſing but in this fort they lay together. Neyther of them for all this perceiued themſelues to be deluded, or conceyued any ſuſpition of colluſion for that the chamber was ſtill without light, and in the day the Women commonly fayled not to be together. The time was not longe but their Bellies began to ſwell, whereat their Huſbandes were exceeding ioyfull, beleeuing verily that eyther of them had fixed Hornes vpon the other's head. Howbeit the poore men for all their falſe Beliefe had beſtowed theyr Laboure vpon their owne Soyle, watred onely with the courſe of their proper Fountayne. Theſe two Iolly Wenches ſeeyng themſelues by thys amorous practiſe to be with Childe, beganne to deuife howe they might break of the ſame, douting leaſt ſome ſlaunder and ill talke ſhould riſe: and thereby the hatred and malice betwene theyr huſ-

bandes increase to greater fury. And as they were aboute thys deuise, an occasion chaunced vtterly to diffolue theyr accustomed meetynges, but not in that sorte as they woulde haue had it. For the Women determined as merily they had begon so iocundlye to ende: but Fortune the guide of Humane Lyfe, dispoſeth all enterpryses after hir owne pleasure, who lyke a puiffant Lady caryeth with hir the successe of eche attempte. The beginning she offereth freely to him that list, the Ende she calleth for, as a ranfome or trybute payable vnto hir. In the same streete, or as they call it Rio, and Canale, not farre from theyr Houſes, there dwelled a young Woman very fayre and comely, not fully twenty yeares of age, which then was a Widow, and a lyttle before the wife of M. Niccolo Delphino, and the Daughter of M. Giuoanni Moro, called Gifmonda: she besides hir Father's Dowrye (which was more than a Thousand Pound) had left hir by hir Husband, a great Porcyon of Money, Iewels, Plate, and houſhold Furnitures. Wyth hir fell in Loue Aloisio Fofcari, the Nephewe of the Duke, who making greate sute to haue hir to Wyfe, consumed the time in beholding his Ladye, and at length had brought the matter to so good passe, as one Nighte she was contented, at one of the Wyndowes of hir House directly ouer agaynſte a little lane, to heare him speake. Aloisio maruellous glad of those desired Newes, at the appoynted Nyght, about fyue or fixe of the Clocke, with a Ladder made of Roapes (bicause the Window was very high) went thyther alone. Beyng at the place and making a signe concluded vppon betweene them, attended when the gentlewoman should throw down hir cord to draw vp the Ladder accordingly as was appointed, which not longe after was done. Gifmonda when shee had receiued the ende of the Ladder, tied it fast to the iawme of the wyndow, and gaue a token to hir Louer to mount. He by force of loue being very venturous, liuely and lustely scaled the Wyndow: and when he was vppon the Top of the same, desirous to caste himselfe in, to embrace his Lady, and shee not readye to receiue him, or else vppon other occasion, he fel downe backwarde, thinking as he fell to haue faued himselfe twice or thryce by catchyng holde vppon the Ladder, but it would not be. Notwithstanding, as God would haue it, the poise of his Body fell not vppon the pauement of the streete fully,

but was flayed by some lets in the fall, which had it not bene so, no doubt he had bene flayne out of hande, but yet his bones were fore brused and his heade deeply wounded. The infortunate Louer seeing himselfe fore hurt wyth that pityfull fall, albeyt hee thought that hee had receiued his Death's Wounde, and impossyble to liue any longer, yet the loue that he bare to the Widow, did so far furmount hys payne and the gryefe of hys Body fore crushed and broken, that so well as he could, hee rose vp, and with his hands flayed the Bloud that ranne from hys Heade, to the intente yt myghte not rayse some slaunder vppon the Widow whom hee loued so wel: and went alonges the streete towarde the houses of Girolamo and Anselmo aforefaid. Being come thither wyth greate difficulty not able to goe anye further for verye payne and gryefe, hee faynted and fell downe as deade, where the Bloude issued in futch abundance, as the Grounde therewyth was greatly imbrued, and euery one that saw him thought him to be voide of Lyfe. Mistresse Gifmonda exceeding forrowful for this mischaunce, doubted that he had broken his Necke, but when she saw hym depart, she comforted him so well as she could, and drewe vp the Ladder into hir Chamber. Such Chaunces happen to earnest Louers, who when they think they haue scaled the top of theyr Felicity, sodaynly tomble downe into the Pit of extreme despayre, that better it had ben for them leysurely to expect the grace of their Ladyes at conuenient place and houre, than hardily without prouidence to aduenture lyke desperat souldiers to clym the top of the vature, without measuring the height of the Wals, or viewynge the substance of theyr Ladders, do receyue in the ende cruell repulse, and fal downe headlonge either by present Death or mortall Wounde, to receyue euerlastyng reproche and shame. But turne we agayne now to this disgraced Louer, who lay gasping betwene Lyfe and Death. And as he was in this forrowful state, one of the Captaynes, a Noble man appointed to see orders obserued in the Nighte, wyth hys bande (which they call Zaffi) came thither: and finding hym lying vpon the ground, knew that it was Aloisio Foscare, and causing him to be taken vp from the place wher he lay, (thinking he had ben dead) commanded that he should be conueyed into the Church adioyning which immediately was done. And when he had wel confi-

dered the place where hee was founde, hee doubted that eyther Girolamo Bembo or Anselmo Barbadico, before whose Dores hee thought the murder committed, had kylled him, which afterwards he beleued to be true, bycause he heard a certayne noyse of mennes Feete at one of their Doores: wherefore he deuided his company, placyng some on the one side of their houfes, and some on the other, besyding the same so well as he coulde. And as Fortune woulde he founde by Neglygence of the mayds, the dores of the II. houfes open. It chaunced also that Nyght that the two Louers one in other's House were gone to lye with their Ladyes, who hearynge the hurly burly, and sturre made in the house by the Sergeants, sodaynely the Women lept out of their Beds, and bearyng their apparell vppon theyr shoulders, went home to their houfes throughe their Gardeins vnseene of any, and in fearefull wyfe did attende what should be the End of the same. Girolamo, and Anselmo not knowing what rumor and noyse that was, although they made hast in the Darke to cloth themselues, were by the Offycers without any field fought, apprehended in ech other's Chamber, and remained Prysoners at theyr mercy: whereat the Captayne and hys Band did greatly maruell, knowyng the Hatred betweene them. But when Torches and Lyghts were brought, and the two Gentlemen caried out of Doores, the wonder was the greater for that they perceyued them almoste Naked, and prysoners taken in eche other's House. And besydes thys admiratyon, sutch murmur and flander was bruted, as the quality of euerye Vulgar Heade coulde secretlye deuyse or Imagyne, but specyally of the innocente Women, who howe faultlesse they were, euery Man by what is sayde before maye conceyue, and yet the cancred Stomackes of that Troupe bare sutch Malyce agaynste them, as they iarred and brawled agaynst them lyke curryshe Curres at straunge Dogges whom they neuer sawe before. The Gentlemen immediately were caried to pryson, ignorant vppon what occasion: afterwards vnderstandinge that they were committed for the murder of Aloisio Fofcari, and imprysoned like theeues, albeit they knew themselues guiltlesse of murder or Theft, yet their gryef and forrowe was very greate, beyng certayne that all Venice should vnderstande howe they betweene whome had ben mortall hatred,

were nowe become copartners of that whych none but the true poffeffours ought to enioy : and althoughe they coulde not abyde to speake together, lyke thofe that deadely dyd hate one another, yet both theyr myndes were fyxed vppon one thought. In the ende, conceyuing Fury and despite agaynſte theyr Wyues, the place being ſo darke that no Lyght or Sunne coulde pierce into the fame, whereby wythout ſhame or diſdayne one of them began to ſpeake to another, and with terrible Othes they gaue their fayth to diſcloſe the troth in what fort eyther of them was taken in other's Chamber, and frankly told the way and meane howe eche of them enioyed hys Pleaſure of other's Wyfe : whereupon the whole matter (according to their knowledge) was altogether by little and little manifeſt and knowne. Then they accompted theyr Wiues to be the moſt arrant ſtrumpets within the whole City, by diſpraying of whom theyr olde rancor was forgotten, and they agreed together like two Fryends, who thought that for ſhame they ſhould neuer be able to looke Men in the face, ne yet to ſhew themſelues openlye within the Citye, for ſorrow whereof they deemed Death the greateſt good turne and beſt Benefit that could chance vnto them. To be ſhort, ſeeing no meanes or occaſion to comfort and relieue theyr penyue and heauy ſtates, they fell into extreeme deſpayre, who aſhamed to lyue any longer, deuifed way to rid them ſelues of Lyfe, concludyng to make themſelues guilty of the murder of Aloifo Foſcari : and after mutch talke betweene them of that cruell determination, ſtyll approuing the fame to be theyr beſt refuge, they expected nothyng elſe, but when they ſhould be examined before the Magiſtrates. Foſcari as is before declared was carryed into the Churche for Deade, and the Pryeſt ſtraightly charged wyth the keepynge of hym, who cauſed hym to be conueyed into the myddes of the Church, ſetting ii. Torches a Light, the one at his heade, and the other at his feete, and when the Company was gone, he determined to goe to bed the remnant of the Nyght to take his reſt : but before he went, ſeeing the Torches were but ſhort, and could not laſt paſte two or three houres, he lighted two other, and ſet them in the others place, for that it ſhould ſeeme to his frends, if any chaunced to come what care and worſhip he beſtowed vpon him. The Prieſt

ready to depart, perceiued the Body fomewhat to moue, with that looking vpon his Face, espyed his eyes a little to begin to open. Wherewithall fomewhat afraide, he crying out, ran away: notwithstanding his Courage began to come to him again, and laying his hand vpon his breast, perceiued his heart to beate, and then twas out of doubt that he was not dead, although by reason of losse of his bloud he thought little life to remaine in him: wherefore he with one of his fellow priests which was a bed, and the Clerck of the Parish, caried maister Foscarei so tenderly as they could into the Priests Chamber, which adioined next the Church. Then he sente for a surgeon that dwelt hard by, and required him diligently to search the Wounde, who so well as he could purged the same from the corrupt Bloud, and perceiuyng it not to be mortall, so dressed it wyth Oyles and other precious ointments, as Aloisio came agayn to hymselfe: and when he had anoynted that recouered body wyth certayne Precious and comfortable Oyles, he suffred him to take his rest: the Priest also went to bed and slepte till it was Daye, who so soone as he was vp, went to seeke the Captayne to tel him that Maister Aloisio was recouered. The Captaine at that tyme was gone to the pallace at San. Marco, to giue the Duke aduertisement of thys Chaunce, after whom the Priest went and was let in to the Duke's Chamber: to whom he declared what he had done to Aloisio. The Duke very glad to heare tell of his Nephewe's lyfe, although then very penfue for the newes broughte vnto him by the Captayne, intreated one of the Signor de notte, to take with him two of the best furgions, and to call him that had already dressed his Nephew, to goe to visite the wounded Gentleman, that hee might be certified of the truth of that Chaunce. All which together repaired to the Pryeste's Chamber, where fyndinge hym not a sleepe, and the Woundefayre inoughe to heale, dyd therevnto what their cunning thoughte meete: and then they began to inquire of hym, that was not yet full recouered to perfecte speache, howe that chaunce happened, telling hym that he might frankelye confesse vnto them the trouthe. The more dilygent they were in this demaunde, bicause the Surgeon that dressed him fyrst, alleaged, that the Wounde was not made with Sworde, but receiued by some greate fall or blowe with Mace or

Clubbe, or rather seemed to come of some high fall from a Wyndowe, by reason his Head was so greivously brused. Aloisio hearynge the Surgeons fodayne demaunde, presentlye aunfwered, that he fell downe from a Wyndowe, and named also the House. And he had no fooner spoken those Woordes, but he was very angry wyth him selfe and forrye: and wherewithall his dismayde Spyrites began to reuyue in futch wyfe, as sodainlye he choyste rather to dye than to speake any thyng to the dyshonoure of mystresse Gismonda. Then the Signior di notte, asked hym what he dyd there aboute that Tyme of the Nyght, and wherfore hee dyd clymb vp to the Wyndowe, beyng so hyghe: whych hee coulde not keepe secreete, confyderyng the Authoritye of the Magystrate that demaunded the questyon, albeyt hee thoughte that yf his Tongue hadde runne at large, and commytted a Faulte by rashe speakyng, hys Bodye should therefore suffer the smart: wherfore before hee woulde in any wyse gyue occasion to slander hir, whome hee loued better than hys owne Lyfe, determined to hazarde hys Lyfe and Honoure, to the mercye of Iustice, and sayde: "I declared euen nowe, whych I cannot denye, that I fell downe from the wyndowe of Mystresse Gismonda Mora. The cause thereof (beeyng now at state, wherein I knowe not whether I shall Lyue or Dye) I will truelye dysclofe: Mystresse Gismonda beyng a Wydowe and a younge Woman, wythoute anye Man in hir House, bycause by reporte shee is very rych of Iewels and Money, I purposed to robbe and dyspoyle: wherfore I deuysed a ladder to clymbe vp to hir Wyndowe, with Mynde full bent to kill all those that should resiste me: but my mishappe was futch as the Ladder being not well fastened fell downe, and I my selfe therewithall, and thinking to recouer home to my lodging with my corded Ladder, my Spirites beganne to fayle, and tumbled downe I wotte not where." The Signor de notte, whose name was Domenico Mariperto hearing him say so, maruelled greatly, and was very forie, that all they in the Chamber, which were a great number, (as at futch chaunces commonly be) dyd heare those Woordes: and bicause they were spoken so openly, he was forced to faye vnto hym: "Aloisio, it doth not a little grieue me that thou hast committed futch follye, but for so much as forrowe now will not

ferue to remedye the Trespaffe, I muste needes shew my selfe both faithfull to my countrey, and also carefull of mine honor, withoute respect of persons: wherefore thou shalt remaine here in such safe custody as I shall appoint, and when thou art better amended, thou must according to desert be referred to the Gaole." Leaving him there vnder sure keeping, he went to the counsell of the Dieci, (which magistrates in that City be of greatest authority) and finding the Lords in Counsell, he opened the whole matter vnto them: the presidentes of the Counsell which had hearde a great nombre of complaynts of many Theftes don in the Nyght wythin the Citye, tooke order that one of the Captaynes that were appoynted to the dilygente Watche and keepyng of Aloisio, remayning in the Pryeste's Houise, should cause him to be examined, and with tormentes forced to tell the truth, for that they did verely beleue that hee had committed many Robberies besides, or at the least was priuy and accessarie to the same, and knew where the Theues were become. Afterwardes the sayd Counsell did fitte vpon the matter of Girolamo Bembo and Anselmo Barbadico, found at myde Night naked in eche other's Chambre, and commytted to Pryson as is before remembred: and bicause they had many matters besides of greater importaunce, to consult vpon, amongs which the warres betwene them and Philippo Maria Visconte, Duke of Milane, the aforesayde causes were deferred tyll an other tyme, notwithstandyng in the meane while they were examyned. The Duke himselfe that tyme being in Counsell, spake most feuerely agaynst his Nephew: neuerthelesse he did hardly beleue that his Nephew being very rich, and indued with great honesty, would abase himselfe to a vice so vile and abhominable as theft is, wherevpon he began to confider of many thinges, and in the ende talked with hys Nephew secretly alone, and by that meanes learned the trouth of the whole matter. In like maner Anselmo and Girolamo were Examined by Commiffioners appoynted by the state, what one of them did in an other's chamber, at that houre of the night, who confessed that many tymes they had seene Aloisio Foscarei, to passe vp and down before their houses at times inconuenient, and that night by chaunce one of them not knowing of another, espied Aloisio, thinking that he lingered about their



houfes to abufe one of their Wyues, for which caufe they went out, and with their Weapons fodenly killed him : which confeffion they openly declared accordingly, as whereupon before they were agreed. Afterwardes with further circumftaunce being examined vpon the Article of being one in another's Chaumber, it appeared that their firft tale was vtterly vntrue : of all which contradictions the Duke was aduertifed, and was driuen into extreeme admiration, for that the truth of thofe diforders coulde not be to the full vnderftanded and knowne. Whereupon the Dieci, and the affiftauntes were agayne affembled in counsell accordinge to the maner, at what time after all things throughly were debated and ended, the Duke being a very graue man, of excellent Witte, aduanced to the Dukedome by the confent of the whole State, as euery of them were about to rife vp, hee fayde vnto them : “ My Lordes, there refteth one thinge yet to be moued, which peraduenture hitherto hath not bene thought vpon : there are before vs two complaynts, the effect whereof in my iudgement is not throughly conceyed in the Opinions of diuers. Anfelmo Barbadico, and Girolamo Bembo, betwene whom there hath bene euer continuall hatred, left vnto them as a man may fay euen by Fathers Inheritance both of them in eyther of their Chaubers, were apprehended in a manner naked by our Sergeaunts, and without Torments, or for feare to bee racked vpon the onely interrogatories of oure minifters, they haue voluntarily confeffed that before their houfes they killed Aloifio our Nephew : and albeit that our fayde Nephew yet liueth, and was not striken by them or any other as fhould appeare, yet they confeffe themfelues guilty of murder. What fhall be fayd then to the matter, doth it not feeme doubtfull ? Our Nephew again hath declared, that in going about to rob the houfe of Miftrefse Gifmonda Mora, whom he ment to haue flayne, he fel downe to the Ground from the top of a window, wherefore by reafon fo many robberies haue bene difcouered within the Citty, it may be prefumed that hee was the theeve and malefactor, who ought to be put to the torments, that the truth may be knowne, and being found guilty, to feele the feure punifhment that he hath deferued. Moreouer when he was found lying vpon the ground, he had neither Ladder nor Weapon, whereupon may bee

thought that the fact was otherwise done, than hitherto is confessed. And because amongs morall vertues, temperance is the chiefeft and worthy of greateft commendation, and that iustice not righteoufly executed, is iniustice and wronge, it is meete and conuenient for vs in these straunge accidents, rather to vse temperance than the rigor of iustice: and that it may appeare that I do not speake these words without good grounde, marke what I shall saye vnto you. These two most mortall enimies doe confesse that which is impossible to be true, for that our Nephew (as is before declared) is a liue, and his wounde was not made by Sworde, as hee himselfe hath confessed. Now who can tell or say the contrary, but that shame for being taken in their seuerall Chambers, and the dishonesty of both their Wyues, hath caused them to despise life, and to desire death? we shall finde if the matter be diligently inquired and searched, that it will fall out otherwise than is already supposed by common opinion. For the contrariety of examinations, vnlikelihoode of circumstances, and the impossibility of the cause, rendreth the matter doubtfull: wherefore it is very needeful diligently to examine these attempts, and thereof to vse more aduised consideration. On the other side, our Nephew accuseth himselfe to be a theefe and which is more, that hee ment to kill Mistresse Mora when hee brake into hir house. Vnder this Graffe, my Lords, as I suppose, some other Serpent lieth hiden, that is not yet thought of. The Gentleman yee know before this time was neuer defamed of futch outrage, ne suspected of the least offence that may be obiected: besides that, all yee doe know, (thanks therefore be geuen to almighty God) that he is a man of great richeffe, and possessions, and hath no neede to rob: for what necessity should driue him to rob a widowe, that hath of his owne liberally to bestow vpon the succour of Widowes? Were there none els of substance in the City for him to geue attempt but to a Wyddowe, a comfortlesse creature, contented with quiet lyfe to lyue amonges hir family within the boundes of hir owne house? What if hir richeffe, Iewels and plate be great, hath not Aloisio of his owne to redouble the same? but truly this Robbery was done after some other manner than hee hath confessed: to vs then my Lords it appertayneth, if it so stande with your plea-

fures, to make further inquiry of the same, promising vnto you vpon our Fayth, that wee shall imploy our whole diligence in the true examination of thys matter, and hope to bring the same to futch good ende, as none shall haue cause to blame vs, the finall sentence whereof shall bee referued to youre iudgement." Thys graue request and wise talke of the Duke pleased greatly the Lordes of the Counsayle, who referred not onely the examination, but also the finall sentence vnto hym. Whereuppon the wyse Prynce beinge fully enformed of the chaunce happened to his Nephewe, attended onely to make searck, if he could vnderstand the occasion why Bembo and Barbadico so foolishly had accused themselves of that which they neuer did. And so after mutch counsayle, and great tyme contriued in their feveral examinations, his Nephew then was well recouered, and able to goe abroad, being fet at liberty. The Duke then hauinge bestowed hys trauallye with the other two prifoners, communicated to the Lords of the aforesayd councel called Dieci the whole trowth of the matter. Then he caused with great discretion, proclamation to be made throughout Venice, that Anselmo and Girolamo shold be beheded betwene the two Pyllers, and Aloisio hanged, whereby he thought to know what sute the women would make, eyther with or against their Husbandes, and what euidence mistresse Gismonda would geue against Aloisio. The brute hereof disperfed, diuers talke thereuppon was rayfed, and no communication of any thing els in open streats, and priuate houfes, but of the putting to death of those men. And bicause all three were of honorable houfes, their kinsmen, and Friendes made sute by all possible meanes for their pardon. But their Confessions published, the rumor was made worfe, (as it dayly chaunceth in like cases) than the matter was in deede, and the same was noyed how Foscare had confessed so many theftes done by him at diuers tymes, as none of his freends or Kin durst speake for him. Mistresse Gismonda which bitterly lamented the mischaunce of hir Louer, after she vnderstoode the confession hee had made, and evidently knew that because hee would not bleamish hir honour, he had rather willingly forgo his owne, and therewithall his lyfe, felt hir selfe so oppressed with feruent loue, as shee was ready presently to furrender hir ghost. Wherefore

ſhee ſent him woorde that he ſhould comfort himſelfe, becauſe ſhee was determined to manifeſt the very truth of the matter, and hoped vpon hir declaration of true euidence, ſentence ſhoulde bee reuoked, for teſtimony whereof, ſhee had his louinge letters yet to ſhewe, written to hir with his owne handes, and would bring forth in the iudgement place, the corded ladder, which ſhe had kept ſtil in her chamber. Aloifio hearinge theſe louing newes, and of the euidence which his Lady would giue for his defence, was the gladdeſt man of the worlde, and cauſed infinite thanks to be rendred vnto hir, wyth promiſe that if hee might bee rid and diſcharged out of priſon, he would take hir for his louing ſpouſe and wyfe. Whereof the gentlewoman conceyued ſingular ſolace, louing hir deere freende with more entier affection than hir owne ſoule. Miſtreſſe Lucia, and miſtreſſe Iſotta, hearinge the diſperced voyce of the death of their huſbands, and vnderſtanding the caſe of miſtreſſe Giſmonda by an other woman, layd their heads together likwiſe to deuife meanes for ſauing their huſbandes liues: and entering into their Barge, or Gondola, wente to ſeek miſtreſſe Giſmonda and when they had debated vpon the trouthe of theſe euents, concluded with one aſſent to prouide for the ſafegarde and deliuerie of theyr huſbandes, wherein they ſhewed themſelues both wiſe and honeſt. For what ſtate is more honorable and of greater Comforte than the married Lyfe, if in deede they that haue yoaked themſelues therein be conformable to thoſe Delightes, and contentation which the ſame conduceth? Wealth and Riches maketh the true vnyted couple to reioyce in the Benefits of Fortune, graunted by the ſender of the ſame, either of them prouiding for diſpoſing thereof, againſt the decrepitate time of olde age, and for the beſtowing of the ſame vpon the Fruite accrued of theyr Bodies. Pouerty in any wiſe dothe not offend them, both of them glad to labour and trauaile like one Body, to ſuſtaine theyr poore and neady Lyfe, eyther of them Comfortably doth Minyſter comforte in the cruell tyme of Aduerſity, rendring humble thanks to God for hys ſharp Rodde and Punyſhment enſlicted vpon them for their manyfolde finnes commytted againſt hys maieſtye, trauailinge by night and Daye by ſweatinge Browes to get browne Breade, and drynke ful thin to ceaſe the Cryes and pytifull crau-

inges of their tender Babes, wrapt in Cradle and instant on their mother to fill their hungry mouthes. Aduerse fortune maketh not one to forsake the other. The louing Wyfe ceafeth not by paynfull fute to trot and go by Night and day in heate and colde to relieue the miserye of hir husband. He likewise spareth not his payne to get and gayne the liuyng of them both. He abrode and at home according to his called state, she at home to saue the Lucre of that Labor, and to doe sutch necessary trauayle incident to the married kinde. He carefull for to get, she heedful for to saue, he by trafique and Arte, shee by diligence and houfholde toile. O the happy state of married folke: O surpassing delights of marriage bed: which maketh these ii. poore Gentlewomen, that by honorable pollicy saued the honor of themselues and honesty of theyr husbandes, to make humble fute for their preferuation, who were like to be berieued of their greatest comforts. But come we again to declare the last act of this Comical discourse. These married Women, after this chaunce befell, vpon their husbandes imprysonment, began to be abhorred of their Friendes and Parentes, for that they were suspected to be dishoneste, by reason whereof dolefully lamenting their Miffortune, notwithstandinge their owne conscience voyde of faulte, dyd byd them to be of good cheere and comfort. And when the daye of execution came, they dyd theyr Friends and Parents to vnderstand that their conceiued opinyon was vntrue, and prayed them to forbear their disdaine and malice, till the truth should be throughly manifested, assuring them that in the End their owne innocencie and the guiltlesse cryme of their Husbandes should openly be reuealed to the Worlde. In the meane time they made request vnto their Friendes, that one of the Lordes called Auogadori might be admitted to vnderstande their case, the rest to be referred to themselues, wherein they had no neede either of Proctor or Aduocate. This request seemed verie straunge to their friends, deeming their case to be shameful and abhominable: neuertheles diligently they accomplyshed their request and vnderstandyng that the Counsell of the Dieci had commytted the matter wholly to the Duke, they made a supplicatyon vnto hym in the name of the three Gentlewomen, wherein they craued nothing else but theyr matter might be hearde. The Duke perceiuyng hys aduise like to take

effect, assigned them a Day, commaunding them at that tyme before hym and the Lords of the Councell and all the College of the estate to appeare. The Day being come, all the Lordes affembled, desirous to see to what issue this matter would grow. On the morning the three Gentlewomen honestly accompanied with other Dames, went to the Palace, and goynge along the streete of San Marco the people began to vtter many raylyng words against them: some cried out (as we see by vnstable order the vulgare people in like cases vse to do) and doinge a certain curtisy by way of disdain and mockery: "Behold the honest women, that without sending their husbands out of Venice, haue placed them in the Castell of Cornetto, and yet the arrante Whoores bee not ashamed to shewe them selues abrode, as though they hadde done a thyng that were Honeste and prayse worthy." Other shot forth theyr Boltes, and wyth theyr Prouerbes procedyng from their malicious Mouthes thwited the pore Women at their pleasure. Other also seeyng Mystresse Gismonda in their Company, thought that she went to declame against maister Aloisio Foscarei, and none of them all hapned on the trowth. Arryued at the pällace, ascending the marble staires or steps of the same, they were brought into the great hal, wher the Duke appointed the matter to be heard. Thither repaired the friends and those of nearest kin to the three Gentlewomen, and before the matter did begin, the Duke caused also the thre prifoners to be brought thither. Thither also came many other Gentlemen, with great desire to see the end of those euent. Silence being made the Duke turning his face to the women, sayd vnto them: "Ye Gentlewomen haue made requeste by supplication to graunt you publike audyence accordyng to Iustice, for that you do alleage that Law and order doth so require; and that euery wel ordred common wealth condemmeth no subiecte withoute due answere by order of lawe. Beholde therefore, that we desirous to do Iustice, bee ready in Place to heare what ye can say." The two husbands were very angrie and wrathfull against their wiues, and the more their stomackes did fret with choler and dayne, by how mutch they saw their impudent and shamelesse wiues wyth futch audacity to appeare before the maiesty of a counsel so honourable and dreadfull, as though they had ben the

most honeste and chaste Women of the World. The two honeste wiues perceyued the anger and displeasure of their husbands, and for all that were not afrayde ne yet difmayde, but smyling to themselves and somewhat mouing their heads in decente wyse seemed vnto them as though they had mocked them. Anselmo more angry and impacient then Girolamo, brake out into futch furie, as had it not ben for the maiefty of the place, and the Companye of People to haue stayed him, woulde haue kylled them: and feyng he was not able to hurt them, he began to vtter the vylest Woords, that he possibly could deuise agaynst them. Mistresse Isotta hearing hir husband so spytefully to spit forth his poyson in the prefence of that honourable assemblie, conceined courage, and crauinge licence of the Duke to speake, with merrye countenance and good vttrance began thus to say her mind: "Most excellent Prince, and yee right honourable Lordes, I doe perceyue how my deare husbände vncomely and very dishonestly doth vse himselfe agaynst me in this noble company, thincking also that mayster Girolamo Bembo is affected with like rage and minde agaynst this Gentlewoman mystreffe Lucia hys wyfe, although more temperate in words, he do not expresse the same. Agaynst whom if no reply be made, it may seeme that he doth well and hath spoken a truth, and that we by silence do condemne our selues to be those most wicked women whom hee alleageth vs to be. Wherefore by your gracious pardon and licence (most honourable) in the behalfe of mistresse Lucia and my selfe, for our defence I purpose to declare the effect of my mynde, although my purpose be cleane altered from that I had thought to say, being now iustly prouoked by the vnkinde behaiour of him whom I loue better than my selfe, and whose disloyalty, had hee beene silent and not so rashly runne to the ouerthrow of me and my good name, coulde I haue concealed, and onely touched that which had concerned the Purgation and fauegard of them both, which was the onely intent and meaning of vs, by making our humble supplication to your Maiesties. Neuerthelesse, so farre as my feeble force shall stretch, I will assaye to do both the one and the other, although it be not appropriate to our kinde in publike place to declayne, nor yet to open futch bold attempts, but that necessity of matter and opor-

tunity of time, and place dothe bolden vs to enter into these termes, whereof we craue a thousand pardons for our vnkindely dealings, and render double thanks to your honours, for admitting vs to speake. Be it knowne therefore vnto you, that our husbands agaynst duety of loue, lawes of mariage, and against all reason, do make their heauy complaynts, which by and by I will make playne and euident. I am right well assured, that their extreme rage and bitter hearts sorrow do proceede of 2 occasions: The one, of the murder whereof they haue falsely accused theymselfes: the other of ielouisie, which grieuouly doth gnawe their hearts, thinking vs to be vile, and abhominable Women, because they were surprised in ech other's Chaumber. Concerning the murder, if they haue soyled their handes therein, it appertayneth vnto you my Lords to render their desert. But how can the same be layd to our charge, for somutch as they (if it were done by them) committed the same without our knowledge, our help and counsel? And truly I see no cause why any of vs ought to be burdened with the outrage, and mutch lesse cause haue they to laye the same to our charge: for meete it is that he that doth any vnlawful act, or is accessary to the same, should suffer the due penalty and seuer chastisement accordingly as the sacred lawes do prescribe, to be an example for other to abstayne from wicked facts. But hereof what neede I to dispute, wherein the blind may see to bee none offence, because (thankes bee to God) Mayster Aloisio liueth, which declareth the fonde Confession of our vngentil husbandes to bee contrary to trouth? And if so be our husbands in deede had done futch an abhominable enterprise, reason and duety had moued vs to sorrowe and lament them, because they be borne of noble blood, and be gentlemen of this noble Citty, which like a pure virgin inuiolably doth conferue hir lawes and customes. Great cause I say, had we to lament them, if lyke homicides, and murderers they had spotted their blood with futch fowle bleamish thereby deseruing death, to leaue vs yong Women Widowes in wofull plight. Nowe it behoueth me to speake of the Ielouisie they haue conceyued of vs, for that they were in ech other's Chamber, which truly is the doubtfull knot and scruple that forceth all their disdaine and grieve. This I knowe well is the Nayle that



pierceth their heart: other cause of offence they haue not: who like men not well aduised, without examination of vs and our demeanour, bee fallen into despayre, and like men desperate, haue wrongfully accused themselues: but because I may not consume words in vayne, to stay you by my long discourse from matters of greater importaunce, I humbly beseech you (right excellent prince) to commaunde them to tell what thing it is, which so bitterly doth torment them." Then the Duke caused one of the noble men affis-taunt there, to demaund of them the question: Who answered that the chiefeft occasion was, because they knew their Wyues to be Harlots, whom they supposed to be very honest: and forso-much as they knew them to be futch, they conceyued sorrow and grieffe, which with futch extremity did gripe them at the heart, as not able to sustayne that great Infamy, ashamed to be sene of men, were induced through desire of death to confesse that they neuer did. Mistresse Isotta hearing them say so, began to speak agayne, turning hir selfe vnto them: "Were you offended then at a thyng which yee thought inconuenient and not meete to be done? Wee then haue greatest cause to complayne. Why then sweete Husband went you to the Chamber of mistresse Lucia at that time of the night? What had you to do there? What thing thought you to finde there more than was in your own house? And you Mayster Girolamo, what constraigned you to forsake your Wyue's Bed to come to my Husband's, where no man euer had, or at this present hath to do but himselfe? Were not the Sheetes of the one so white, so fine, neate, and sweete as the other? I am (most noble Prince) fory to declare my Husband's folly, and ashamed that hee should forsake my Bed to go to an other, that did accompt myselfe so well worthy to entertayne hym in myne owne, as the best Wyfe in Venice, and now through his abuse, I abstayne to shewe my selfe amonges the Beautifull, and noble Dames of this City. The lyke misliking of hirselfe is in mistresse Lucia, who (as you see) may be numbred amonges the fayrest. Eyther of you ought to haue bene contented with your Wyues, and not (as wickedly you haue done) to forsake them, to seeke for better breade than is made of Wheate, or for purer Golde than whereof the Angell is made: O worthy deede of yours, that haue the Face to leaue your

owne Wyues, that be comely, fayre, and honest, to seeke after straunge Carrion. O beastly order of Men that cannot conteyne their lust within the boundes of their owne House, but must goe hunt after other Women as Beastes do after the nexte of their kinde that they chaunce vppon. What vile affection possessed your hearts to lust after others Wyfe? You make complaynte of vs, but wee with you haue right good cause to be offended, you ought to bee grieued with your owne disorder, and not with others offence, and thys your affliction patiently to beare, bycause you went about to beguile one an other's Loue, lyke them that be weary, and Glutted with their owne fare, seeking after other daynties more delicate if they were to be founde. But prayfed be GOD and our prouident discretion, if any hurt or shame hath chaunced, the same doth light on you. Moreouer I know no cause why men should haue more liberty to doe euill than we Women haue: albeit through the weaknes and cowardife of our Sexe, yee men will doe what ye list. But ye be now no Lords, nor we Seruaunts, and husbands we do you call, bicaufe the holy Lawes of Matrimony (which was the first Sacrament giuen by GOD to Men after the creation of the Worlde) doe require equall fayth, and so well is the husband bound to the Wyfe as she vnto him. Go to then and make your complaynt: the next Affe or Beast ye meete take hir to be your Wyfe. Why do yee not know that the balance of iustice is equall, and wayeth downe no more of one side than of other? But let vs nowe leaue of to reason of this matter, and come to that for which we be come hither. Two things (most ryghteous Prynce) haue moued vs to come before your maiesty, and all this honourable assembly, which had they not bene, we would haue bene ashamed to shewe our Faces, and lesse presumed to speake or once to open our Lippes in this Noble audience, which is a place only meete for them that be most Expert, and eloquent Orators, and not for vs, to whom the Needle, and Distaffe be more requisite. The first cause that forced vs to come forth of our owne house, was to let you understand that our Husbands be no murderers, as is supposed, neyther of this Gentleman present maister Aloisio, ne yet of any man els: and thereof we haue sufficient and worthy testimony. But herein we neede

not to trauaile mutch, or to vse many wordes: for neyther maister Alosio is slayne, ne any other murdred that is known or manifest hitherto. One thyng resteth, which is that Madonna Lucia and I do humbly beseech youre excellent Maieesty, that youre grace and the authoritye of the right honourable Lords here present, will vouchsafe to reconcile vs to our husbands, that we may obtayne pardon and fauor at their handes, bicause we haue so manifestly made their acts to appeare, and for that we be the offence, and they the Offendours, and yet by their owne occasions, we haue committed the Error (if it may be so termed.) And now to come to the conclusion, I doe remember, sithens I was a Chylde, that I haue heard the Gentlewoman my mother saye (whose soule God pardon) many times vnto me, and other my sisters, and to mistresse Lucia, that was brought vp with vs, being by hir instructed in diuers good and vertuous Lesson, that all the honor a woman can doe vnto hir husband, whereby she beautifieth him and his whole race and family, consisteth in hir honest, chaste, and vertuous lyfe, without which, she oughte rather to die than liue. And that a Gentleman's Wyfe when she hath giuen hir body to the vse of an other man, is the common marke for euery man to point at in the streete where she goeth, hir husband therby incurring reproche and shame, whych no doubt is the greatest iniury and scorne that an honest Gentleman can receiue, and the moste shamefull reproche that can deface his house. Which Lesson we so well remembryng, desirous not to suffer the carelesse and vnbrideled appetites of our husbandes to be vnraigned, and runne at large to some dishonest Ende, by a faithfull and commendable pollicy, did prouide for the mischyeffe that myghte ensue. I neede not heere rehearse the enimytye and debate that manye yeares did raigne betweene our husbandes Fathers, bicause it is knowne to the whole City. Wee too therefore here presente, the Wiues of those noble Gentlemen, brought vp together from oure Cradle, perceiuing the malyce betwene our husbandes, made a vertue of Necessity, deemyng it better for vs to lose our sweete and auncient conuersation, than to mynister cause of disquietnesse. But the nearenesse of our houses would not that naturall hatred shoulde defraude and take away olde ingrafted amity. Wherefore many times

when our Husbands were gone forth, we met together, and talked in our Gardens, betwene whych there is but a slender hedge beset with Primme and Rofes, which commoditie in their absence we did discretly vse. And as sometimes for pleasure we walked with oure husbandes there, ye (shee turninge vnto them) did cast your eyes vpon ech other's wyfe, and were frayghte way in loue, or else perchance you fained your selues to bee, whych espied by vs, many times betwene our selues did deuise vppon the same, and red your amorous letters, and sonnet sent vnto vs. For which disloyalty and treason toward vs your Wyues, we fought no dishonour to youre persons, wee were content to suffer you to bee abused with your fond loue, we blabbed it not abroade to our Goffips, as many leude and fantasticall women bee wont to doe, thereby to rayse flaunder to our husbands, and to sturre vp ill reporte vpon them, whose infirmities it becommeth vs to conceale and hide. We deuised meanes by some other way to let you understand your fault, and did cast vpon you many times right louinge lookes. Which although it were agaynste our owne desire, yet the cause, and full conclusion of the same, was to practise, if it were possible, to make you frendes: But considering that this loue, and allurementes of eyther parts, could not tend to other end, as wee coniectured, but to increase displeasure, and to put the swords into your handes, we therefore consulted, and vniformely in one minde agreed for the appeasinge, and satisfaction of all partes, at sutch nightes as ye fayned to go into diuers places about earnestt affayres as yee alleaged, Mistresse Lucia with the help of Cassandra my mayde, through the Gardeine came into my chamber, and I by meanes of Iane hir maide by like way repayed vnto hers. And yee poore men guided by our maydes were brought vnto your chambers where ye lay with your owne Wyues, and so by tilth of others land in straunge foyle (as yee beleued) yee lost no labour. And bicause your embracements then, were like to those atchieued by amorous Gentlemen, vsinge vs with more earnestt desire than you were wont to do, both wee were begotten with childe: which ought to be very gladfome, and gratefull vnto you, if yee were so fayne to haue children as yee shewed your selues to bee. If then none other offence doth grieue you, if remorse of Conscience for other cause doeth not

offend you, if none other forrowe doeth displeafe you : giue ouer your grieffe. Remit your displeafure. Beglad, and ioyfull. Thanke vs for our pollicy and pleafaunt difport that wee made you. If hitherto yee haue ben enimies, henceforth be frends, put of that auncient mallice fo long continued, mitigate your hatefull moode, and liue yee from henceforth like friendly Gentlemen, yelde vp your rancor into the lap of your Countrey, that fhee may put him in exile for euer, who like a pitifull, and louing mother woulde gladly fee all hir children of one accorde and minde. Which if yee doe, (ye shall do fingulare pleafure to your friendes), ye shall doe great difcomfort to your foes, yee shall do fingular good to the commonwealth, yee shall doe greateft benefit to your felues, ye shall make vs humble Wyues, yee shall encrease your pofterity, yee shall be prayfed of all men, and finally shall depart the beft contented that euer the World brought forth. And now becaufe yee shall not thinke that wee haue picked out thys Tale at our fingers ends, thereby to feeke your fauegard and our owne Fame, and prayfe, beholde the letters which you fent vs, beholde you owne handes fubfcribed to the fame, beholde your feales affigned thereunto, which shall render true teftimony of that which vnfaynedly we haue affirmed." Then both deliuered their letters, which viewed and feene, were well knowne to be their owne husbandes handes, and the fame fo well approued hir tale, as their husbandes were the gladdeft men of the world and the Duke and Seignory maruaylously fatifed and contented. In fo mutch as the whole affembly with one voyce, cried out for their husbandes deliuerance. And fo with the confent of the Duke and the whole feignory they were clearely difcharged. The Parents, Cofins, and Friends of the husbandes and wyues were wonderfully amazed to heere this long hyftory, and greatly prayfed the maner of their deliury, accoumpting the women to be very wife, and miftrefse Ifotta to be an eloquent gentlewoman, for that fhee had fo well defended the caufe of their husbandes and of themfelues. Anfelmo and Girolamo openly in the prefence of all the people embraced, and kifft their Wyues with great reioyng. And then the husbandes fhaked one an other by the hands, betwene whom began a Brotherly accorde, and from that time forth liued in perfect amity, and

Friendship, exchanging the wanton loue that eyther of them bare to other's wyfe into Brotherly Friendship, to the great delight of the whole Citty. When the multitude assembled, to heare this matter throughly was satisfied, the Duke with cheerefull Countenance lookinge toward Gifmonda, sayde thus vnto hir: "And you fayre Gentlewoman, what haue you to say: Bee bolde to vtter your minde, and wee wil gladly heare you." Mistresse Gifmonda bashfull to speake, began wonderfully to blush, into whose cheekes entred an orient rud, intermixed with an alabafter white, which made her countenance more amiable than it was wont to be. After she had stode still a while with hir eyes declined towards the ground, in comly wise lifting them vp againe with shamefast audacity she began thus to speake: "If I most Noble Prince, in open audience should attempt to discourse of Loue, whereof I neuer had experience, or knew what thing it was, I should be doubtfull what to say thereof, and peradventure durst not open my mouth at al. But hearing my father (of worthy memory) many times to tel that your maiefty in the time of your youth disdained not to open your heart to receiue the amorous flames of loue, and being assured that there is none but that doth loue little or mutch, I do not doubt but for the words which I shal speake, to obtaine both pity and pardon. To come then to the matter: God I thanke him of his goodnesse, hath not permitted me to be one of those women, that like hipocrites do mumble their Pater-noster to saincts: appearing outwardly to be devout and holy and in Fruict doe bring forth Deuils, and al kinds of vices, specially ingratitude, which is a vice that doth suck and dry vp the fountain of godly Piety. Life is deare to mee (as naturally it is to all) next which I esteeme myne honor, which is to be preferred before life, bicause without honor life is of no regard. And where man and woman do liue in shame notorious to the world, the same may be termed a liuing death rather than a life. But the loue that I beare to mine onely beloued Aloisio here present, I do esteeme aboue al the Iewels and treasures of the world, whose personage I do regard more than mine owne Lyfe. The reason that moueth me thereto is very great, for before that I loued him or euer ment to fixe my mind that way, he dearely regarded me, continually deuising which way he might win and obtain my

loue, sparing no trauel by Night and Day to seeke the same. For which tender affection should I shew myself vnkind and froward? God forbid. And to be playn with your honors, he is more deare and acceptable vnto me, than the balles of mine own eyes, being the chiefeft things that appertain to the furniture of the body of man, without which no earthly thing can be gladfome and ioyful to the sense, and feelinge. Last of all his amorous, and affectionate demonstration of his loue towards me, by declaringe himselfe to be carefull of mine honor, rather more willinge to bestow his owne, than to suffer the same to be touched with the least suspicion of dishonesty, I can not choose, but so faythfully imbrace, as I am ready to guage my life for his sake, rather than his finger shoulde ake for offence. And where hath there bene euer found futch liberality in any louer? What is he that hath bene euer so prodigall, to employ his life (the most speciall pledge in this worlde,) rather than hee would suffer his beloued to incurre dishonoure? Many hystories haue I red, and Chronicles of our time, and yet I haue found few or none comparable vnto thys Gentleman, the like of whom be so rare and seldome as white Crowes, or Swannes of colour blacke. O singuler liberality, never hearde of before. O fact that can neuer be sufficiently prayfed. O true loue most vnfayned. Maister Aloisio rather than he would haue my fame any one iote to be impayred, or to suffer any shadow of suspicion to blemish the same, frankly hath confessed himselfe to be a theefe, and murdrer, regardinge mee and mine honor more than himselfe, and life. And albeit that he might a thousand wayes haue saued himselfe without the imprisonment and aduersity which he hath sustayned: neuerthelesse after he had sayd, beinge then past remembrance through the fall, that he fell downe from my window, and perceyued how much that confession would preiudice and hurt my good name, and hurt the known honesty of the same, of his good wyll did chose to dye rather than to speake any words that might breede yll opinion of mee, or the least thinge of the worlde that might ingender infamy and slander. And therefore not able to reuoke the words hee had spoken of the fall, nor by any meanes coulde coloure the same, hee thought to saue the good name of another by his owne hurt. If he then thus redily and liberally hath protruded his life into manifest daunger

for my benefite and faueguard, preferring mine honour about the care of himselfe, shall not I abandon all that I haue, yea and therewithall hazard mine honor for his saluation? But what? Shall I difdayne bountifully to imploy my selfe and all the endeour of my Frenedes for his deliuey? No, no (my Lords) if I had a thousand liues, and so many honors at my commaundement, I woulde giue them al for his releyse and comfort, yea if it were possible for me to recouer a fresh x.c.m. lyues, I woulde so frankly bestow them all, as euer I desired to liue, that I might enioy mine owne Aloisio. But I am sorry, and euer shall be sorry, for that it is not lawful for me to do more for him, than that which my power and possibility is able. For if he should die, truly my life could not endure: if he were deprived of life, what pleasure should I haue to liue in this world after him: whereby (moste honorable and righteous iudge,) I beleue before the honest, not to loose any one iote of myne honor, because I being (as you may see) a younge Woman and a Widow desirous to marry againe, it is lawful for me to loue and to bee beloued, for none other intent (whereof God is the onely iudge) but to attaine a husbände according to my degre. But if I should lose my reputation and honor, why should not I aduenture the same for hym, that hath not spared hys own for me? Now to come to the effect of the matter, I do say wyth al dutifull reuerence, that it is an accusation altogether false and vntrue, that euer mayster Aloisio came to my house as a Theefe against my wil. For what neede he to be a theefe, or what nede had he of my goodes, that is a Lorde and owner of twenty times so much as I haue? Alas good Gentleman, I dare depose and guage my lyfe, that he neuer thoughte much lesse dyd any robbery or thing vnlawful, wherewith iustly he may be charged, but he repayed to my house with my consent, as a louing and affectionate Louer, the circumstance whereof, if it be duly marked, must aduouch the same to be of trouth infallible. For if I had not giuen him licence to come, how was it possible for him to conuey his ladder so high, that was made but of Ropes, and to fasten the same to the iahme of the window, if none within did helpe hym? Againe, howe could the Window of the Chamber be open at that time of the night, which is still kept shut, if it had not bene by my consent? But



I with the helpe of my mayde threwe downe to him a little Rope, whereunto he tyed his Ladder and drewe the same vp, and making it so fast, as it could not vndo, gaue a signe for him to Mounte. But as both our ill Fortune would haue it, before I could catch any hold of him, to mine inestimable grieffe and hart's sorrow he fell downe to the ground. Wherefore (my Lords) I beseech your honours to reuoke the confession wherein he hath made hymselfe to be a theefe. And you maister Aloisio declare the truth as it was, sith I am not ashamed in this honourable assemblie to tel the same. Beholde the letters (my Lordes) which so many tymes he wrote vnto me, wherein hee made suite to come to my speache, and continually in the same doth call me Wyfe. Beholde the Ladder, which till nowe, did still remayne in my chamber. Beholde my maide, whych in all mine affayres, is as it were myne owne hande and helper." Aloisio being hereupon demaunded by the Lordes of the articles, which she in hir tale had recited, confessed them al to be true: who also at the same instant was discharged. The Duke greatly commended them both, hir for hir stout audacity, in defence of an innocent Gentleman, and him for his honour, and modesty, by seeking to preferue the Fame and good reporte of a vertuouse Gentlewoman. Whych done, the Counsell disassembled and brake up. And the friendes of both the parties accompanied them home to the house of mistresse Gismonda, where to the great reioyce, and pleasure of all men, they were solemnelly married in sumptuous and honourable wise, and Aloisio with hys Wyfe lyued in great prosperity long time after. Mistresse Lucia, and mistresse Isotta, at the expyred tyme were deliuered of two goodly sonnes, in whom the Fathers tooke great Ioy, and delight. Who wyth their Wyues after that tyme liued very quietly, and well, one louing an other like naturall Brethren, many times sporting among themselues discretely at the deceipts of their Wyues. The wisdome of the Duke also was wonderfully extolled and commended of all men, the fame whereof was increased and bruted throughout the Region of Italy. And not without cause. For by hys prudence and aduise, the Dominion of the State, and Common wealth was amplified and dilated. And yet in th'ende being old and impotent, they vnkindly deposed him from his Dukedom.

## THE TWENTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

*The Lorde of Virle, by the commaundement of a fayre younge Wydow called Zilia, for hys promise made, the better to attaine hir loue, was contented to remayne dumbe the space of three yeares, and by what meanes he was reuenged, and obtayned hys suite.*

THEY that haue spent their youth in humayne follies, and haue followed the Vanities of loue, not addicted to the contemplation of high secrets, nor haue made entry here on Earth, to inlarge and amplyfy the boundes of their honor and Estimation. Those Worldlings (I say) and embracers of tranfitory pleasures, shall witnesse with me, and confirme, this olde and auncient Theme and proposition to be true which is: that the Beauty, and comely grace of a Woman, is the very true and naturall adamant (for the attractiue power, and agreeable quality there inclosed,) to draw vnto it the hearts, and affections of men: which hath made man beleue, that the same onely effence, was sent downe from aboue to serue both for ioy and torment together. For the amplyfyinge of which proposition, I will not bring forth, the immoderate loue of Paris by forsaking his owne Natiue country of Troy, to visite fayre Helena in Greece, nor yet tell how Hercules gaue ouer his mace to handle the Distaffe, vpon the commaundement of Omphale, nor yet how Sampson and Salomon were fotted in the flaueries of Dalida and other concubines. But my discourse here folowing shall ring out a loud Peale, of a meane Gentlewoman, of Piedmount, that shewed no fauor or Curtesy at all to her suppliant, a Gentleman not inferior to Paris for his actiuity and prowesse: which for her seruice and atchyeues of her loue, refused not to bee dombe the space of many yeares, and to giue ouer the best porcion of his senses wherewith the Almighty, made Man differente from brute and sauage Beastes. If this thing declare not sufficiently the force and power of that attractiue and drawing power in woman, no other example is worthy to be preferred. Those aforelayd and many other haue voluntarily yoked themselves in the chains of loue's obedience, rendreth the masse of

their mirye corps to the flauery thereof, but that any haue franckely tyed vp their Tongue, the chiefeft Instrumēt of the bodies furniture: in honorable affembly or where dexterity of feruice shoulde make him glorious, the like of that subiectiō was neuer seene or founde. And yet our fathers dayes did see this miracle wrought by a Woman, vpon a Gentleman very wise, and well trained vp in all good exercyse. This example, and what this Malapert Dame did gaine, by the penance of this louing knight, shal in this discourse be manifestly pronounced. The City of Thurin (as is well knowne to them that haue trauelled Piedmont) is the ornament and bulwark of al the Countrey, so well for the natural site of the place, as for the artificial and industrious worke of man's hande, which hath instaured and furnished with great magnificence, that which nature had indifferently enryched, for the rudenesse and litle knowledg of the time past. Now besides this stately and strong city, there standeth a litle towne named Montcall, a place no lesse strong, and of good defence, than wel planted in a faire and rich soyle. In this Towne there dwelt a Gentlewoman a widow called Zilia, beautiful amongs the most excellent fayre Gentlewomen of the countrey, which country (besides other happy and heauenly influences) seemeth to be specially faouored, for hauing the most fairest and curteous Gentlewomen, aboue any other within the compasse of Europa. Notwithstanding this faire Silia, degenerating from the nature of hir climate was so haggard and cruel, as it might haue ben thought, she had ben rather nourished and brought vp amid the most desert mountaines of Sauoy, than in the pleafant and rich Champian Countreye, watred and moystened with Eridanus, the father of Riuers, at this Day called the Pau, the largenesse whereof doth make men to maruel, and the fertility allureth ech man to be desirous to inhabit vpon the same. This fayre rebellious Widow, albeit, that she was not aboue xxiv. or xxv. yeres of age, yet protested neuer more to be subiect to man, by mariage, or otherwise, thinking her selfe wel able to liue in single life: a Minde truly very holy and commendable, if the pricks of the flesh do obey the first motions and adhortations of the spirit, but where youth, pleafure, and multitude of suters do adresse their endeouour

againſt that chaſtity (which is lightly enterpryſed) the Apoſtels counſel oughte to be followed, who willeth yong widows to marry in Chriſt, to auoid the temptations of the fleſh, and to flye offenſiue ſlaunder and diſhonour before men. This miſtreſſe Zilia (hir huſband being dead) only bent hir ſelfe to enrich hir houſe, and to amplify the poſſeſſion of a little infant which ſhe had by hir late departed Huſband. After whoſe death ſhe became ſo couetous, as hauing remoued, and almoſt cut of quite the wonted port ſhe vſed in hir huſband's dayes, employed hir maids in houſhold affaires, thinking nothing to be wel don that paſſed not through hir owne Handes. A thinge truely more prayſe worthy, than to ſee a forte of effeminate, fine and daynty fyingred Dames, that thinke their honor diminifhed yf they holde but their Noſe ouer theyr Houſholde Matters, where theyr Hande and Dylygence were more requiſite, for ſo mutch as the myſtreſſe of a Houſe is not placed the Cheyfe to heare onely the reaſons of them that Labor, but thereunto to put hir hands, for hir preſente eye ſeemeth to giue a certyn perfection to the worke that the Seruauntes doe by hir commaundement. Which cauſed the Hyſtoryans in tymes paſt, to deſcribe vnto the Poſterity a Gentlewoman called Lucretia, not babbling amongs young girles, or running to feaſtes and Maigames, or Masking in the night, withoute any regard of the honor and dygnitye of hir race and houſe, but in hir Chaumber Sowing, Spinning and Carding, amids the Troup of hir Mayden Seruauntes: wherein our miſtreſſe Zilia paſſed the moſte part of hir time, ſpending no minute of the day, without ſome honeſt exerciſe, for that ſhe the rather did for that ſhe liked not to be ſeene at Feaſts, or Bankets, or to be gadding vp and downe the ſtreetes, wandring to Gardeyns or places of pleaſure, although to refreſh places youth ſometimes may haue their honeſt repayre to refreſh their wearied bodies with vertuous recreation, and thereby reioyce the heauineſſe of their mynde. But this Gentlewoman was ſo ſeuere in following the rigorous, and conſtrayned maners of our auncients, as impoſſible it was, to ſee hir abroad: except it were when ſhe went to the Church to heare deuine ſeruice. This Gentlewoman ſeemed to haue ſtudied the diuinity of the Ægyptians which paynt Venus holding a key before hir mouth, and ſetting

hir Fote vpon a Tortus, signifying vnto us thereby the duety of a chaste Woman, whose tongue ought to bee locked, that shee speak not but in tyme and place, and her feete not straying or wandering, but to keepe hir selfe within the limits of hir owne houle, except it be to serue God, and sometimes to render bounden duety to them which brought them into light. Moreouer Zilia was so religious (I will not say superstitious) and rigorous to obserue customes, as she made it very squeimish and fraung to kisse a Gentleman that met hir, a ciuility which of long time hath bene obserued, and yet remayneth in the greatest parte of the Worlde, that Gentlewomen do welcome straungers and Guests into their houfes with an honest and chaste kisse. Notwithstandinge the institution and profession of this Wyddow had wiped away this poynte of hir youth: whether it were for that she esteemed hirselfe so fayre as all men were vnworthy to touch the vtter partes of so rare and pretious a vessell, or that hir great, and inimitable chastity made hir so straunge, to refuse that which hir duety and honour woulde haue permitted hir to graunt. There chaunced about this time that a Gentleman of the Countrey, called Sir Philiberto of Virle, esteemed to be one of the most valiaunt gentlemen in those parts, repayred vpon an holy day to Montcall, (whose houle was not very farre of the Towne) and being at diuine seruice, in place of occupying his Sence and Mynde in heauenly things, and attending the holy words of a Preacher, which that day declared the worde of God vnto the people, hee gaue himselfe to contemplate the excellent beauty of Zilia, who had put of for a while hir mourninge vayle, that she might the better beholde the good father that preached, and receyue a little ayre, because the day was extreme hot. The Gentleman at the first blushe, when hee sawe that sweete temptation before his eyes, thought himselfe rapt about the thirde heauen, and not able to withdraw his looke, he fed himselfe with the Venome which by little, and little, so feased vpon the foundest parts of hys mynde, as afterwards being rooted in heart, he was in daunger still to remayne there for a Guage, wythout any hope of ease or comforte, as more amply this followinge discourse, shall giue you to vnderstande. Thus all the morning hee behelde the Gentlewoman, who made no more

account of them, that wyth great admiration did behold hir, than they themfelues did of their life, by committing the fame to the handes of a Woman fo cruell. This Gentleman being come home to his lodging enquired what fayre Wyddow that was, of what calling, and behaiour, but hee heard tell of more truly than he would of good will haue known or desired to haue ben in hir, whom he did presently chose to be the only mistresse of his most secret thoughts. Now vnderstandynge well the stubburne Nature, and vnciuile Manner of that Wyddowe, hee coulde not tell what parte to take, nor to what Sainct to vow his Deuotion, to make suite vnto hir hee thought it tyme lost, to bee hir Seruaunt, it was not in his power, hauing already inguaged his Lyberty into the handes of that beauty, whych once holding captiue the hearte of men, will not infraunchise them so soone as Thought and Wyll desire. Wherefore bayting hymself with hope, and tickled wyth loue, he determined whatfoeuer chaunced, to loue hir, and to affay if by long seruice he could lenifie that harde hearte, and make tender that vnpliaunt wyll, to haue pittie vppon the payne which shee saw him to endure, and to recompence hys laboursoine Trauayles, which hee thought were vertuously employed for gayning of hir good grace. And vpon this settled deliberation, he retired agayne to Virle (so was his house named) where disposinge hys things in order, he returned agayne to Montcall to make his long resiaunce there, to put in readines his furniture, and to welde his artillery with futch industry, as in the ende he might make a reasonable breach to force and take the place: for surprising whereof, hee hazarded great daungers, the rather that himselfe might first be taken. And where his assaults and pollicies could not preuayle, hee minded to content his Fancy wyth the pleasure and pastyme that hee was to receyue in the contemplation of a thing so fayre, and of an image so excellent. The memory of whom rather increased his paine than yelded comfort, did rather minister corrosiue poyson, than giue remedy of ease, a cause of more cruell and sodayne death, than of prolonged lyfe. Philiberto then being become a citizen of Montcal, vsed to frequent the Church more than hee was wont to doe, or his deuotion serued hym, and that bycause he was not able elsewhere to enioy

the prefence of hys Saynct, but in places and Temples of Deuotion : which no doubt was a very holy and worthy Difpofition, but yet not meete or requifite to obserue futch holy places for thofe intentes, which ought not to bee prophaned in things fo fonde and foolifhe, and Actes fo contrary to the Inftitution, and mynde of thofe, whych in tymes paff were the firfte Founders and Erectours of Temples. Seignior Philiberto then mooued wyth that Religious Superftition, made no Confcience at al to fpeake vnto hir wythin the Church. And true it is, when ſhe went out of the fame, he (mooued wyth a certayne familiar curteſie, naturall to eche Gentleman of good bringing vp) many tymes conducted hir home to hir houſe, not able for all that (what ſo euer hee ſayd) to win the thing that was able to ingender any little ſolace, which greeued him very much : for the cruell woman fained as though ſhe vnderſtoode nothing of that he ſayde, and turnyng the Wayne agaynſt the Oxen, by contrary talke ſhee began to tell hym a tale of a Tubbe, of matters of hir Houſeholde, whereunto hee gaue ſo good heede, as ſhee did to the hearing of his complaynts. Thus theſe two, of diuers Affections, and mooued wyth contrary thoughtes, ſpake one to another, without apt aunſwere to eyther's talke. Whereby the Gentleman conceyed an affured argument of hys Ruine, who voyde of all hope, and meanes, practiſed with certayne Dames of the Citty, that had familiar acceſſe vnto hyr houſe, and vſed frequent conuerſation wyth hys rebellious Lady Zilia. To one of them, then hee determind to communicate hys ſecrets, and to doe hir to vnderſtand in deede the only cauſe that made him to ſoiorne at Montcall, and the grieſe which he ſuffered, for that he was not able to diſcouer his torment vnto hir, that had giuen him the wounde. Thys Gentleman therefore, repayred to one of his neyghbours, a Woman of good corage, which at other tymes had experimented what meates they feede on that fit at Venus Table, and what bitterneſſe is intermingled amid thoſe drinckes that Cupido quaffeth vnto hys Gueſtes. Vnto whom (hauing before coniuered hir to keepe cloſe that whych hee woulde declare) he diſcouered the ſecrets of hys mynde, expreſſinge hys loue wythout naming hys Lady before he heard the aunſwere of hys Neyghbour, who vnderſtanding almoſt to what purpoſe the

affections of the Pacient were directed, sayd vnto hym: "Sir, needful it is not to vse longe orations, the loue that I beare you for the honest qualities whych hytherto I haue knowne to be in you, shall make me to keepe silent, that whereof as yet I do not know the matter, and the affuraunce you haue, not to bee abused by mee, constrayneth me to warrant you, that I wyll not spare to do you all the pleasure and honest seruice I can." "Ah mistresse," (aunswered sir Philiberto) "so long as I lyue, I will not fayle to acknowledge the Liberality of your endeouour by offeringe your selfe patiently to heare, and secretly, to keepe the Words I speake accordingly as they deserue: and that (whych is more than I require) you doe assure me that I shall finde futch one of you as wil not spare to giue your ayde. Alas, I resemble the good and wyse Captayne, who to take a forte doeth not only ayde himselfe with the forwardnesse, and valiaunce of his Souldiers, but to spare them, and to auoyde slaughter for makinge of way, planteth his cannon, and battereth the Walle of the fort, which hee would affaile, to the intent that both the Souldier, and the ordinaunce may perourme and suffise the perfection of the plat, which hee hath framed and deuised within his pollitike heade. I haue already encouraged my souldiers, and haue lost the better part truly in the skirmish which hath deliuered vnto mee my sweete cruell Ennemy. Now I am driuen to make ready the fire, which resteth in the kindled match of your conceiptes, to batter the fort hitherto inexpugnable, for any assault that I can make." "I vnderstand not" (sayd she smilyng) "these labyrinths of your complaynts, except you speake more playn. I neuer haunted the Warres, ne knewe what thynge it is to handle weapons, improper and not seemely for myne estate and kynde." "The Warre" (quod he) whereof I speake, is so naturall and common, as I doubt not, but you haue sometymes assayed, with what sleightes and camisados men vse to surpryse their enemies, howe they plant their ambushes, and what meanes both the assaylant and defendant ought to vse." "So far as I see" (sayd shee) "there resteth nothing for vs, but the assurance of the field, sith wee bee ready to enter in combat: and doe thinke that the fort shall not bee harde to winne, by reason of the Walles, dikes, rampers, bulwarks,



platformes, counterforts, curtines, vamewres and engins which you haue prepared, besides a numbre of false brayes and flanks, placed in good order, and the whole defended from the thundring Cannons and Bombardes, which do amaze the wandring enemy in the field. But I pray you leauing these warlike Tumults, to speake more boldly without these extrauagantes and digressions, for I take pitye to see you thus troubled: ready to exceede the boundes of your modesty and wonted wyfedom." "Do not maruell at all mistresse" (quod he) "sith accordynge to new occurrentes and alterations, the purpose, talke, and counsel ordinarily do change I am become the seruaunt of one which maketh me altogether lyke vnto those that bee madde, and bound in Chaines, not able to speake or say any thing, but what the spyrites that be in them, do force them to vtter. For neither will I thynke, or speake any thing, but that which the Enchaunter Loue doth commaunde and suffer to expresse, who so rygorously doth vexe my hearte, as in place wher bouldenesse is most requysite, hee depriueth me of force, and leaueth mee without any Countenance. And being alone, God knoweth how frankly I doe wander in the place, where myne enemy may commaunde, and with what hardinesse I do inuade hir prouince. Alas, is it not pity then to see these diuersties in one selfe matter, and vpon one very thing? Truely I would endure wyllingly all these trauailes, if I wyft in the end, my seruice woulde be accepted, and hoped that my Martirdome shoulde fynde releefe: but liuing in this vncertainty, I must needs norysh the hunger and folace of the vnhappy, which are wishes and vaine hopes, trusting that some God wyll gayne me a faythful friend that will assaye to rid me from the hell, into the which I am throwne, or else to shorten thys Miserable lyfe, which is a hundred tymes more paynfull than Death." In sayinge so, he began to fighe so straungely as a man would haue thought that two Smithes sledges working at the forge, had gyuen two blowes at his stomake, so vehement was the inclosed winde within his heart, that made him to fetch forth those terrible fighes, the Eyes not forgetting to yeld forth a Riuer of Teares, which gushynge forthe at the centre of hys Hearte, mounted into his Braynes, at lengthe to make issue through the Spoute, proper to the Chanell

of futch a Fountayne. Which the Gentlewoman feyng, moued with compaffion, coulde not contain alfo from Weepyng, and therewythall fayde vnto him: "Although mine eftate and reputation, which to this day I have kept vnfpotted, defend the vfe of my good wyl in al things that may defame mine honor, yet fir, feing the extremity which you fuffer to be vnfained, I wil fomewhat fretch my confcience, and affay to fuccor you with fo good heart, as frankely you trust me with the secrets of your thought. It refteth then now for me to know what ſhe is, to whome your deuocions be inclined whoſe heart and mind I wil fo relief with the taſte of your good wil, as I dare giue warrant, her appetit ſhal accept your profred ſeruiſe, and truly that woman may count her ſelf happy that ſhal intertain the offer of a gentleman that is fo honeſt and curteous, who meaneth with al fidelity to aduance and honor, not onely the ſuperficial ornament of hir beauty, but the inward vertues of hir conſtant mind. And truly the earth feldom yeldeth thoſe frutes in the harts of men in theſe our barren days, they being ouer growen with the ſhrubbes of diſloyalty the ſame choke vp the plantes of true Fidelity, the ſedes whereof are ſowen and replanted in the ſoyle of womens hartes, who not able to depart and vſe the force and effects thereof will put vpon them conditions that bee cruell, to puniſh the Foolyſh indifcretion of tryſling Louers, who diſguiſed with the vizard of fained friendſhip, and paynted with coloured Amity, languiſhing in ſighes and forrowes, goe aboute to affay to deceiue the flexible Nature of them that prodigally employ theyr honor into the hands of futch cruel, inſtante and foolyſh futers." "Ah Miſtreſſe" answered the Gentleman: "howe may I bee able to recompence that onely benefite which you promyſe me now? But be ſure that you ſee heere a Souldier and Gentleman preſente which ſhall no leſſe bee prodigall of hys Lyfe to doe you ſeruyce, than you bee lyberall of your reputation, to eaſe his Paines. Now ſith it pleaſeth you to ſhew futch fauour to offer me your helpe and ſupport in that which payneth me, I require no more at your hands, but to beare a letter which I ſhall wryte to myſtreſſe Zilia, with whome I am fo farre in loue, as if I do receiue no ſolace of my grieſe, I know not howe I ſhall auoyde the cutting of the Threede, which the

fpynning syfters haue twifted to prolonge my lyfe, that henceforth can receiue no fuccor if by your meanes I do not atchieue the thing that holdeth me in bondage." The Gentlewoman was very forrowful, when ſhe vnderſtoode that Seignior Philiberto had bent his Loue vpon futch one, as would not conſente to that requeſte, and mutch leſſe would render reſt vnto hys myſeryes, and therefore enforced hir ſelfe to moue that Foolyſhe Fantafye out of his head. But he beyng already reſolued in thys myſhappe, and the ſame perceyued by her in the ende ſhe ſayde: "To the intente fir that you may not thynke that I doe meane to excuſe the Satyffactyon of my promyſe, make youre Letters, and of my Fayth I wil delyuer them. And albeyt I knowe verye well what bee the Honoures and Glorye of that Pylgryme, yet I wyll render to you agayne the true aunfwere of hir ſpeache whereby you maye conſider the gayne you are lyke to make, by purſuing a Woman (although faire) of ſo ſmall deſert." The Gentleman fayled not to gyue her heartye Thankes, prayinge hir to tarry vntyll hee had written his letters: whereunto ſhe moſt willingly obeyed. He then in his chaumber, began to fantaſie a hundred hundred matters to write vnto his Miſtreſſe, and after he had fixed them in minde tooke Incke and Paper writing as followeth.

*The Letters of Seignior Philiberto of Virle, to Miſtreſſe Zelia of Montcall.*

"The paſſion extreeme which I endure, (Madame) through the feruent loue I beare you, is futch, as beſides that I am affured of the little affection that reſteth in you towards me agayne, in reſpect of that incredible feruitude which my deſire is ready to employ, I haue no power to commaunde my force, ne yet to rid my ſelfe from my vowed deuotion and will to your incomparable beauty, although euen from the beginning I felt the pricks of the mortall ſhot which now torments my mynde. Alas, I do not know vnder what influence I am borne, nor what Fate doth guide my yeares, ſith I doe perceyue that heauen, and loue, and hir whom alone I honor, doe confirme themſelues with one aſſent to ſeeke myne ouerthrow. Alas, I thinke that all the powers aboue conſpired together, to make me be the faythfull man, and perpetuall

feruaunt of you my mistresse deare, to whom alone, I yelde my heart afflicted as it is, and the ioy of hidden thoughts nourfed in my minde, by the contemplation and remembraunce of your excellent and perfect graces, whereof, if I be not fauored, I waight for death, from whych euen now I fly: not for feare of that whych she can doe, or of the vgly shape which I conceyue to be in hir, but rather to confirme my life, this Body for infrument to exercife the myndes conceypts for doinge your Commaundements, which Body I greatly feare shall proue the vnworthy cruelty, both of your gentle nouriture, and of those graces which Dame Nature most abundantly hath powred in you. Be sure Madame that you shall shortlye see the Ende of him, which attendeth yet to beare so much as in him doeth lye, the vehement loue into an other world, which maketh me to pray you to haue pity on him, who (attending the rest and final sentence of his Death or Lyfe) doth humbly kisse your white and delicate handes, beseeching God to giue to you like ioy as his is, who desireth to be,

Wholy yours or not to be at all

PHILIBERTO OF VIRLE.

The Letter written, clofed and sealed, he deliuered to his neighbour, who promysed hym agayne to bryng him answere at Night. Thus this Messenger went hir way, leauing this pore languishyng Gentlemen hoping against hope, and fayning by and by some ioy and pleasure, wherein he bained himself with great contented minde. Then sodaynly he called againe vnto remembraunce, the cruelty and inciuality of Zilia, which shewed before his eyes so many kindes of Death, as tymes he thought vpon the same, thinking that he saw the choler wherewith his little curteous mistresse furiously did intertaine the messenger, who findinge Zilia coming forth of a garden adioining to her house, and hauing saluted her, and receiued like curteous salutation would haue framed hir talke, by honest excuse in the vnsemely charge and message: to hir vnto whom she was sent, and for some ease to the pore gentleman which approached nearer death than life. But Zilia break of hir talke saying: "I maruell much Gentle neighbor to see you heere at this time of the day, knowing your honest custome is to let passe no minute of the tyme, except it be employed in some vertu-

ous exercife.” “Mistrefse” answered the meffanger, “I thank you for the good opinion you haue of me, and doe pray you to continue the fame. For I do assure you that nothinge vayne or of lyttle effect hath made me flacke my businesse at this time, which me think I do not forflow, when I inforce my selfe to take pitye and mercy vpon the afflicted and the substaunce thereof I woulde difclose, if I feared not to offend you, and break the loue which of long tyme betweene vs two hath ben frequented.” “I know not” (said Zilia) “whereunto your words do tend, although my Hearthe doth throbbe, and minde doth moue to make mee thinke your purposed talke to bee of none other effecte, than to fay a thing which may redound to the preiudice of myne honour. Wherefore I pray you do not difclose what shall be contrary, (be it neuer so little) to the duety of Dames of our Degree.” “Mystrefse” sayd the Neighbour, “I suppose that the lyttle Lykelihooode touchyng in you the thinge for the helpe whereof I come, hath made you feele some passion, contrary to the greefe of him that indures so much for your sake. Vnto whome without feare of your dyspleasure, I gaue my Faithe in Pledge to beare this Letter.” In saying so, she drewe the same out of hir Bosome, and presentyng it to cruell Silia, shee sayde: “I beseeche you to thynke that I am not ignoraunt of the evyll wherewyth the Lorde of Virle is affected, who wrote these letters. I promysed him the duety of a Messanger towards you: and so constrained by promyse I could doe no lesse, than to delyuer you that which hee doeth sende, with Seruyce futch as shall endure for euer, or yf it shall please you to accept him for futch a one as hee desireth to be. For my parte I onelye praye you to reade the Contentes, and accordynglye to gyue mee Aunswere: for my Fayth is no further bounde, but trustelye to report to hym the thinge whereuppon you shall bee resolued.” Zilia which was not wonte to receyue very ofte futch Ambassades, at the firste was in mind to breake the Letters, and to retourne the Messanger wythout aunswere to hir shame. But in the Ende takyng Heart, and chaunging hir affectyon, she red the Letters not without shewing some very great alteration outwardely, which declared the meanyng of hir thought that diuersly did fryue wythin hir mynde: for sodaynly shee

changed her Coloure twyce or thryce, nowe waxing pale lyke the increafynge Moone Eclypfed by the Sunne, when ſhee feeleth a certayne darkenyng of hir borrowed Lyghte, then the Vermylon and coloured Taynte came into hir Face agayne, wyth no leffe hewe than the blomed Roſe newelye budded forthe, whych Encreafed halfe ſo mutch agayne, the excellencye of that wherewyth Nature had indued hir. And then ſhe pauſed a whyle. Notwythſtandynge, after that ſhee had red, and red agayne hir Louer's letter, not able to diſſemble hir fooliſhe anger which vexed hir heart, ſhee fayde vnto the miſtreſſe meſſanger: "I would not haue thought that you, being a woman of good fame would (by abufinge your duety,) haue bene the ambaffador of a thing ſo vncomely for your Eſtate, and the houſe where of you come, and towards me which neuer was futch one (ne yet pretend to be.) And truſt me it is the loue I beare you, which ſhall for this tyme make me diſſemble what I thincke, referuing in ſilence, that whych (had it come from an other) I would haue publiſhed to the great diſhonour of hir that maketh ſo little accoumpt of my chaſtity. Let it ſuffice therefore in tyme to come for you to thinke and beleue, that I am chaſte and honeſt: and to aduertife the Lord of Virle to proceede no further in his ſute: for rather will I dy, than agree to the leaſt poynt of that which hee defires of mee. And that he may knowe the ſame, be well affured that hee ſhall take his leaue of that priuate talke which ſometimes I vſed with him to my great diſhonor, as far as I can ſee. Get you home therefore, and if you loue your credit ſo mutch, as you ſee me curious of my chaſtity, I beſeech you vſe no further talke of hym, whom I hate ſo mutch, as his folly is exceſſiue, for I do little eſteeme the amorous Toyes and fayned paſſions, whereunto futch louinge fooles doe ſuffer themſelues to be caried headlong." The meſſenger aſhamed to heare hir ſelfe thus pinched to the quicke, aunſwered hir very quietly without mouing of hir pacience: "I pray to God (miſtreſſe) that he may recouer the different diſeaſe al moſt incurable in eyther of you twayne, the ſame being ſo vehement, as altered into a phrenefie, maketh you in this wyſe, incapable of reaſon." Finiſhing theſe wordes ſhe tooke hir leaue of Zilia, and arriued to the Louer's houſe, ſhe founde him

lying vpon his bed, rather dead than a liue: who feeling his neyghbor returned backe agayne, with Face so fadde, not taryng for the aunfwere which she was about to make, he began to say: "Ah infortunate Gentleman, thou payest wel the vfury of thy pleafures paff when thou diddest lyue at lyberty, free from thofe trauayles which now do put thee to death, without fuffering thee to dy. Oh happy, and more than happy had I ben, if inconstant Fortune had not deuifed this treafon, wherein I am furprifed and caught, and yet no raunfome can redeeme from prifon, but the moft miserable death that euer poore louer fuffred. Ah Miftrefse, I knowe well that Zilia esteemeth not my Letters, ne yet regardeth my loue, I confesse that I haue done you wrong by thus abufing your honeft amity, for the folace of my payne. Ah fickle loue, what foole is hee which doth commit hymselfe to the rage and fury of the Waues of thy foming and tempeftuous Seas? Alas I am entred in, with great, and gladfome cheere, through the gliftering fhew before myne eyes of the faynt fhining Sunne beames, whereunto as foone as I made fayle, the fame denied me light of purpose to thrust me forth into a thousand winds, tempefts, and raging ftormes of Rayne. By meanes whereof I fee no meane at all to hope for end of my mishaps: and mutche leffe the shipwracke that fodainely may rid me from this daunger more intollerable, than if I were ouerwhelmed wythin the bottomleffe depth of the mayne Ocean. Ah deceyuer and wily Souldiour, why haft thou made me enterprife the voyage farre of from thy folitudes and Wilderneffe, to geue me ouer in the middest of my necessity? Is this thy maner towards them which franckly followe thy tract, and pleafauntly fubdue themfelues to thy trayterous follies? At least wyfe if I fawe fome hope of health I would indure without complaynt thereof: yea, and it were a more daungerous tempeft. But O good God, what is he of whom I fpeake? Of whom do I attend for folace and releefe? Of him truly which is borne for the ouerthrow of men. Of whom hope I for health? Of the moft noyſom poyſon that euer was mingled with the subtyleft druggs that euer were. Whom shall I take to be my Patron? He which is in ambush traiterouſly to catch me, that he may martir me worffe than he hath done before. Ah cruell Dame, that meafureft

fo euill, the good will of him that neuer purposed to trespasse the least of thy commaundements. Ah, that thy beauty should finde a Subiect so stubborne in thee, to torment them that loue and honor thee. O maigre and vnkinde recompence, to expell good seruants that be affectionate to a seruice so iust and honest. Ah Basiliske, coloured ouer with pleasure and swetnesse, how hath thy sight disperfed his poyson throughout mine heart? At least wise if I had some drugge to repell thy force, I should liue at ease, and that without this sute and trouble. But I feele and proue that this sentence is more than true :

No phyicke hearbes the grieffe of loue can cure,  
Ne yet no drugge that payne can well assure.

Alas, the feare cloath will not serue, to tent the wound the time shall be but lost, to launch the fore, and to salue the same it breeds myne ouerthrow. To be short, any dressing can not auayle, except the hand of hir alone which gaue the wounde. I woulde to God shee sawe the bottome of my heart, and viewed the Closet of my mynde, that shee might iudge of my firme fayth and know the wrong she doth me by hir rigor and froward will. But O vnhappy man, I feele that she is so resolu'd in obstinate mynde, as hir rest seemeth only to depend vpon my payne, hir ease vpon my grieffe, and hir ioy vpon my sadnesse." And saying so, began straungly to weepe, and sighing betwene, lamented, in so much as, the mistresse messaunger not able to abide the grieffe and paynefull trauayle wherein shee saw the poore gentleman wrapped, went home to hir house: notwithstanding she told afterward the whole successe of his loue to a Gentleman, the friend of Philiberto. Now this Gentleman was a companion in armes to the Lorde of Virle, and a very familiar Freend of his, that went about by all meanes to put away those foolish, and Franticke conceypts out of his fanfie, but hee profited as much by his endeouour, as the passionate gayned by his heauines: who determining to dye, yelded so much to care and grief, as he fell into a greeuous sicknes, which both hindred him from sleepe, and also his Appetite to eate and drinke, geuing himselfe to muse vpon his follies, and fanfied dreames, without hearing or admitting any man to speake



vnto hym. And if perchance hee hearkened to the perswasions of his frends, he ceased not his complaynt, bewayling the cruelty of one, whom he named not. The Phisitians round about were fought for, and they coulde geue no iudgement of his malady (neyther for all the Signes they saw, or any inspection of his Vrine, or touching of his pulse) but sayd that it was melancholie humor distilling from the Brayne, that caused the alteration of his sence: howbeit their Arte and knowledge were void of skil to evacuate the grosse Bloud that was congeled of his diseafe. And therefore dispayryng of his health, with hands full of Money, they gaue him ouer. Which his friend and Companion perceiuing, maruellous forry for his affliction he ceased not to practise all that he could by Letters, gifts, promyses and complaynts to procure Zilia to visite her pacient. For hee was assured that her onely presence was able to recouer him. But the cruell woman excused hir self that she was a Widow and that it shoulde bee vnseemly for one of hir degree (of intente) to visite a Gentleman, whose Parentage and Alliance she knew not. The solliciter of the Lord of Virle his health, seeing how lyttle hys prayers auailed to his implacable gryefe could not tell to what Sainct he might vow himself for Counsell, in the ende resolued to sollicite hir again that hadde done the first Message, that she myght eftsons deuise some meanes to bryng them to speake together. And fynding hir for hys purpose, thus he sayed vnto hir: "Mystrisse I maruell much that you make so little accompt of the pore lorde of Virle who lyeth in his Bedde attending for Death. Alas, if euer pittie had place in Woman's heart, I beseech you to gyue your ayde to help him, the meane of whose recouery, is not ignoraunt vnto you." "God is my witnesse" (quod she) "what trauaile my heart is willing to vndertake to helpe that Gentleman, but in things impossible, it is not in man to determine, or rest assured iudgement. I wil go vnto him and comfort hym so well as I can, that peradventure my Promyses may ease some part of his payne: and afterward we wil at leysure better confider, what is best for vs to do." Herevppon they wente together to see the Patient, that beganne to looke more chearefull than he dyd before: who seeing the Gentlewoman, said vnto hir: "Ah mistres, I would to God I had neuer

proued your fidelity, then had I not felt the passing cruell Heart of hir, that esteemeth more hir honour to practise rigour and tyranny than with gentlenesse to maintaine the Lyfe of a pore feeble knight." "Sir," (said she,) "be of good cheare, doe not thus torment your selfe: for I trust to gyue you remedy betwene thys and to morrowe, and wyll doe myne endeour to cause you to speake with hir, vppon whome wrongfully perchaunce you doe complayne, and who dare not come vnto you, least ill speakers conceiue occasion of suspicion, who wil make the report more slaunderous, then remedie for the cause of your diseafe." "Ah" (sayd the pacient) "howe ioyefull and pleasaunt is your talke? I fee wel that you desire my health, and for that purpose would haue me drinke those liquors, which superficially appeare to bee sweete, which afterwarde may make my lyfe a hundred tymes more faint and feeble than now it is." "Be you there," sayd she? "And I sweare vnto you by my faith not to faile to keepe my promyse, to cause you speake alone with mistresse Zilia." "Alas, mistresse" sayd the louer, "I aske no more at your handes, that I may heare with myne own eares the last sentence of hope or defiance." "Well put your trust in me," sayd she, "and take no thought but for your health. For I am assured ere it be longe, to cause hir to come vnto you, and then you shall see whether, my diligence shall aunfwere the effect of myne attempt." "Me thinke already" (quod he) "that sicknesse is not able to stay me from going to hir that is the cause, sith her onely remembrance hath no lesse force in mee, than the clearnesse of the Sun beames to euaporate the thicknesse of the morning mistes." With that the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue of hym, and went home attendynge oportunitie to speake to Zilia, whome two or three Dayes after she mette at Church, and they two beyng alone together in a Chapell, she sayd vnto hir with fayned Teares, forced from her Eyes, and sending forth a Cloude of sighes, these woordes: "Madame, I nothing doubt at al, but the last Letters which I brought you, made you conceiue some il opinion of me, which I do guesse by the frownyng countenance that euer sithens you haue borne me. But when you shall knowe the hurte which it hath done, I thinke you wyll not be so harde, and voyde of pitye,

but with pacyence hearken that whych I shall faye, and there-  
 wythall bee moued to pitye the state of a pore Gentleman, who  
 by your meanes is in the pangs of death." Zilia, which til then  
 neuer regarded the payne and fickneffe of the patient, began to  
 forrow, with futch paffion, as not to graunt him further fauor  
 than he had already receiued, but to finde some means to ease him  
 of hys gryefe, and then to gyue hym ouer for euer. And there-  
 fore she fayd vnto hir neyghbor: "My good frend, I thought  
 that all thefe futes had beene forgotten, vntill the other day a  
 certen Gentleman praied me to go see the Lord of Virle, who told  
 me as you do now, that he was in great daunger. And now  
 vnderstanding by you that he waxeth worffe, and worffe, I will  
 be ruled, being well affured of your honefty and vertue, and that  
 you will not aduife me to any thing that shall be hurtfull to myne  
 honour. And when you haue done what you can, you shal winne  
 of me fo much as nothinge, and geeue no ease to him at all that  
 wrongfully playneth of my cruelty. For I purpose not to do any  
 priuate fact with him, but that which shall be meete for an honest  
 Gentlewoman, and futch as a faythfull tutor of hir chastity, may  
 graunt to an honest and vertuous Gentleman." "His desire is  
 none other" (fayd the gentlewoman) "for he craueth but your  
 prefence, to let you wit by word, that he is ready to do the thing  
 you shall commaund him." "Alas" fayde Zilia, "it is impossible  
 for me to go to hym without fuspition, which the common people  
 will lightly conceiue of futch light and familiar Behaiour. And  
 rather would I dy than aduenture mine honor hitherto conferved  
 wyth great feuerity and diligence. And yet sith you fay, that he  
 is in extremes of death, for your sake, I wil not ficke to heare him  
 fpeake." "I thanke you" (fayd the Messanger) "for the  
 good wil you beare me and for the help you promife vnto the  
 poore paffionate Gentleman, whom thefe newes wil bring on foote  
 againe, and who al the dayes of his life wil do you honor for that  
 good turne." "Sith it is fo (fayd Zilia) to morrow at noone  
 let him come vnto my houle, wherein a low chamber, he shall  
 haue leysure to fay to mee his mind. But I purpose by God's  
 help, to suffer him no further than that which I haue already  
 graunted." "As it shall please you" (fayd hir neighbour) "for

I craue no more of you but that only fauour, which as a Meffanger of good Newes, I go to shew hym, recommending my felfe in the meane tyme to your commaunde." And then she went vnto the pacient, whom she found walkinge vp and downe the Chaumber, indifferent lusty of his person, and of colour meetely freshe for the tyme hee left his Bed." Now when sir Philiberto saw the Meffanger, hee sayde vnto hir: "And how now mystresse, what Newes? Is Zilia so stubborne as shee was wont to be?" "You may see hir" (sayd she) "if to morrowe at Noone you haue the heart to aduenture to goe vnto hir house." "Is it possible" (sayd hee imbracing hir) "that you haue procured my delyueraunce from the misery, wherewith I haue so long tyme beene affected? Ah trusty and assured frende, all the dayes of my lyfe I wil remember that pleasure, and benefite, and by acknowledging of the same, shall be ready to render like, when you please to commaunde, or els let me be counted the most vncourteous Gentleman that euer made profession of loue: I will go by God's help to see mistresse Zilia, with intent to endure all vexation, wherewith Dame Fortune shall afflicte me, protesting to vex my felfe no more, although I see my wished hap otherwise to ende than my desert requireth. But yet agaynst Fortune to contend, is to warre agaynst my felfe, whereof the Victory can be but daungerous." Thus he passed all the day, which seemed to last a thousand years to hym, that thought to receyue some good intertaynment of hys Lady, in whose Bonds hee was caught before he thought that Woman's malice could so farre exceede, or display hir venomous Sting. And truly that man is voyde of Sense, which suffreth hym felfe so fondly to bee charmed, sith the pearill of others before time abused, ought to serue hym for example. Women be vnto mankinde a greate confusion, and vnwares for want of hys due foresight, it doth suffer it felfe to bee bounde and taken captiue by the very thing which hath no being to worke effect, but by free will. Which Inchauntment of woman's beauty, being to men a pleasaunt displeasure, I thinke to bee decked with that drawinge vertue, and allurement, for chastising of their finnes who once fed and bayted with their fading fauour and poysoned sweetnesse, forget their owne perfection, and noufled in

their foolish Fanfies, they seeke Felicity, and foueraygne delight, in the matter wherein doth lie the summe of their vnhaps. Semblably the vertuous and shamefaste dames, haue not the eyes of their minde so blindfolde, but that they see whereunto those francke seruices, those disloyal Faythes and Vyces coloured and stuffed with exterior vertue, doe tende: Who doubt not also but futch louers do imitate the Scorpion, whose Venome lieth in his Tayle, the ende of which is loue beinge the ruine of good Renoume, and the Decay of former vertues. For which cause the heauens, the Frende of their sexe, haue giuen them a prouidence, which those Gentle, vnfaououred louers terme to be rigor, thereby to proue the deserts of Suters, aswell for their great contentation and prayse, as for the rest of them that do them seruice. Howbeit this iust and modest prouidence, that cruel Gentlewoman practised not in hir louer, the Lord of Virle, who was so humble a seruaunt of his vnkinde mistresse, as his obedience redounded to his great mishap, and folly, as manifestly may appeare by that which followeth. Sir Philiberto then thinking to haue gayned much by hauing made promise, liberally to speake to his Lady, went vnto hir at the appoynted hour, so well contented truely of that grace, as all the vnkindnesse past was quite forgot. Now being come to the Lodging of Mistresse Zilia, he found hir in the deuised place with one of hir maydes attending vpon hir. When she saw him, after a little cold entertaynement, she began to say vnto him with fayned ioy, that neuer mooued hir heart, these woordes: "Now sir, I see that your late sicknesse was not so straunge as I was geeuen to vnderstand, for the good state wherein I see you presently to be, which from henceforth shall make mee beleue, that the passions of Men endure so long as the cause of their affections continue within their fanfies, much like vnto looking Glasses, which albeit they make the equality or excesse of things represented to appeare, yet when the thing seene doth passe, and vanishe away, the formes also do voyde out of remembrance, resembling the wynde that lightly whorleth to and fro through the plane of some deepe valley." "Ah madame" aunswered he, "how easie a matter it is for the grieuelesse person to counterfayt both ioy and dissimulation in one very thing, which not onely

may forget the conceipt that mooueth his affections, but the obiect muſt continually remayne in him, as paynted, and grauen in his minde. Which truly as you ſay is a looking Glaſſe, not futch one for all that, as the counterfayted apparaunce of repreſented formes hath like vigor in it, that the firſt and true ideas and ſhapes can ſo ſoone vaniſh without leauing moſt perfect impreſſion of futch formes within the minde of him, that liueth vpon their onely remembraunce. In this mirror then (which by reaſon of the hidden force I may well ſay to bee ardent and burning) haue I looked ſo well as I can, thereby to form the ſuſtentation of my good hap. But the imagined Shape not able to ſupport futch perfection, hath made the reſt of the body to fayle (weakned through the mindes paſſions) in futch wiſe as if the hope to recouer this better parte halfe loſt, had not cured both, the whole decay of the one had followed, by thinking to giue ſome accompliſhment in the other. And if you ſee me Madame, attayne to ſome good ſtate, impute the ſame I beſeech you, to the good will and fauor which I receiue by ſeeing you in a priuate place, wherein I conceyue greater ioy than euer I did, to ſay vnto you the thing which you would not beleeeue, by woords at other times proceeding from my mouth, ne yet by aduertifement ſignified in my written letters. Notwithſtanding I think that my Martirdome is known to bee futch as euery man may perceyue that the Summe of my deſire is onely to ſerue and obey you, for ſo much as I can receyue no greater comforte, than to be commaunded to make repayre to you, to let you know that I am whole (although giuen ouer by Phifitians) when you vouchſafe to employ me in your ſeruiſe, and thinke my ſelfe rayſed vp agayne from one hundred thouſand deathes at once, when it ſhall pleaſe you to haue pittie vpon the grieſe and paſſion, that I endure. Alas, what cauſeth my miſhap, that the heauenly beauty of yours ſhould make prooſe of a cruelty ſo great? Haue you decreed Madame thus to torment mee poore Gentleman that am ready to ſacrifice myſelfe in your ſeruiſe, when you ſhall impart ſome fauour of your good grace? Do you thinke that my paſſions be diſſembled? Alacke, alacke, the teares which I haue ſhed, the loſſe of luſt to eate and drinke, the weary paſſed nights, the longe contriued ſleepeleſſe tyme the



refleſſe turmoyle of my confumed corps may wel affure that my loyall heart is of better merite than you eſteeme." Then ſeeing hir to fixe hir eyes vpon the ground, and thinkinge that hee had already wonne hir, he reinforced his humble Speache, and Sighing at ſits betwene, not ſparing the Teares, whych trickled downe alongs hys Face, he profecuted his Tale as followeth: "Ah fayre amongs the fayreſt, woulde you blot that ſurpaſſing Beauty with a cruelty ſo furious, as to cauſe the death of him which loueth you better than himſelfe? Ah my withered eyes, which hitherto haue bene ſerued with two liuely ſprings to expreſſe the hidden griefs within the heart, if your vnhap be futch that the only Miſtreſſe of your contemplations, and cauſe of your driery teares, doe force the Humor to encrease, which hitherto in futch wife hath emptied my Brayne, as there is no more in mee to moiſten your drouth, I am content to endure al extremity, vntil my heart ſhal feele the laſt Panguē, that depriueth yee of nourishment, and me of mine affected Ioy." The Gentlewoman, whether ſhee was weary of that Oration, or rather doubted that in the end hir chaſtity would receue ſome aſſault through the diſmeaſured paſſion which ſhe ſaw to continue in him, answered with rigorous words: "You haue talked, and written inough, you haue indifferently well ſolicited hir, whych is throughly reſolued in former minde, to keepe hir honor in that worthy reputation of degree, wherein ſhe maynetayneth the ſame amongs the beſt. I haue hitherto ſuffered you to abuſe my patience, and haue ſhewed that familiarity which they deſerue not that go about leudly to aſſaile the chaſtity of thoſe Women that patiently giue them eare, for the opinion they haue conceiued of the ſhadowing vertues of like fooliſhe Suters. I now doe ſee that all your woordes doe tend to beguile mee, and to depriue mee of that you cannot giue mee: Which ſhal bee a warning for me henceforth, more wiſely to looke about my buſineſſe, and more warely to ſhunne the Charmes of futch as you bee, to the ende that I by bending mine open eares, be not ſurpriſed, and ouercome wyth your enchaunted Speeches. I pray you then for concluſion, that I heare no more hereof, neyther from you, nor yet from the Ambaſſadour that commeth from you. For I neyther will, ne yet pretend to depart to you any

other fauour than that which I haue enlarged for your comfort: but rather doe protest, that so longe as you abide in this Countrey, I will neyther goe forth in streete, nor suffer any Gentleman to haue accessè into this place except he be my neare Kinfman. Thus for your importunat sute, I will chastise my light consent, for harkeninge vnto you in those requefts, which duty and Womanhoode ought not to suffre. And if you do proceede in these your follies, I will seeke redresse according to your desert, which till now I haue deferred, thinking that time would haue put out the ardent heate of your rash, and wanton youth." The infortunate Lord of Virle, hearing this sharpe sentence, remayned long time without speach, so astonned as if he had bene falne from the Clouds. In the ende for al his despayre he replyed to Zilia with Countenance indifferent merry: "Sith it is so madame, that you take from mee all hope to be your perpetuall Seruaunt, and that without other comfort or contentation I must nedes depart your presence, neuer (perchance) hereafter to speake vnto you againe, be not yet so squeimish of your beauty, and so cruell towards your languishing louer, as to deny him a kisse for pledge of his last farewell. I demaund nothing here in secret, but that honestly you may openly performe. It is al that I doe craue at your handes in recompence of the traunayles, paynes, and afflictions suffred for your sake." The malicious dame full of rancor, and spitefull rage sayd vnto him: "I shall see by and by fir, if the loue which you vaunt to beare mee, be so vehement as you seeme to make it." "Ah Madame" (sayd the vnaduised Louer) "commaunde only, and you shall see with what deuotion I will performe your will, were it that it should cost me the price of my proper life." "You shall haue" (quod she) "the kisse which you require of me if you will make promise, and sweare by the fayth of a Gentleman, to do the thinge that I shall commaund, without fraude, couin or other delay." "Madame" (sayd the ouer wilful louer) "I take God to witnesse that of the thing which you shall commaunde I will not leaue one iote vndone, but it shall bee executed to the vttermost of your request and will." She hearing him sweare with so good affection, sayd vnto him smiling: "Now then vpon your oth which I beleue, and being assured of your Vertue and Noble



nature, I will also performe and keepe my promise." And saying so, shee Embraced and kissed him very louingly. The poore Gentleman not knowing how dearely hee had bought that disfaorable curtesie, and bitter sweeteneffe, helde hir a while betwene his armes, doubling kisse vpon kisse, with futch Pleasure, as his soule thought to fly vp to the heauens being inspired with that impoysoned Baulme which hee sucked in the sweete and sugred breath of his cruel mistresse: who vndoing hir selfe out of his armes, sayde vnto him: "Sith that I haue made the first disclosure both of the promise and of the effect, it behooueth that you performe the rest, for the full accomplishment of the same." "Come on hardily" (sayeth hee) "and God knoweth how spedily you shal be obeyed." "I wil then" (quod shee) "and commaund you vpon your promysed faith that from this present time, vntyl the space of three yeres be expyred, you speake to no lyuing person for any thing that shall happen vnto you, nor yet expresse by tonge, by sound of word or speache what thing you wante or els desyre, whych requeste if you do breake, I will neuer truste liuing man for youre sake, but wil publyshe your fame to bee villanous, and your person periured, and a promyse breaker." I leaue for you to think whether this vnhappy louer were amazed or not, to heare a Commaundment so vniust, and therewithall the difficulty for the performance. Notwithstanding he was so stout of hearte, and so religious an obseruer of his Othe as euen at that very instant he began to do the part which she had commaunded, playing at Mumchaunce, and vsing other signes, for doing of his duetye, accordyng to hir demaund. Thus after his ryghte humble reuerence made vnto hir, he went home, where faining that hee had lost his speach by meanes of a Catarre or reume which distilled from his brayne, he determined to forsake his Countrey vntill his tyme of penance was rune out. Wherefore setting staye in hys affayres, and prouydyng for his trayne, he made him ready to depart. Notwithstanding, he wrot a Letter vnto Zilia, before he toke hys iourney into Fraunce, that in olde tyme hadde ben the Solace and refuge of the miserable, as wel for the pleasantnes and temperature of the ayre, the great wealth and the aboundance of al thynges, as for the curtesye, gentlenes and

familyarity of the people: wherein that region may compare with any other nation vpon the earth. Now the Letter of Philiberto, fell into the hands of lady Zilia, by meanes of hys Page instructed for that purpose: who aduertified hir of the departure of his mayster, and of the despaire wherein hee was. Whereof shee was somewhat fory, and offended: But yet puttinge on hir Aunciente feuerytye, tooke the Letters, and breakinge the Seale, found that which followeth.

THE very euill that caufeth mine anoy  
 The matter is that breedes to me my ioy,  
 Which doth my wofull heart full fore displeafe,  
 And yet my hap and hard yll lucke doth ease.  
 I hope one day when I am franke and free,  
 To make thee do the thing that pleaseth mee,  
 Whereby gayne I shall, some pleasaunt gladnesse,  
 To supply mine vnderferued fadnesse,  
 The like whereof no mortall Dame can giue  
 To louing man that heere on earth doth lyue.  
 This great good turne which I on thee pretende,  
 Of my Conceites the full desired ende,  
 Proceedes from thee (O cruell mystresse myne)  
 Whose froward heart hath made mee to resigne  
 The full effect of all my liberty,  
 (To please and ease thy fonde fickle fanfy)  
 My vse of speache in silence to remayne:  
 To euery wight a double hellishe payne.  
 Whose fayth hadst thou not wickedly abusde  
 No streffe of payne for thee had bene refusde,  
 Who was to thee a trusty seruauant sure,  
 And for thy sake all daungers would endure.  
 For which thou hast defaced thy good name,  
 And thereunto procurde eternall flame.  
 ¶ That roaring tempest huge which thou hast made me felt,  
 The raging stormes whereof, well neere my heart hath swelt  
 By painefull pangs: whose waltering waues by troubled Skies,  
 And thousand blasts of winde that in those Seas do ryse

Do promise shipwracke sure of that thy fayling Barke,  
 When after weather cleare doth rife some Tempeft darke.  
 For eyther I or thou which art of Tyger's kinde,  
 In that great raging gulfe fome daunger fure fhalt finde,  
 Of that thy nature rude the deft'nies en'mies bee,  
 And thy great ouerthrow full well they do forefee.  
 The heauens vnto my eftate no doubt great friendfhip fhoe,  
 And do feeke wayes to ende, and finifh all my woe.  
 This penaunce which I beare by yelding to thy heft  
 Great ftore of ioyes fhall heape, and bring my mynde to reft.  
 And when I am at eafe amidst my pleafaunt happes,  
 Then fhall I fee thee fall, and fmarld in Fortune's trappes.  
 Then fhall I fee thee ban and curffe the wicked time,  
 Wherin thou madeft me gulp fuch draught of poyfoned wine.  
 Of which thy mortall cup, I am the offerd wight,  
 A vowed facrifice to that thy cruell ffight.  
 Wherefore my hoping heart doth hope to fee the day,  
 That thou for filence now to me fhalt be the pray.  
 ¶ O Bleffed God moft iuft, whose worthy laude and prayfe  
 With vttered fpeech in Skies a loft I dare not once to rayfe,  
 And may not well pronounce and fpeak what fuffrance I fustain,  
 Ne yet what death I do indure, whiles I in lyfe remayne,  
 Take vengeance on that traytreffe rude, affliēt hir corps with woe  
 Thy holy arme redrefse hir fault, that ſhe no more do foe:  
 My reafon hath not fo farre frayed but I may hope and truſt  
 To fee hir for hir wickednes, be whipt with plague moſt iuſt.  
 In the meane while great heauines my fence and foule doth bite,  
 And fhaking feuer vex my corps for grieſe of hir deſpite.  
 My mynde now fet at liberty from thee (O cruell Dame)  
 Doth giue deſiaunce to thy wrath, and to thy curſed name,  
 Proclayming mortal warre on thee vntill my tongue vntide,  
 Shall ioy to ſpeak to Zilia faſt weping by my ſide.  
 The heauens forbid that cauſleſſe wrong abroad ſhold make his  
     vaunt,  
 Or that an vnderferued death forgetfull tombe ſhould haunt:  
 But that in written booke and verſe their names ſhold euer liue  
 And eke their wicked deedes ſhold dy, and vertues ſtil reuiue.

So shall the pride and glory both, of hir be punisht right,  
 By length of yeares, and tract of time. And I by vertues might,  
 Full recompence thereby shal haue and stand fill in good Fame,  
 And she like caitif wretch shall liue, to hir long lasting shame.  
 Whose fond regard of beautie's grace, contemned hath the force  
 Of my true loue full fixt in hir: hir heart voide of remorse,  
 Esteemed it selfe right foolishly and me abused still,  
 Vsurping my good honest fayth and credite at hir will.  
 Whose loyall faith doth rest in soule, and therein still shal bide,  
 Vntill in filthy stincking graue the earth my corps shall hide.  
 Then shal that foule fraught with that faith, to heuens make his  
 repaire

And rest among the heuenly rout, bedect with sacred aire.  
 And thou for thy great cruelty, as God aboue doth know,  
 With ruful voice shalt wepe and wayle for thy gret ouerthrow,  
 And when thou woldst fayn purge thyself for that thy wretched dede  
 No kindnes shal to the be done, extreme shal be thy mede:  
 And where my tongue doth want his wil, thy mischiefe to display,  
 My hand and penne supplies the place, and shall do so alway.  
 For so thou hast constraynd the same by force of thy behest:  
 In silence still my tongue to keepe, t'accomplishe thy request.  
 Adieu, farewell my tormenter, thy frend that is full mute,  
 Doth bid thee farewell once agayne, and so hee ends his fute.

He that liueth only to be reuenged of thy cruelty,

PHILIBERTO OF VIRLE.

Zilia lyke a disdaynefull Dame, made but a Iest at theese Letters  
 and Complayntes of the infortunate Louer, saying that she was  
 very well content with his Seruice: and that when he should  
 perfourme the tyme of his probation, shee shoulde see if he were  
 worthy to bee admitted into the Fellowship of theym which had  
 made sufficient prooffe of the Order, and Rule of Loue. In the  
 meane tyme Philiberto rode by great Iourneys (as we haue sayde  
 before) towards the goodly, and pleasaunte countrey of Fraunce,  
 wherein Charles the Seuenth that tyme did raygne, who miracu-  
 lously (But gieue the Frencheman leaue to flatter, and speake well  
 of hys owne Countrey, accordinge to the flatteringe, and vaunt-  
 inge Nature of that Nation) chased the Englishmen out of hys

Landes, and Auncient Patrimony in the year of our Lord 1451. This Kynge had hys Campe then Warrefaringe in Gascoine, whose Lucke was so Fortunate as hee expelled hys Ennymies, and left no Place for theym to Fortify there, whych Incouraged the Kynge to followe that good Occasion, and by Profecutinge hys Victorious Fortune, to Profligate out of Normandie, and to dispatch himselfe of that Enemy, into whose Handes, and seritude the Countrey of Guyene was ryghtly delyuered, and Victoriously wonne, and gotten by the Englishmen. The kynge then beeinge in hys Campe in Normandie, the Piedmont Gentleman the Lorde of Virle aforefayde, Repayred thereunto to Serue hym in hys Perfon, where hee was well knowne of some Captaynes whych had seene hym at other tymes, and in place where worthy Gentlemen are wonte to Frequente, and in the Duke of Sauoyes Courte, whych the Frenchemen dyd very much Haunte, because the Earle of Piedmont that then was Duke of Sauoy had Married Iolanta, the seconde daughter of Charles the Seuenth. Theefe Gentlemen of Fraunce were very much fory for the Myfffortune of the Lord of Virle, and knowinge hym to be one of the Brauest, and Lustyest Men of Armes that was in his tyme within the Country of Piedmont, presented him before the King, commending vnto hys grace the vertue, gentleness, and valiaunce of the man of Warre: who after hee had done his reuerence accordinge to hys duety, whych hee knew ful wel to doe, declared vnto him by signes that he was come for none other intent, but in those Warres to serue hys Maiestye: whom the King heard and thankfully receyued assuring himself and promising very much of the dumbe Gentleman for respect of his personage which was comely and wel proportioned, and therefore represented some Force and greate Dexterity: and that whych made the king the better to fantasie the Gentleman, was the reporte of so many worthy men which extolled euen to the heauens the prowesse of the Piedmont knight. Whereof he gaue assured testimony in the assault which the king made to deliuer Roane, the Chyefe Citye and defence of all Normandie, in the year of our Lord 1451. where Philiberto behaued himself so valiantly as he was the first that mounted upon the Wals, and by his Dexterity and inuincyble force, made way to the

fouldiers in the breche, whereby a little while after they entred and sacked the Enemies, dryuing them out of the Citye, and wherein not long before, that is to say 1430. the duke of Somers set caused Ioane the Pucelle to be burnt. The king aduertised of the Seruice of the Dumbe Gentleman, to recompence him according to his desert, and bycause hee knewe hym to bee of a good house, he made him a Gentleman of his Chambre, and gaue him a good pension, promysing him moreouer to continue hys liberality, when he should see him profecute in time to come, the towardnesse of seruice which he had so haply begon. The dumbe Gentleman thanking the King very humbly, both for the present princely reward, and for promise in time to come, lifted vp his hand to heauen as taking God to witnesse of the faith, which inuioleable he promysed to keepe vnto his Prynce: which he did so earnestly, as hardely he had promysed, as well appeared in a Skirmishe betwene the Frenche, and their auncient Enimies the Englysh-Men, on whose side was the valiaunt and hardy Captayne the Lord Talbot, who hath eternized his memory in the victories obtained vpon that People, which sometymes made Europa and Asia to tremble, and appalled the monstrous and Warlike Countrey of Affrica. In this conflycte the Piedmont Knighte combated with the Lorde Talbot, agaynst whome he had so happy successe, as vpon the shock and incountre he ouerthrew both man and Horse, which caused the discomfiture of the Englishe Men: who after they had horfed agayne their Captain fled amaine, leauing the field bespred with dead Bodyes and bludshed of their Companions. This victory recouered futch corage and boldnes to the French, as from that tyme forth the Englyshmen began with their places and forts to lose also theyr hartes to defend themselues. The king excedingly wel contented wyth the prowesse and valiance of the dumbe Gentleman, gaue him for seruice past the Charge of v. c. men of armes, and indued him with some possessions, attending better fortune to make him vnderstand howe much the vertue of valiance ought to be rewarded and cheryshed by Prynces that be aided in their Necessity with the Dyligence of futch a vertuous and noble Gentleman. In lyke manner when a Prynce hath something good in himself, he can do no lesse but loue and fauor that which

resembleth himself by Princely Conditions, sith the Vertue in what soeuer place it taketh roote, can not chose but produce good fruite, the vse whereof far surmounts them all which approche the place, where these first feedes of Nobility were throwen. Certaine dayes after the kinge desirous to reioyce his Knights and Captaines that were in his trayne, and desirous to extinguish quite the woefull time which so long space held Fraunce in fearefull silence, caused a triumph of Turney to bee proclaimed within the City of Roane, wherein the Lord of Virle was deemed and esteemed one of the best, whych further did increase in him the good wyl of the kyng, in sutch wyse as he determined to procure his health, and to make him haue his speache againe. For he was verye sorry that a Gentleman so valiant was not able to expresse his minde, which if it might be had in counsel it would serue the state of a commonwealth, so wel as the force and valor of his body had til then serued for defence and recovery of his country. And for that purpose he made Proclamation by found of Trumpet throughout the prouinces as wel within his own kingdome, as the regions adioyning vpon the same, that who so euer could heale that dumb Gentleman, shoulde haue ten thousand Frankes for recompence. A Man myght then haue seene thousands of Physitians assemble in fiede, not to skirmish with the Englysh men, but to combat for reward in recouery of the pacient's speache, who begon to make sutch Warre against those ten thousand Frankes, as the kyng was afrayde that the cure of that disease could take no effect: and for that cause ordained furthermore, that whosoever would take in hand to heale the dumbe, and did not keepe promyse within a certaine prefixed time, shoulde pay the sayd summe, or for default thereof shoulde pledge his head in gage. A Man myght then haue seene those Phisicke Maysters, aswell beyonde the Mountaynes, as in Fraunce it selfe, retire home againe, bleeding at the Nose, cursing with great impiety their Patrones, Galen, Hypocrates, and Auicen, and blamed with more than reprochful Woordes, the Arte wherewith they fished for honor and richeffe. This brute was spred so far, and babblyng Fame had already by mouth of her Trump publyshed the same throughout the most part of the Prouinces, Townes, and Cities neare and farre off to Fraunce, in sutch

wyfe as a Man woulde haue thought that the two young men (which once in the tyme of the Macedonian Warres brought Tydings to Varinius that the king of Macedon was taken by the Consul Paulus Emilius) had ben vagarant and wandering abrode to carry Newes of the king's edicte for the healing of the Lord of Virle. Which caused that not only the brute of the Proclamation, but also the Credyte and reputatyon wherein the sayd Lord was with the French king arriued euen at Montcal and passed from mouth to mouth, til at length Zilia the principal cause thereof vnderstode the newes, which reioyced hir very much, feing the firme Amitie of the dumbe Lord, and the syncere faith of hym in a promise vnworthy to be kept, for so much as where Fraude and feare doe rule in Heartes of Men, relygyon of promise, specially the Place of the gyuen Fayth, surrendreth hys force and reuolteth, and is no more bound but to that which by good wyll he woulde obserue. Nowe thoughte shee, thoughte? nay rather shee assured hir selfe, that the Gentleman for all hys wrytten Letter was stil so surprysed wyth hir Loue, and kindled wyth her fire in so ample wyfe, as when hee was at Montcall: and therefore determynd to goe to Paris, not for desire shee had to see hir pacient and penitenciarie, but rather for couetise of the ten thousand Francks, wherof already shee thought hir self assured, making good accompt that the dumbe Gentleman when hee should see himself discharged of his promise, for gratifying of hir, would make no stay to speak to the intent she myght beare away both the prayse and Money, whereof all others had failed tyll that tyme. Thus you see that she, whome honest Amitye and long service could lytle induce to compaffion and desire to giue some ease vnto hir moste earnest louer, yelded hir selfe to couetous gaine and greedinesse for to encrease hir Rycheffe. O cursed hunger of Money, how long wilt thou thus blinde the reason and Sprytes of men? Ah perillous gulfe, how many hast thou ouerwhelmed within thy bottomlesse Throte, whose glory, had it not bene for thee, had surpassed the Clouds, and bene equall with the bryghtnesse of the Sunne, where now they bee obscured wyth the thicknesse of thy fogges and Palpable darknesse. Alas, the fruiets whych thou bryngeest forth for all thine outewarde apparence, conduce no felycity to them



that bee thy possessors, for the dropsey that is hydden in their Mynde, whych maketh them so much the more drye, as they drynke ofte in that thirsty Fountaine, is cause of their alteration : and moſte miserable is that infaciabie desire the Couetous haue to glut their appetite, whych can receiue no contentment. Thys onely Couetouſneſſe ſometimes procured the Death of the great and ryche Romane Craſſus who through GOD's punyſhment fell into the Handes of the Perſians, for violating and ſacking the Temple of God that was in Ieruſalem. Sextimuleus burnyng with Auarice and greedynesse of money, dyd once cut of the head of hys Patron and defender Caius Gracchus the Tribune of the People, incyted by the Tirant, which tormenteth the hearts of the couetous. I wil not ſpeake of a good number of other Examples of people of all kyndes, and diuers nations, to come again to Zilia. Who forgetting hir virtue, the firſt ornament and ſhining quality of hir honeſt behaiour, feared not the wearines and trauaile of way, to commit her ſelfe to that danger of loſſe of honor, and to yeld to the mercy of one, vnto whom ſhe had don ſo great iniury, as hir conſeyence (if ſhee hadde not loſt hir ryghte ſence) oughte to haue made hir thinke that hee was not without deſire to reuenge the wrong vniuſtly don vnto him, and ſpecially being in place where ſhe was not known, and he greatly honoured and eſteemed, for whoſe loue that Proclamation and ſearch of Phyſicke was made and ordained. Zilia then hauing put in order hir affaires at home departed from Montcall, and paſſyng the Mounts, arrived at Paris, in that time when greateſt deſpayre was of the dumbe Knight's recouery. Beynge arryued, wythin fewe Dayes after ſhe inqyred for them that had the charge to entertayne ſutch as came, for the cure of the pacient. "For (ſayd ſhe) if ther be any in the world, by whom the knigt may recouer his health, I hope in God that I am ſhe that ſhal haue the prayſe." Heereof the Commiſſaries deputed hereunto, were aduerted, who cauſed the fayre Phyſitian to come before them, and asked her if it were ſhe, that would take vpon hir to cure this dumbe Gentleman. To whom ſhee aunſwered. "My mayſters it hath pleaſed God to reueale vnto me a certayne ſecrete very proper and meete for the healyng of hys Malady, wherewithal if the pacyent wyll, I hope to make hym

ſpeake ſo well, as he dyd theſe two yeares paſt and more.” “I ſuppoſe, ſayd one of the Commiſſaries, that you be not ignoraunte of the Circumſtances of the Kynges Proclamation.” “I knowe full wel” (quod ſhe) “the Effeſte therefore, and therefore doe ſay vnto you, that I wyll looſe my life yf I doe not accompliſh that which I doe promyſe ſo that I may haue Lycence, to tarry wyth hym alone, bycauſe it is of no leſſe importaunce than hys Health.” “It is no maruell,” ſayde the Commiſſary, “confideryng your Beauty, which is ſufficient to frame a Newe Tongue in the moſte dumbe Perſon that is vnder the Heauens. And therefore doe your Endeour, aſſuring you that you ſhall doe a great pleaſure vnto the King, and beſides the prayſe you ſhall gette the good wyll of the dumbe Gentleman, which is the moſt excellent man of the World and therefore ſo well recompenced as you ſhall haue good cauſe to be contented wyth the kynges Lyberalitye. But (to the intente you be not deceyued) the meanyng of the Ediſte is, that within fiftene dayes after you begin the cure, you muſte make hym whole, or elſe to ſatiſſie the Paynes ordayned in the ſame.” Whereunto ſhe ſubmitted hir ſelfe, blinded by Auarice and preſumption, thinking that ſhe had like power nowe ouer the Lord of Virle, as when ſhe gaue him that ſharpe and cruel penance. Theſe Conditions promyſed, the Commiſſaries went to aduertife the Knight, how a gentlewoman of Piedmont was of purpoſe come into Fraunce to helpe him: whereof he was maruelouſly aſtonned. Now he would neuer haue thoughte that Zilia had borne hym ſo great good wil, as by abating the pryde of hir Corage, would haue come ſo farre to eaſe the grieſe of him, whome by ſutch greate torments ſhe had ſo wonderfully perfecuted. He thought againe that it was the Gentlewoman his Neighbour, whych ſometymes had done hir endeour to helpe him, and that nowe ſhe had prouoked Zilia to abſolue him of his faith, and requite him of hys promiſe. Muſing vpon the diuerſitie of theſe things, and not knowing wherevpon to ſettle hys iudgment, the deputies commaunded that the Woman Phyſitian ſhould be admitted to ſpeake with the patient. Which was done and brought in place, the Commiſſaries preſently withdrew themſelues. The Lord of Virle ſeeing hys Ennemye come before him, whom ſometimes hee loued very dearely, iudged by

and by the cause wherefore she came, that onely Auaryce and greedy desire of gaine had rather procured hir to passe the mountayns trauaile, than due and honest Amitye, wherewith she was double bound through his perfeurance and humble seruice, with whose fight hee was so appalled, as he fared like a shadowe and Image of a deade man. Wherefore callyng to mynd the rigour of his lady, hir inciuility and fonde Commaundement, so longe time to forbidde hys Speech, the Loue which once hee bare hir, with vehement desire to obey hir, sodainly was so cooled and qualyfied, that loue was turned into hatred, and will to serue hir, into an appetite of reuenge: whereupon he determined to vse that presente Fortune, and to playe his parte wyth hir, vpon whom hee had so foolysfly doted, and to pay hir with that Money wherewyth she made him feele the Fruits of vnspeakable crueltie, to giue example to fonde and presumptuous dames, how they abuse Gentlemen of futch Degree whereof the Knyghte was, and that by hauing regarde to the merite of futch peronages, they be not so prodigall of themselues, as to set their honour in sale for vyle reward and filthy mucke: whych was so constantly conferred and defended by this Gentlewoman, agaynst the assaultes of the good grace, beauty, valour, and gentleness, of that vertuous and honest suter. And notwithstanding, in these dayes wee see some to resiste the amitye of those that loue, for an opynyon of a certayne vertue, which they thinke to be hydden within the corps of excellent beauty, who afterwards do set themselues to sale to hym that giueth most, and offreth greatest reward. Sutch do not deserue to be placed in rank of chaste Gentlewomen, of whome they haue no smacke at al, but amongs the throng of strumpets kynde, that haue some sparke and outward shew of loue: for she which loneth money and hunteth after gayne, wyl make no bones, by treason's trap to betray that vnhappy man, which shall yelde himselfe to hir: hir loue tending to vnsensible things, and futch in dede, as make the wisest forte to falsifie their fayth, and sel the ryghte and Equity of their Indgment. The Lorde of Virle, seeing Zilia then in his company, and almost at his commaundement, fayned as though hee knew hir not, by reason of his small regard and lesse intertaynment shewed vnto hir at hir first comming. Which

greatly made the poore Gentlewoman to muse. Neuerthelesse she making a vertue of necessity, and seeing hir selfe to bee in that place, from whence shee could not depart, without the losse of hir honor and Lyfe, purposed to proue Fortune, and to committe hir selfe vnto his mercy, for all the mobilytie whych the auncients attribute vnto Fortune. Wherefore shutting fast the doore, shee went vnto the Knight, to whom she spake these words: " And what is the matter (sir knight) that now you make so little accompte of your owne Zilia, who in times past you sayd, had great power and Authoritye ouer you? what is the cause that moueth you hereunto? haue you so soone forgotten hir? Beholde me better, and you shal see hir before you that is able to acqyete you of youre promyse, and therefore prayeth you to pardon hir committed faultes done in tymes past by abusing so cruelly the honest and firme loue which you bare hir. I am she, which through follye and temeritie did stoppe your mouth, and tyed vp your Tongue. Giue me leaue, I beseeche you, to open the same agayne, and to breake the Lyne, whych letteth the liberty of your Speache." She seeing that the dumbe Gentleman would make no aunswere at all, but mumme, and shewed by signes, that he was not able to vndoe his Tongue, weepyng began to kyffe hym, imbrace hym and make mutch of hym, in sutch wyse, as he whych once studyed to make Eloquent Orations before hys Ladye, to induce hir to pity, forgat then those Ceremonyes, and spared his talke, to shewe hymselfe to be sutch one as shee had made at hir Commaundement, mused and deuysed altogether vpon the execution of that, which sometyme hee hadde so paynefully purfued, both by Woords and contynuall Seruyce, and coulde profite nothing. Thus waked agayne by hir, whych once had Mortyfyed hys Mynde, assayed to renue in hir that, whych long tyme before seemed to be a sleepe. She more for feare of losse of Lyfe, and the pryce of the rewardé, than for any true or earnest loue suffred hym to receyue that of hir, whych the long Suter desireth to obtaine of his mistresse. They liued in this ioy and Pleasure the space of fiftene Dayes ordained for the assigned Terme of his Cure, wherein the poore Gentlewoman was not able to conuert hir offended Fryende to speake, although she humbly prayed him to shewe fo

much favour as at least she might goe free, from either losse: telling hym howe lyttle regard shee hadde to hir honour, to come so farre to doe him pleasure, and to discharge him of his promise. Mutch other gay and lowlye talke shee hadde. But the knyghte nothing moued with what she sayde determined to brynge hir in futch feare, as he had bene vexed with heauineffe, which came to passe at the expyred tyme. For the Commiffaries seeing that their pacyent spake not at all, summoned the Gentlewoman to pay the Penaltye pronounced in the Edict, or else to loofe hyr lyfe. Alas, howe bytter seemed thys drynke to thys poore gentlewoman who not able to diffemble the gryef that prest on euery fyde, beganne to saye: "Ah, I Wretched and Caytyfe Woman, by thinking to deceiue an other, haue sharpened the Sworde to finish myne owne lyfe. Was it not enough for me to vse futch crueltye towarde this myne Enemye, which most cruelly in double wyfe taketh Reuenge, but I must come to bee thus tangled in his Snares, and in the Handes of him, who inioying the Spoyles of myne Honour, will with my Lyfe, depryue me of my Fame, by making mee a Common Fable, to all Posterity in tyme to come? O what hap had I, that I was not rather deuoured by some Furious and cruell beast, when I passed the mountaines, or else that I brake not my Necke, downe some steepe and headlong hil, of those high and hideous mountains, rather than to bee set heare in stage, a Pageant to the whole Citye to gaze vpon, for enterpryng a thing so vayne, done of purpose by him, whome I haue offended. Ah, Signior Philiberto, what Euill rewardest thou for pleasures receiued, and fauors felt in hir whom thou didst loue so much, as to make hir dye futch shameful, and dreadfull death. But O GOD, I know that it is for worthy guerdon of my folysh and wycked Lyfe. Ah disloyaltye and fickle trust, is it possible that thou be harbored in the hearte of hym which hadde the Brute to bee the most Loyall and Curteous Gentleman of hys Countrey? Alas, I see well nowe that I must die through myne onelye simplicity, and that I muste sacrifice mine Honour to the rygour of hym, which with two aduauntages, taketh ouer cruell reuenge of the lyttle wrong, wherewith my chastity touched him before." As she thus had finished hir complainte, one came in to carrye

hir to Pryfon, whether willinglye ſhee wente for that ſhe was already reſolued in deſire, to lyue no longer in that miſerie. The Gentleman contented wyth that payne, and not able for to diſſemble the gryefe, which hee conceyued for the paſſion which hee ſawe hys Welbeloued to endure, the enioyinge of whome renewed the heate of the flames forepaſt, repayred to the Kyng, vnto whome to the great pleaſure of the Standers by, and exceeding reioyce of hys Maieſtye (to heare hym ſpeake) he told the whole diſcourſe of the Loue betweene hym and cruell Zilia, the cauſe of the loſſe of his ſpeech, and the ſomme of hys reuenge." By the fayth of a Gentleman (ſayed the king) but here is ſo ſtraunge an hyſtorye as euer I heard: and verely your fayth and loyaltye is no leſſe to be praized and commended than the cruelty and couetouſnes of the Woman worthy of reproch and blame, which truly deſerueth ſome greuous and notable iuſtice, if ſo be ſhe were not able to render ſome apparant cauſe for the couerture and hiding of hir folly." "Alas ſir," (ſayd the Gentleman) "pleaſeth your maieſty to deliuer hir (although ſhe be worthy of puniſhment) and diſcharge the reſt that be in priſon for not recouery of my ſpeech, ſith my onely help did reſt, eyther at hir Commaundemente which had bounde me to that wrong, or elſe in the expired time, for which I had pledged my fayth." To which requeſt, the Kinge very willinglye agreed, greatly praying the Wiſedome, Curteſie, and aboue all the fidelity of the Lord of Virle, who cauſing his penitenciary to be ſet at liberty, kept hir company certayne dayes, as well to Feaſte, and banket hir, in thoſe Landes and Poſſeſſions which the kinges maieſty had liberally beſtowed vpon him, as to ſaciare his Appetite with ſome fruiçtes whereof he had fauoured his taſte when he was voluntarily Dumbe. Zilia founde that fauour ſo pleaſaunt, as in maner ſhee counted hir imprifonment happy, and hir trauell reſt, by reaſon that diſtreſſe made hir then feele more liuely the force and pleaſure of Liberty, which ſhee had not founde to bee ſo delicate, had ſhe not receyued the experience and payne thereof. Marke heere how Fortune dealeth with them which truſtinge in their force, deſpife (in reſpect of that which they doe themſelues) the little portion that they iudge to bee in others. If the Vayne glory, and arrogante

Prefumption of a Chastity Impregnable had not deceiued this Gentlewoman, if the sacred hunger of gold had not blinded hir, it could not haue bene knowne, wherein hir incontinency consisted, not in the Mynion delights, and alluring Toyes of a passionate Louer, but in the couetous desire of filling hir Purse, and Hypocritical glory of praise among men. And notwithstanding yee see hir gaine to serue hir turne nothing at all but to the perpetuall reproch of hir name, and the slander sutch as ill speakers and enimies of womankinde, do burden the Sexe withall. But the fault of one Woman, which by hir owne presumption deceyued hir selfe, ought not to obscure the glory of so many vertuous, Fayre, and Honeest dames, who by their Chastity, Liberality, and Curtesy, be able to deface the blot of Folly, Couetoufnes and cruelty of this Gentlewoman heere, and of all other that do resemble hir. Who taking leaue of hir Louer, went home agayne to Piedmount, not without an ordinary grieffe of heart, which serued hir for a spur to hir Conscience, and continually forced hir to thinke, that the force of man is lesse than nothing, where God worketh not by his grace, which fayling in vs, oure worckes can fauor but of the stench and corruption of our nature, wherein it tumbleth and tosseth lyke the Sow that walloweth in the puddle of filth and dirt. And because yee shall not thincke in generall termes of Woman's chastity, and discretion, that I am not able to vouche some particular example of later years, I meane to tell you of one, that is not onely to bee prayfed for hir Chastity in the absence of hir husband, but also of hir Courage and Pollicy in chastifinge the vaunting natures of two Hungarian Lords that made their braggs they would win hir to their Willes, and not only hir, but all other, whatsoever they were of Woman-kynde.

## THE TWENTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

*Two Barons of Hvnгарie affuring themfelues to obtayne their fute to a fayre Lady of Boeme, receyued of hir a ftraung and maruelous repulfe, to their great fhame and Infamy, curfinge the tyme that euer they aduentured an Enterprife fo foolifh.*

PENELOPE, the woful Wife of abfent Vliffes, in hir tedious longing for the home retourne of that hir aduenturous knight, affayed wyth Carefull heart amid the troupe of amorous Suters, and within the Bowels of hir royall Pallace, deferued no greater fame for hir valiaunt. encountries and ftoute defence of the inuincible, and Adamant fort of hir chafity than this Boeme Lady doth by refifting two mighty Barrons, that canoned the Walles, and well mured rampart of hir pudicity. For being threatned in his Princes Court, whether al the well trayned crew of eche fcience and profefion, dyd make repayre, beyng menaced by Venus' band, which not onely fummoned hir fort and gaue hir a camifado by thick *Al' Armes*, but alfo forced the place by fierce affault, the lyke a couragious and politike captayne, gaue thofe braue and lufly Souldiers, a fowle repulfe, and in end taking them captiues, vrged them for their victuals to fall to woman's toyle, more fhamefull than fhameleffe Sardanapalus amid hys amorous troupe. I neede not amplifie by length of preamble, the fame of this Boeme Lady, nor yet briefly recompt the Triumph of hir Victory: vayne it were alfo by glorious hymnes to chaunte the wifedome of hir beleuing maake, who not careleffe of hir Lyfe, employed hys care to ferue hys Prynce, and by feruice atchieued the caufe that draue him to a fouldier's ftate. But yet for truffleffe faith in the pryme conference of his future porte, hee confulted wyth a Pollaco, for a compounded drugge, to eafe his fufpect mind, whych medicine fo eafed his maladie, as it not onely preferued hym from the infected humour, but alfo made hir happy for euer. Sutch fall the euent of valiaunt mindes, though many tymes mother iealoffie that cancred Wytch fteppeth in hir foote to anoy the well difpofed heart. For had he ioyned to his valyaunce credite of his louyuge wife,



without the blynde aduys of futch as professe that blacke and lying scyence, double glorye hee had gayned: once for endeouryng by seruice to seeke honour: the seconde, for absolute truste in hir, that neuer ment to beguyle him, as by hir firste aunswere to his first motion appeareth. But what is to be obiected against the Barons? Let them answere for their fault, in this discourse ensuing: whych so lessoneth all Noble Myndes, as warely they ought to beware how they aduenture upon the honour of Ladies, who bee not altogether of one selfe and yelding trampe, but wel forged and steeled in the shamefast shoppe of Loyaltie, which armure defendeth them against the fond skirmishes and vnconfidred conflicts of Venus' wanton band. The maiesties also of the king and Queene, are to be aduanced aboute the starres for their wife dissuasion of those Noblemen from their hot and hedlesse enterpryse, and then their Iustice for due execution of their forfait, the particularity of whych discourse in this wyse doth begynne. Mathie Coruine, sometime king of Hungarie, aboute the yeare of oure Lorde 1458, was a valiaunt man of Warre, and of goodly personage. Hee was the first that was Famous, or feared of the Turks, of any Prynce that gouerned that kingdome. And amongs other his vertues, so well in Armes and Letters, as in Lyberallyty and Curtesie he excelled al the Prynces that raygned in his time. He had to Wyfe Queene Beatrice of Arragon, the Daughter of olde Ferdinando kyng of Naples, and syster to the mother of Alphonfus, Duke of Ferrara, who in learnyng, good conditions, and all other vertues generally disperfed in hir, was a surpaffing princeffe, and shewed hirself not onely a curteous and Liberall Gentlewoman to king Mathie hir husband, but to all other, that for vertue seemed worthy of honour and reward: in futch wise as to the Court of these two noble Princes, repayred the most notable Men of al Nations that were giuen to any kind of good exercife, and euery of them according to theyr desert and degree welcomed and entertained. It chanced in this time, that a knight of Boeme the vassall of Kinge Mathie, for that he was likewise kyng of that countrey, born of a noble house, very valiant and wel exercifed in armes, fell in loue with a paffing faire Gentlewoman of like nobility, and reputed to be the fairest of al the country, and had a brother

that was but a pore Gentleman, not lucky to the goods of fortune. This Boemian knight was also not very rich, hauing onely a Castle, wyth certain reuenues thervnto, which was scarce able to yeld vnto him any great maintenance of liuing. Fallyng in loue then with this faire Gentlewoman, he demaunded hir in mariage of hir brother, and with hir had but a very little dowrie. And this knight not wel forseeing his poore estate, brought his wyfe home to his house, and there, at more leifure considering the same, began to fele his lacke and penury, and how hardly and scant his reuenues were able to maintein his port. He was a very honest and gentle person, and one that delighted not by any meanes to burden and fine his tenants, contenting himself with that reuenue which his ancesters left him, the same amounting to no great yerely rent. When this gentleman perceiued that he stode in neede of extraordinary relyefe, after many and diuers confyderations with himself, he purposed to folow the Court, and to serue king Mathie his fouerain lord and master, there by his diligence and experience, to seke meanes for ability to sustaine his wife and himself. But so great and feruent was the loue that he bare vnto his Lady, as he thought it impossible for him to liue one houre without hir, and yet iudged it not best to haue hir with him to the court, for auoidinge of further Charges incydente to Courtyng Ladyes, whose Delight and Pleasure resteth in the toyes and trycks of the same, that cannot be wel auoyded in poore Gentlemen, without theyr Names in the Mercer's or Draper's Iornals, a heauy thyng for them to confyder if for their disport they lyke to walke the stretes. The daily thynkyng thereupon, brought the poore Gentleman to great forrow and heauinesse. The Lady that was young, wife and discrete, marking the maner of hir husband, feared that he had some misliking of hir. Wherefore vpon a day she thus sayd vnto hym: "Dere husband, willingly would I desire a good turne at your hand, if I wist I should not displease you." "Demauand what you will," (said the knyghte) "if I can, I shall gladly performe it, bicause I do esteeme your satisfaction, as I do mine owne lyfe." Then the Lady very sobrelly praied him, that he would open vnto hir the cause of that discontentment, which hee shewed outwardly to haue, for that his mynd and behaiour seemed to bee

contrary to ordinary Custome, and contriued Daye and Nyghte in fighes, auoydinge the Company of them that were wont specially to delyght him. The Knight hearing his Ladyes request, paused a whyle, and then sayd vnto hir: "My wel beloued Wyfe, for so much as you desyre to vnderstand my thoughte and mynde, and whereof it commeth that I am sad and pensife, I wyll tell you: all the Heauinesse wherewith you see me to be affected, doth tend to this end. Fayne would I deuysf that you and I may in honour lyue together, accordyng to our calling. For in respect of our Parentage, our Liuelode is very slender, the occasion whereof were our Parents, who morgaged theyr Lands, and consumed a great part of their goods that our Auncestors lefte them. I dayly thynking hereupon, and conceiuyng in my head dyuers Imaginations, can deuise no meanes but one, that in my fanse seemeth best, which is, that I go to the Court of our foueraine lord Mathie who at this present is inferring Warres vpon the Turk, at whose hands I do not mistrust to receyue good intertainment, beyng a most Lyberal Prynce, and one that esteemeth al futch as be valiant and actiue. And I for my parte wyll so gouerne my selfe (by God's grace) that by deserte I wyll procure futch lyuing and fauour as hereafter we may lyue in oure Olde Dayes a quyet Lyfe to oure great stay and comforte: For although Fortune hitherto hath not fauored that state of Parentage, whereof we be, I doubt not wyth Noble Courage to win that in despyte of Fortune's Teeth, which obstinately hitherto she hath denied. And the more assured am I of thys determination, bycause at other tymes, I haue serued vnder the Vaiuoda in Transilvania, agaynst the Turke, where many tymes I haue bene requyred to serue also in the Courte, by that honourable Gentleman, the Counte of Cilia. But when I dyd consider the beloued Company of you (deare Wyfe) the swetest Companion that euer Wyght possessed, I thought it vnpossible for me to forbear your presence, whych yf I should doe, I were worthy to sustayne that dishonour, which a great number of carelesse Gentlemen doe, who following their pryuate gayne and Wyll, abandon theyr young and fayre Wyues, neglectinge the fyre which Nature hath infilled to the delycate bodies of futch tender Creatures. Fearing therewythall, that so soone as I shoulde depart

the lusty yong Barons and Gentlemen of the Countrey would pursue the gaine of that loue, the pryce whereof I do esteeme about the crowne of the greatest Emperour in all the World, and would not forgoe for all the Riches and Precious Iewels in the fertile Soyle of Arabie, who no doubt would swarme togyther in greater heapes then euer dyd the wowers of Penelope, within the famous graunge of Ithaca, the house of Wandering Vliffes. Whych pursue if they dyd attayne, I shoulde for euer hereafter be ashamed to shewe my face before those that be of valour and regard. And this is the whole effect of the scruple (sweete wyfe) that hyndreth me, to seeke for our better estate and fortune." When he had spoken these words, he held his peace. The Gentlewoman which was wyfe and stout, perceyuing the great loue that her husband bare hir, when hee had stayed himselfe from talke, with good and merry Countenance answered hym in thys wyfe: "Sir Vlrico," (which was the name of the Gentleman) "I in lyke manner as you haue done, haue deuyfed and thoughte vpon the Nobilitye and Byrth of our Auncestors, from whose state and port (and that wythout oure fault and cryme) we be far wyde and deuyded. Notwythstanding I determined to set a good face vpon the matter, and to make so much of our paynted sheath as I could. In deede I confesse my selfe to be a Woman, and you Men doe say that Womens hartes be faynt and feeble: but to bee playne wyth you, the contrary is in me, my hearte is so stoute and ambitious as peradventure not meete and consonant to power and ability, although we Women will finde no lacke if our Hartes haue pith and strength inough to beare it out. And faine woulde I support the state wherein my mother maintayned me. Howe be it for mine owne part (to God I yeld the thanks) I can so moderate and stay my little great heart, that contented and satisfied I can be, with that which your abilitye can beare, and pleasure commaund. But to come to the point, I say that debating with my selfe of our state as you full wisely do, I do verily think that you being a yong Gentleman, lusty and valiaunt, no better remedy or deuyse can be found than for you to aspyre and seeke the Kyng's fauor and seruice. And it must needs ryse and redounde to your gaine and preferment, for that I heare you say the King's Maiesty doth

already knowe you. Wherefore I do suppose that hys grace (a skilfull Gentleman to way and esteeme the vertue and valor of ech man) cannot chose but reward and recompence the well doer to his singular contentation and comfort. Of this myne Opinion I durst not before thys time vtter Word or signe for feare of your displeasure. But nowe sith your selfe hath opened the way and meanes, I haue presumed to discouer the same, do what shal seeme best vnto your good pleasure. And I for my parte, although that I am a woman (accordingly as I faied euen now) that by Nature am desirous of honor, and to shew my selfe abrode more rich and sumptuous than other, yet in respect of our fortune, I shal be contented so long as I lyue to continue with you in this our Castell, where by the grace of God I will not fayle to serue, loue and obey you, and to keepe your House in that moderate forte, as the reuenues shal be able to maintayne the same. And no doubt but that poore liuing we haue orderly vsed, shal be sufficient to finde vs two, and five or fixe seruants with a couple of horffe, and so to lyue a quyet and merry Lyfe. If God doe send vs any Children, tyl they come to lawfull age, we will with our poore liuing bryng them vp so well as wee can and then to prefer them to some Noble mens seruices, with whome by God's grace they may acquire honoure and lyuing, to keepe them in their aged dayes. And I doe trust that wee two shall vse sutch mutuall loue and reioyce, that so long as our Lyfe doth last in wealth and woe, our contented mindes shall rest satisfied. But I waying the stoutnesse of your minde, doe know that you esteeme more an Ounce of honor, than all the Golde that is in the world. For as your birth is Noble, so is your heart and stomacke. And therefore many tymes seeing your great heauinesse, and manyfolde muses and studies, I haue wondred with my selfe whereof they should proceede, and amongs other my conceipts, I thought that either my behauior and order of dealyng, or my personage did not lyke you: or else that your wonted gentle minde and disposition had ben altered and transformed into some other Nature: many times also I was contente to thynke that the cause of your disquiet mynde, dyd ryse vppon the difuse of Armes, wherein you were wonte dailye to accustom your selfe amongs the Troupes of the honourable, a company in

dede moſt worthy of your preſence. Reuoluing many times theſe and ſutch lyke cogitations, I haue fought meanes by ſutch allurements as I could deuſe, to eaſe and mitigate your troubled minde, and to wythdraw the great vnquiet and care wherewith I faue you to be affected. Bycauſe I do eſteeme you aboue all the Worlde deemyng your onely gryefe to be my double Payne, your aking Fynger, a feruent Feuer fit, and the leaſt Woe you can ſuſtayne moſte bytter Death to me, that loueth you more dearely than my ſelfe. And for that I doe perceyue you are determynd to ſerue our Noble King, the ſorrowe which without doubt ye will affayle mee by reaſon of your abſence, I wyll ſweeten and leniſe wyth Contentatyon, to ſee your Commendable deſyre appeaſed and quiet. And the pleaſaunt Memory of your valyaunt facts beguyle my penſiue thoughts, hopyng our nexte meetyng ſhall bee more ioyfull than thys our dyſiunctyon and departure heauy. And where you doubt of the Confluence and repayre of the dyſhoneſte which ſhall attempt the wynnynge and ſubduing of myne heart and vnſpotted bodye, hytherto inuoyolably kepte from the touch of any perſon, caſt from you that feare, expel from your minde that fonde conceipt: for death ſhall ſooner cloſe theſe mortall Eyes, than my Chaſtitye ſhall bee deſyled. For pledge whereof I haue none other thyng to gyue but my true and ſymple fayth, which if you dare truſt it ſhal hereafter appeare ſo firme and inuiolable as no ſparke of ſuſpition ſhal enter your careful minde, which I may wel terme to be carefull, bicauſe ſome care before hand doth riſe of my behavior in your abſence. The tryall wherefore ſhall yelde ſure euidence and teſtimony, by paſſing my careful life which I may with better cauſe ſo terme in your abſence, that God knoweth wil be right penſiue and carefull vnto mee, who ioyeth in nothinge elſe but in your welfare. Neuertheleſſe all meanes and wayes ſhall bee agreeable vnto my minde for your affurance, and ſhall breede in me a wonderful contentation, which luſteth after nothing but your ſatiſfaction. And if you liſt to cloſe me vp in one of the Caſtell towers til your return, right glad I am there to continue an Ankreſſe life: ſo that the ſame may eaſe your deſired mind." The knight with great deleyght gaue ear to the aunſwere of his Wife, and when ſhe had ended hir talke, he began to reply

vnto hir: "My welbeloued, I doe lyke wel and greatly commended the stoutnesse of your heart, it pleaseth me greatly to see the same agreeable vnto mine. You haue lightned the same from inestimable woe by vnderstanding your conceiued purpose and determination to gard and preferue your honor, praying you therein to perseuere, still remembring that when a Woman hath lost hir honor, shee hath forgone the chiefest Iewel she hath in this Life, and deserueth no longer to be called woman. And touching my talke proposed vnto you although it be of great importaunce, yet I meane not to depart so soone. But if it do come to effect I assure thee Wife, I will leaue thee Lady and mistresse of all that I haue. In the meane time I will consider better of my businesse, and consult with my fryendes and kinsmen, and then determine what is best to be done. Til when let vs lyue and spend our tyme so merely as we can." To bee shorte there was nothing that so much molested the knight, as the doubt he had of his wife, for that she was a very fine and faire yong Gentlewoman: And therefore he stil deuised and imagined what assurance he myght finde of hir behauior in his absence. And resting in this imagination, not long after it cam to passe that the knight being in company of diuers Gentleman, and talking of fundry matters, a tale was tolde what chaunced to a gentleman of the Countrey whych had obtained the faouere and good wyll of a Woman, by meanes of an olde man called Pollacco, which had the name to be a famous enchaunter and Phyfitian, dwelling at Cutiano a Citie of Boeme, where plenty of siluer mines and other metals is. The knight whose Castle was not far from Cutiano, had occasion to repaire vnto that Citie, and according to his desire found out this Pollacco, which was a very old man, and talking with him of diuers things, perceiued him to be of great skil. In end he entreated him, that for so much as he had don pleasure to many for apprehension of their loue, he wold also instruct him, how he might be assured that hys wife did keepe hir self honest all the time of his absence, and that by certaine signes hee might haue sure knowledge whether she brake hir faith, by sending his honesty into Cornwall. Sutch vaine trust this knight reposed in the lying Science of Sorcery, whych although to many other is found deceit-

ful, yet to him ferued for fure euidence of his wiuē's fidelity. This Pollacco which was a very cunning enchaunter as you haue heard fayd vnto him: "Sir you demaund a very straunge matter, futch as wherwyth neuer hitherto I haue bene acquainted, ne yet fearched the depthe of thofe hydden fecrets, a thyng not commonly fued for, ne yet practized by me. For who is able to make affurance of a woman's chafteity, or tel by signes except he were at the deede doing, that ſhe had don amiſſe? Or who can gaine by proctors wryt, to ſummon or ſue at ſpiritual Courte, peremptorily to affirme by neuer ſo good euidence or testimony, that a woman hath hazarded hir honeſty, except he ſweare Rem to be in Re, which the greateſt Ciuilian that ever Padua bred neuer ſawe by proceſſe duely tried? Shall I then warrante you the honeſty of ſuch ſlippery Catell, prone and ready to luſt, eaſy to be vanquiſhed by the ſuites of earneſt purſuers? But blame-worthy ſurely I am, thus generally to ſpeake: for ſome I know, although not many, for whoſe poore honeſties I dare aduenture mine owne. And yet that number how ſmal ſo euer it be, is worthy all due Reuerence and Honoure. Notwythſtandyng (by-cause you ſeeme to bee an Honeſte Gentleman) of that Knowledge which I haue, I will not bee greatelye ſqueimyſhe, a certayne ſecrete experiment in deede I haue, wherewith perchaunce I may fatiffy your demaund. And this is it: I can by mine Arte in ſmal time, by certayne compoſitions, frame a Woman's Image, which you continually in a lyttle Boxe may carry about you, and fo ofte as you liſt behold the ſame. If the wife doe not breake hir maryage faith, you ſhall ſtill ſee the ſame ſo fayre and wel coloured as it was at the firſt making, and ſeeme as though it newly came from the painter's ſhop, but if perchaunce ſhe meane to abuſe hir honeſty the ſame wil waxe pale, and in deede committing that filthy Fa&t, ſodainly the colour will bee blacke, as arayed with Cole or other filth, and the ſmel thereof wyl not be very pleaſaunt, but at al times when ſhe is attempted or purſued, the colour will be ſo yealow as Gold." This maruellous ſecrete deuſe greatly pleaſed the Knyght verely beleuing the ſame to be true, ſpecially much moued and affured by the ſame bruted abrode of his ſcience, whereof the Cytizens of Cutiauo, tolde very



ffraunge and incredyble things. When the pryce was paid for this precious Iewel, hee receiued the Image, and ioyfully returned home to his Castell, where tarryinge certain dayes, he determined to repayre to the Court of the glorious king Mathie, making his wife priuy of hys intent. Afterwards when he had disposed his household matters in order, he committed the gouernment therof to his Wife, and hauinge prepared all Neecessaries for his voyage, to the great forrow and grief of his beloued, he departed and arryued at Alba Regale, where that time the king lay with Beatrix his Wife, of whom hee was ioyfully receiued and entertayned. He had not long continued in the Court, but he had obtained and won the fauor and good wyll of all men. The king which knew him full well very honorably placed him in his Courte, and by him accomplished diuers and many waighty affairs, which very wisely and trustely he brought to passe according to the king's mind and pleasure. Afterwards he was made Colonell of a certain number of footmen sent by the king against the Turks to defende a holde which the enimies of God began to assaile vnder the conduct of Mustapha Basca, which conduct he so wel directed and therein stoutly behaued himself, as he chased al the infidels oute of those coasts, winning therby the name of a most valiaunt foldier and prudent Captaine, whereby he merueylously gayned the fauor and grace of the king, who (ouer and besides his dayly intertaynment) gaue vnto him a Castle, and the Reuenue in fee farme for euer. Sutch rewards deserue all valiaunt men, which for the honour of theyr Prince and countrey do willingly imploy their seruice, worthy no doubt of great regard and chearishinge, vpon their home returne, because they hate idlenes to win Glory, deuisinge rather to spende whole dayes in fiede, than houres in Courte, which this worthy knight deserued, who not able to sustayne his poore Estate; by politick wisdome and prowesse of armes endeoured to serue his Lord and countrey, wherein surely hee made a very good choyse. Then he deuoutly prayed God, for that he put into his minde futch a noble enterprife, trusting dayly to atchieue greater Fame and Glory: but the greater was his ioy and contentation, bicause the Image of hys Wyfe inclosed wythin a Boxe, whych still hee caried about him in hys purffe, continued freshe of coloure with-

out alteration. It was noyfed in the Court how thys valiaunt Knight Vlrico, had in Boeme the fayrest and goodliest Lady to his Wife that liued eyther in Boeme, or Hungary. It chanced as a certaine company of young Gentlemen in the Courte were together (amonghs whom was this Knight) that a Hungarian Baron sayd vnto him: "How is it poffible, fyr Vlrico, being a yeare and a halfe fince you departed out of Boeme, that you haue no minde to retorne to fee your Wife, who, as the common fame reporteth, is one of the goodliest Women of all the Countrey: truly it seemeth to me, that you care not for hir, which were great pittie if hir beauty be correspondent to hir Fame." "Syr," (quod Vlrico) "what hir beauty is I referre vnto the World, but how fo euer you esteeme me to care of hir, you shall vnderstand that I doe loue hir, and wil do so duringe my lyfe. And the cause why I haue not vifited hir of long time, is no little prooffe of the great affurance I haue of her vertue and honest lyfe. The argument of hir vertue I proue, for that she is contented that I should ferue my Lord and king, and fufficient it is for me to giue hir intelligence of my fstate and welfare, whych many tymes by Letters at opportunity I fayle not to do: The prooffe of my Fayth is euydent by reason of my bounden duety to our Soueraigne Lord of whom I haue receyued fo great, and ample Benefites, and the Warrefare which I vfe in his grace's feruice vpon the Frontiers of his Realme agaynst the enimies of Chrifte, whereunto I bear more good will than I doe to Wedlocke Loue, preferring duety to Prince before mariage: albeit my Wiue's fayth, and constancy is futch, as freely I may fpend my lyfe without care of hir deuoyr, being affured that befides hir Beauty shee is wife, vertuous and honest, and loueth me aboue al worldly things, tendring me fo dearely as she doth the Balles of hir owne eyes." "You haue stoutly sayd," (answered the Baron) "in defence of your Wiue's chafity, whereof she can make vnto hir selfe no great warrantice, becaufe a woman some tymes will bee in minde not to be mooued at the requests, and gifts offred by the greateft Prince of the World who afterwards within a day vpon the onely fight, and view of some lusty youth, at one fimple worde vttered with a few Teares, and shorter fuite, yeldeth to his request. And what is she then that can conceyue

futch affurance in hir selfe? What is hee that knoweth the secretes of heartes which be impenetrable? Surely none as I suppose, except God him selfe. A Woman of hir owne nature is moouable and plyant, and is the moste ambitious creature of the Worlde. And (by God) no Woman doe I know but that she lusteth and desireth to be beloned, required, sued vnto, honored and cherished? And oftentimes it commeth to passe that the most crafty Dames which thincke with fayned Lookes to feede their diuers Louers, be the first that thrust their heads into the amorous Nets, and lyke little Birdes in hard distresse of weather be caught in Louer's Lime-twigges. Whereby, sir Vlrico, I do not see that your Wyfe (aboue all other Women compact of flesh and bone) hath futch priuiledge from God, but that she may be soone entified and corrupted." "Well sir," (sayd the Boeme Knight) "I am persuaded of that which I haue spoken, and verely doe beleue the effect of my beliefe most true. Euery man knoweth his owne affayres, and the Foole knoweth better what hee hath, than hys neighbors, do, be they neuer so wise. Beleue you what you thincke for good. I meane not to digresse from that which I conceyue. And suffer me (I pray you) to beleue what I list, fith beliefe cannot hurt me, nor yet your discredite can hinder my beliefe, being free for ech man in semblable chaunces to thinke, and belieue what his mynde lusteth and liketh." There were many other Lordes and Gentlemen of the court present at there talke, and as we commonly see (at futch like meetinges) euery man vttereth his minde: whereupon sundry opinions were produced touching that question. And because diuers men be of diuers natures, and many presuminge vpon the pregnancy of their wife heads there rose some stur about that talke, each man obstinate in hys alledged reason, more forward peradventure than reason, more rightly required: the communication grew so hot and talke brake forth so loude, as the same was reported to the Queene. The good Lady fory to heare tell of futch strife within hir Court, abhorring naturally all controuersie and contention, sent for the parties, and required theym from poynt to poynt to make recitall of the beginning, and circumstance of their reasons, and arguments. And when she vnderstode the effect of al their talke, she sayd, that euery man at his

owne pleasure might beleue what he list, affirming it to be presumptuous and extreme folly, to iudge all women to be of one disposition, in like fort as it were a great error to say that all men be of one quality and condicion: the contrary by dayly experience manifestly appearing. For both in men and women, there is fo great difference and variety of natures, as there bee heades, and wits. And how it is commonly seene that two Brothers, and Sisters, borne at one Byrth, bee yet of contrary Natures and Complexions, of Manners, and Conditions fo diuers, as the thinge which shall please the one, is altogether displeasaut to the other. Wherevppon the Queene concluded, that the Boeme knight had good reason to continue that good and honest credit of his Wyfe, as hauing proued hir fidelity of long time, wherein she shewed hirself to be very wise and discret. Now because (as many times we see) the natures and appetites of diuers men be insaciabie, and one man sometimes more foolish hardy than another, euen so (to say the troth) were those two Hungarian Barons, who seeming wise in their owne conceiptes, one of them sayd to the Queene in this manner: "Madame, your grace doth wel maintaine the sexe of womankind, because you be a Woman. For by nature it is giuen to that kinde, stoutly to stand in defence of themselves, because their imbecillity, and weakenes otherwise would bewray them: and although good reasons might be alledged to open the causes of their debility, and why they be not able to attayne the hault excellency of man, yet for this tyme I doe not meane to be tedious vnto your grace, least the little heart of Woman should ryle and display that conceit which is wrapt within that little Moulde. But to retourne to this chaste Lady, through whom our talke began, if we might craue licence of your Maiesty, and faulfe Conduct of thys Gentleman to knowe hir dwelling place, and haue leaue to speake to hir, we doubt not but to breake with our batteringe talke the Adamant Walles of hir Chastity that is fo famous, and cary away that Spoile which victoriously we shall atchieue." "I know not," answered the Boeme Knight, "what yee can, or will doe, but sure I am, that hitherto I am not deceyued." Many things were spoken there, and sundry opinions of eyther partes alledged, in ende the two Hungarian Barons persuaded

them felues, and made their vaunts that they were able to climbe the Skyes, and both would attempt and also bring to passe any enterprife were it neuer so great, affirming their former offer by othe, and offering to Guage all the Landes, and goods they had, that within the space of 5 moneths they woulde eyther of them obtayne the Gentlewoman's good will to do what they list, so that the knight were bound, neyther to returne home, ne yet to aduertise hir of their determination. The Queene, and all the standers by, laughed heartely at this their offer, mocking and iesting at their foolish, and youthly conceites. Whych the Barons perceiuing, sayde: "You thinke Madame that we speake triflingly, and be not able to accomplishe this our propofed enterprife, but Madame, may it please you to gieue vs leaue, wee meane by earnest attempt to gieue prooffe thereof." And as they were thus in reasoning and debating the matter, the kinge (hearinge tell of this large offer made by the Barons) came into the place where the queene was, at such time as she was about to dissuade them from the frantik deuise. Before whom he being entred the chamber, the two Barons fell downe vpon their Knees, and humbly besought his Grace, that the compact made betwene sir Vlrico and them might proceede, disclosing vnto him in few wordes the effect of all their talke, which franckly was graunted by the king. But the Barons added a Prouiso, that when they had won their Wager, the Knight by no meanes shoulde hurt his Wyfe, and from that tyme forth shoulde gieue ouer hys false Opinion, that women were not naturally gieuen to the suites and requests of amorous persons. The Boeme Knight, who was assured of hys Wyue's great Honesty, and Loyall fayth, beleeued so true as the Gospell, the proportion and quality of the Image, who in all the tyme that hee was farre of, neuer perceyued the same to bee eyther Pale or Black, but at that tyme lookinge vpon the Image, hee perceiued a certayne Yealow colour to rise, as hee thought his Wyfe was by some loue pursued, but yet sodeynly it returned agayne to his naturall hewe, which boldned him to say these words to the Hungarian Barons: "Yee be a couple of pleasaunt, and vnbeleeuing Gentlemen, and haue conceyued so fantastical opinion, as euer men of your calling did: but sith you proceede in your obstinate folly, and

wil needes guage all the Lands, and goods you haue, that you bee able to vanquish my Wyue's Honeft, and Chafte heart, I am contented, for the finguler credite which I refofe in hir, to ioyne with you, and will pledge the poore lyuinge I haue for prooffe of mine Opinion, and fhall accomplifhe al other your requestes made here, before the maiefties of the Kinge and Queene. And therefore may it pleafe your highneffe, fith this fond deuce can not be beaten out of their heads, to giue Licence vnto thofe Noblemen, the Lords Vladiflao and Alberto, (fo were they called) to put in prooffe the mery conceipt of their difpofed mindes (whereoff they do fo greatly bragge) and I by your good grace and fauoure, am content to agree to their demaundes: and wee, answered the Hungarians, do once agayne affirme the fame which wee haue fpoken." The king willing to haue them gyue ouer that strife, was intreated to the contrary by the Barons: whereupon the kinge perceyuinge their Follies, caufed a decree of the bargayne to be put in writing, eyther Parties interchaungeably fubfcribing the fame. Which done, they tooke their leaues. Afterwards, the two Hungarians began to put their enterprife in order and agreed betweene themfelues, Alberto to bee the firfte that fhould aduenture vpon the Lady. And that within fixe Weekes after vpon his returne, the lord Vladiflao fhould proceede. Thefe things concluded, and all Furnitures for their feuerall Iorneyes difpofed, the lord Alberto departed in good order, with two feruaunts directly traauyling to the caftle of the Boeme Knight, where being arrined, hee lighted at an Inne of the towne adioyning to the Caftle, and demaunding of the hofte, the Conditions of the lady, hee vnderftood that fhee was a very fayre Woman, and that hir honefty, and loue towards hir hufbande farre excelled hir beauty. Which wordes nothing difmayede the Amorous Baron, but when hee had pulled of his Bootes, and richely arayed hymfelfe, he repayred to the Caftle, and knockinge at the Gates, gaue the Lady to vnderftand that he was come to fee hir. She which was a curteous Gentlewoman, caufed him to be brought in, and gently gaue him honourable intertaynment. The Baron greatly mused vpon the beauty, and goodlineffe of the Lady, fingularly commending hir honeft order and Behaiour. And beinge fet down, the young

Gentleman sayd vnto hir: "Madame, mooued with the fame of your surpassing Beauty, which now I see to bee more excellent than Fame with hir swiftest Wyngs is able to cary: I am come from the Court to view and see if that were true, or whether lying Brutes had scattered their Vulgar talke in wayne: but finding the same farre more fine and pure than erst I did expect, I craue Lycence of your Ladyship, to conceyue none offence of this my boulder, and rude attempt." And herewithall hee began to ioyn many trifling and wayne words, whych dalyinge Suters by heate of Lusty bloude bee wont to shoote forth, to declare theym felues not to be Speachlesse, or Tongue tied. Which the Lady well espying speedily imagined into what Porte hys rotten Barke would arriue: wherefore in the ende when shee sawe his Shippe at Roade, began to enter in prety louinge talke, by little, and little to encourage his fond attempt. The Baron thinkinge hee had caught the Ele by the Tayle, not well practised in Cicero his schoole, ceased not fondly to contriue the time, by making hir beleue, that he was farre in loue. The Lady weary (God wote) of his fonde behaiour, and amorous reasons, and yet not to seeme scornfull, made him good countenance, in sutch wyse as the Hungarian two or three dayes did nothing else but proceede in wayne Pursute, Shee perceyuing him to bee but a Hauke of the first Coate, deuyfed to recompence hys Follies with sutch entertaynement, as during his life, he shoulde keepe the same in good remembraunce. Wherefore not long after, fayning as though his great wisedome, vttered by eloquent Talke, had subdued hir, shee sayd thus vnto him: "My Lord, the reasons you produce, and your pleasaunt gesture in my house, haue so inchaunted mee, that impossible it is, but I must needs agree vnto your wyll: for where I neuer thought during lyfe, to stayne the purity of marriage Bed, and determined continually to preferue my selfe inuiolably for my Husbände: your noble grace, and curteous behaiour, haue (I say) so bewitched mee, that ready I am to bee at your commaundement, humbly beseeching your honour to beware, that knowledge hereof may not come vnto myne Husband's eares, who is so fierce and cruell, and loueth me so dearely, as no doubt he will without further triall eyther him selfe kill me, or otherwise procure my

death: and to the intent none of my house may suspect our doings, I shall desire you to morrow in the morninge about nyne of the Clock, which is the accustomed time of your repayre hither, to come vnto my Castle, wherein when you be entred, speedily to mount vp to the Chaumber of the highest Tower, ouer the doore whereof, yee shall finde the armes of my Husband, entayled in Marble: and when you be entred in, to shut the Doore fast after you, and in the meane time I will wayte and prouyde, that none shall molest and trouble vs, and then we shall bestowe our selues for accomplishment of that which your loue desireth." Nowe in very deede this Chaumber was a very strong Pryson ordayned in auncient time by the Progenitours of that Territory, to Impryson, and punishe the Vassals, and Tenants of the same, for offences, and Crimes committed. The Baron hearynge this Lyberall offer of the Ladye, thinking that he had obtained the summe of all his ioy, so glad as if he had conquered a whole kingdome, the best contented man aliue, thanking the Lady for hir curteous answere, departed and returned to his Inne. God knoweth vppon howe merry a Pinne the hearte of this young Baron was sette, and after he had liberally banketted his hoste and hostesse, pleasantly disposing himselfe to myrth and recreation, he wente to bed, where ioy so lightned his merry head, as no slepe at all could close his eyes, futch be the sauage pangs of those that aspyre to like delygths as the best reclaimer of the wildest hauk could neuer take more payne or deuise mo shiftes to Man the same for the better atchieuing of hir pray than dyd this braue Baron for brynging hys Enterprise to effect. The nexte day early in the morning hee rose, dressing himselfe with the sweete Perfumes, and puttinge on hys finest suite of Apparell, at the appoincted houre hee went to the Castell, and so secretly as he could, accordinge to the Ladies instruction, hee conueyed himselfe vp into the Chaumber which hee founde open, and when he was entred, hee shut the same, the maner of the Doore was futch, as none within coulde open it without a Key, and besides the strong Locke, it hadde both barre and Bolt on the outside, wyth futch fasteninge as the Deuill himselfe being locked within, could not breake forth. The Lady which wayted hard by for his comming, so soone as she perceyued that



the Doore was shut, ſtept vnto the ſame, and both double Locked the Doore, and alſo without ſhe barred, and faſt Bolted the ſame, caryng the Key away with hir. This Chamber was in the hygheſt Tower of the Houſe (as is before ſayd) wherein was placed a Bedde wyth good Furniture, the Wyndow whereof was ſo high, that none coulde looke out wythout a Ladder. The other partes thereof were in good, and conuenient order, apt and meete for an honeſt Pryſon. When the Lorde Alberto was within, hee ſat downe, wayting (as the Iewes do for Meſſias) when the Lady according to hir appoyntment ſhoulde come. And as he was in this expectation building caſtles in the Ayre, and deuifing a thouſand Chimeras in his braine, behold he heard one to open a little wicket that was in the doore of that Chamber, which was as ſtraight, as ſcarcely able to receiue a loafe of bread, or cruſe of Wyne, vſed to be ſent to the pryſoners. He thinkyng that it had ben the Lady, roſe vp, and hearde the noyſe of a lyttle girle, who looking in at the hole, thus ſayd vnto him: “My Lord Alberto, the Lady Barbara my miſtreſſe (for that was hir name) hath ſent me thus to ſay vnto you: ‘That for as much as you be come into this place, by countenaunce of Loue, to diſpoyle hir of hir honour, ſhee hath impryſoned you like a theefe, accordinge to your deſerte, and purpoſeth to make you ſuffer penance, equall to the meaſure of your offence. Wherefore ſo long as you ſhal remain in thys place, ſhe mindeth to force you to gaine your bread and drinke with the arte of ſpinning, as poore Women doe for gayne of theyr lyuinge, meanynge thereby to coole the heate of your luſty youth, and to make you taſt the ſorrow of fauce meete for them to aſſay, that go about to robbe Ladyes of theyr honour: ſhe bad me lykewiſe to tell you, that the more yarne you ſpin, the greater ſhall be the abundance and delycacie of your fare, the greater payne you take to earne your foode, the more lyberall ſhe will be in dyſtrybutyng of the ſame, otherwiſe (ſhe ſayeth) that you ſhall faſte wyth Breade and Water.’ Which determinate ſentence ſhe hath decreed not to be infringed and broken for any kinde of ſute or intreaty that you be able to make.” When the maiden had ſpoken theſe Wordes, ſhe ſhut the lyttle dore, and returned to hir Ladye, the Baron which thought that he had ben commen to a mariage, did eate nothing al the mornyng

before, bycause he thought to be enterteined with better and daintier store of viandes, who nowe at those newes fared like one out of his wittes and stoode still so amazed, as though his leggs would haue fayled him, and in one moment his Spyrites began to vanysh and hys force and breath forfoke hym, and fel downe vpon the Chamber flore, in sutch wise as hee that had beheld hym would haue thought him rather dead than liuyng. In this state he was a great tyme, and afterwardes somewhat commynge to himselfe, he could not tel whether hee dreamed, or else that the Words were true, which the maiden had sayde vnto hym: In the end seeing, and beyng verely assured, that he was in a Pryson so sure as Bird in Cage, through disdayne and rage was like to dye or else to lose his wits, faring with himselfe of long time lyke a madde Man, and not knowing what to do, passed the rest of the Day in walking vppe and downe the Chaumber, rauing, stamping, staring, Cursynge and vsing Words of greatest Villanie, lamenting and bewailinge the time and day, that so like a beast and Brutyshe man, he gave the attempt to dispoyle the honesty of an other man's Wyfe. Then came to his mind the losse of all his Lands and Goods, which by the king's authority were put in comprimise, then the shame, the scorne, and rebuke whych hee should receiue at other mens handes, beyonde measure vexed him: and reporte bruted in the Courte (for that it was impossible but the whole Worlde should knowe it) so gryeued hym, as his heart seemed to be strained with two sharp and bityng Nails: the Paynes whereof, forced hym to loose hys wittes and vnderstandynge. In the myddes of whych Pangs furiously vauntynge vp and downe the Chaumber, hee espied by chance in a Corner, a Dystaffe furnyshed with good store of flaxe, and a spyndle hangyng thereuppon: and ouercome wyth Choler and rage, hee was aboute to spoyle and break the same in pieces: but remembryng what a harde Weapon Necessitye is, hee stayed his wysedome, and albeyt he hadde rather to haue contryued hys leysure in Noble and Gentlemanlyke pastyme, yet rather than he would be idle he thought to referue that Instrument to auoyde the tedious lacke of honest and Familiar Company. When supper time was come, the mayden returned agayne, who opening the Portall dore, saluted the Baron, and sayde: "My

Lord, my mistresse hath sent mee to vyſite your good Lordſhyp, and to receiue at youre good Handes the effecte of your labour, who hopeth that you haue ſponne ſome ſubſtauciall ſtore of threede for earning of your Supper, whych beyng done, ſhall be readily brought vnto you." The Baron full of Rage, Furie, and felonious moode, if before he were fallen into choler, now by proteſtation of theſe words, ſeemed to tranſgreſſe the bounds of reaſon, and began to raile at the poore wench, ſcolding and chiding hir like a ſtrumpet of the ſtews, faring as though he would haue beaten hir, or don hir ſome other miſchiefe: but his moode was ſtayed from doying any hurt. The poore Wench leſſoned by her miſtreſſe, in laughing wiſe ſayd vnto him: "Why (my Lord) do you chafe and rage againſte mee? Me thinks, you do me wrong to vſe ſutch reprochful words, which am but a ſeruaunt, and bounde to the commaundement of my miſtreſſe: Why ſir, do you not know that a purſuaunt or meſſanger ſuffreth no paine or blame? The greateſt Kyng or Emperour of the Worlde, receiuing deſiaunce from a meaner Prynce, neuer vſeth his ambaffador with ſcolding Wordes, ne yet by villany or rebuke abuſeth his perſon. Is it wiſdome then for you, being a preſent pryſoner, at the mercy of your keepers, in thys diſhonorable ſorte to reuile me with diſordred talke? But ſir, leaue of your rages, and quiet your ſelfe for this preſent tyme, for my miſtreſſe maruelleth much why you durſt come (for al your Noble ſtate) to giue attemptes to violate hir good name, which meſſage ſhee requyred me to tell you, ouer and beſides a deſire ſhee hath to know whether by the Scyence of Spynning, you haue gained your meat for you ſeeme to kicke againſt the wynd, and beat Water in a mortar, if you think from hence to goe before you haue earned a recompenſe for the meat which ſhal be giuen you. Wherefore it is your lot patiently to ſuffer the penance of your fond attempt, which I pray you gently to ſuſtaine, and think no ſcorn thereof hardely, for deſperate men and hard aduentures muſt needs ſuffer the daungers thereunto belonging. This is the determinate ſentence of my miſtreſſe mynd, who fourdeth you no better fare than Bread and Water, if you can not ſhewe ſome prety Spynndle full of yarne for ſigne of your good wyll at this preſent pynch of your diſtreſſe." The

Mayden feeing that hee was not dysposed to shewe some part of wylling mind to gaine his lyuing by that prefixed scyence shut the portall Doore, and went her way. The unhappy Baron (arryued thether in very yll tyme) that Nyght had Neyther Breade nor Broth, and therefore he fared accordyng to the Prouerbe : He that goeth to bed supperlesse, lyeth in his Bed restlesse, for during the whole night, no sleepe could fasten hys Eyes. Now as this Baron was clofed in pryson faste, so the Ladye tooke order, that secretly wyth great cheare hys Seruauntes should be interteyned, and his Horffe wyth sweete haye and good prouender well maintained, all his furnitures, sumpture horse and caryages conueyed within the Castle, where wanted nothyng for the state of sutch a personage but onely Liberty, makyng the host of the Inne beleue (wher the Lord harbored before) that he was returned into Hungarie. But now turne we to the Boeme knight, who knowyng that one of the two Hungarian Competitors, were departed the Court and ridden into Boeme, dyd still behold the quality of the inchaunted Image, wherein by the space of thre or foure Dayes, in whych time, the Baron made his greatest sute to his Ladie : he marked a certaine alteration of Coloure in the same, but afterwards returned to his Natiue forme : and feeing no greater transfformation, he was wel assured, that the Hungarian Baron was repulsed, and imployed his Labor in vaine. Whereof the Boeme knight was exceedingly pleased and contented, bycause he was well assured, that his Wyfe had kept hir selfe ryghte pure and honest. Notwithstandyng hys Mynde was not wel settled, ne yet hys heart at rest, doubting that the lord Vladislao, which as yet was not departed the courte, would obtayne the thing, and acquite the faulte, which his Companion had committed. The imprysoned Baron which all this tyme had neither eaten nor dronken, nor in the night could sleepe, in the mornyng, after he had considred his misaduenture, and well perceyued no remedy for him to goe forth, except hee obeyed the Ladie's heft, made of Necessity a Vertue, and applyed himselfe to learne to Spynne by force, which freedome and honour could neuer haue made him to do. Whereuppon he toke the distaffe and beganne to Spynne. And albeyt that hee neuer Sponne in al hys Lyfe before, yet instructed by Necessity, so well as he could, he

drewe out his Threede, now small and then greate, and manye times of the meaneft fort, but verye often broade, yll fauored, yll clofed, and worfe twifted, all oute of fourme and fashyon, that fundry tymes very heartely he laughed to himfelfe, to fee his cunning, but would haue made a cunning Woman spinner burft into Ten Thoufand laughters, if ſhe had ben there. Thus all the morning he ſpent in ſpynning, and when dynner came, his accustomed meſſenger, the mayden, repayred vnto him againe, and opening the wyndow demaunded of the Baron how his worke went foreward, and whether he were diſpoſed to manifeſt the cauſe of hys comming into Boeme? Hee well beaten in the ſchoole of ſhame, vttered vnto the Maide the whole compact and bargayne made betweene him and his Companion, and the Boeme knyghte hir mayſter, and afterwards ſhewed vnto hir his Spyndle full of threde. The young Wenche ſmylyng at hys Woorke, ſayd: “By Sainct Marie this is well done, you are worthy of victual for your hire: for now I well perceiue that Hunger forceth the Woulf oute of hir Denne. I conne you thanck, that like a Lord you can ſo puiffantly gayne your lyuing. Wherefore proceeding in that which you haue begonne, I doubt not but ſhortely you will proue futche a workeman, as my miſtreſſe ſhall not neede to put oute hir flax to ſpinne (to hir great charge and coſte) for making of hir ſmockes, but that the ſame may wel be don within hir own houſe, yea althoughe the ſame doe ſerue but for Kitchen Cloathes, for dreſſer bordes, or cleanyng of hir Veffell before they bee ſerued forth. And as your good deſerts doe merite thanks for this your arte, now well begonne, euen ſo your new told tale of comming hyther, requyreth no leſſe, for that you haue dyſcloſed the trouth.” When ſhe had ſpoken theſe Woords, ſhe reached hym ſome ſtore of meates for hys dynner, and bade hym fare well. When ſhee was returned vnto hir Lady, ſhee ſhewed vnto hir the Spyndle full of threde, and told hir therewythall the whole ſtory of the compact betweene the knight Vlrico, and the two Hungarian barons. Whereof the Lady fore aſtonned, for the ſnares layd to entrappe hir, was notwithstanding wel contented, for that ſhee had ſo well forſeene the ſame: but moſt of all reioyſed, that hir husband had ſo good opinion of hir honeſt lyfe. And before ſhe would aduer-

tife hym of those euent, she purposed to attend the commyng of the lord Vladislao to whome she ment to do like penance for his carelesse bargayne and dishonest opinion, accordyngly as he deferued, maruelling very much that both the Barons, were so rash and presumptuous, daungerously (not knowing what kind of Woman she was) to put their Landes and goodes in hazard. But considering the Nature of diuers brainfick men, which passe not how carelesly they aduenture their gained goods, and inherited Lands, so they may atchieue the pray, after which they vainely hunt, for the preindice and hurt of other, she made no accompt of these attemptes, sith honest Matrones force not vppon the sutes, or vayne consumed time of lyght brained Cockscombs, that care not what fond cost or ill employed houres they waste to any the good renoume and honest brutes of Women. But not to discourse from point to point the particulers of this intended iorney, this poore deceined Baron in short time proued a very good Spinner, by exercise whereof, he felt sutch solace, as not onely the same was a comfortable sporte for his captiue time, but also for want of better recreation, it seemed so ioyfull, as if he had bene pluming and feding his Hawke, or doing other sports belongyng to the honourable state of a Lord. Which his wel attriued labour, the Maiden recompensed with abundance of good and delycate meates. And although the Lady was many times requyred to visite the Baron, yet she would neuer to that request consent. In which tyme the knyght Vlrico ceased not continually to viewe and reuewe the state of his Image, which appeared styll to bee of one well coloured forte, and although thys vse of hys was diuers times marked and seene of many, yet being earnestly demaunded the cause thereof hee would neuer disclose the same. Many coniectures thereof were made, but none could attayne the trouthe. And who would haue thought that a knight so wyse and prudente had worne within his purffe any inchaunted thyng? And albeyt the Kyng and Queene had intelligence of thys frequent practyse of the knight, yet they thought not mete for the priuate and secrete Mystery, to demaund the cause. One moneth and a halfe was passed now that the Lorde Alberto was departed the Court, and become a Castle knyghte and cunning Spynster: which made the

Lord Vladislao to muse, for that the promise made betweene them was broken, and hearde neyther by Letter or messenger what successe he had receiued. After diuers thoughts imagyned in his mynde, he conceyned that his companion had happily enioyed the ende of his desired ioy, and had gathered the wyshed fruitcs of the Lady, and drowned in the mayne Sea of his owne pleasures, was ouerwhelmed in the bottome of Obliuion: wherefore he determined to fet forward on his iourney to giue onfet of his desired fortune: who without long delay for execution of his purpose, prepared all necessaries for that voyage, and mounted on horsebacke with two of his men, he iourneyed towards Boeme, and within a few daies after arryued at the Castle of the fayre and most honest Lady. And when hee was entred the Inne where the Lord Alberto was first lodged, he dilygently enqyred of him, and heard tell that he was returned into Hungarie many dayes before, whereof mutch maruelling, could not tel what to say or think. In the end purposing to put in prose the cause wherefore he was departed out of Hungarie, after dilygent searche of the maners of the Lady, he vnderstoode by general voyce, that she was without comparison the honestest, wisest, gentlest, and comelyest Lady within the whole Countrey of Boeme. Incontinently the Lady was aduertised of the arriual of this Baron, and knowing his message, she determyned to paye him also wyth that Money whych she had already coyned for the other. The next Day the Baron went vnto the Castle, and knocking at the Gate, sent in word how that he was come from the Court of king Mathie, to visite and salute the Lady of that Castle: and as she did entertayne the first Baron in curteous guise, and with louing Countenance, euen so she dyd the second, who thought thereby that he had attained by that pleasaunt entertaynment, the game which he hunted. And discoursing vppon dyuers matters, the lady shewed hir selfe a pleasaunt and Familyar Gentlewoman, whych made the Baron to thynk that in short tyme he should wyn the pryce for which he came. Notwithstanding, at the fyrste brunt he would not by any meanes descend to any particularity of his purpose, but hys Words ran general, which were, that hearynge tell of the fame of hir Beauty, good grace and comelineffe, by hauing

occasion to repayre into Boeme to doe certayne his affaires, he thought it labor wel spent to ride some portion of his journey, though it were besides the way, to dygresse to do reuerence vnto hir, whom fame aduanced aboue the Skyes: and thus passing his first visitation he returned againe to his lodging. The lady when the Baron was gone from hir Castle, was rapt into a rage, greatlye offended that those two Hungarian Lordes so presumptuously had bended themselues lyke common Theeues to wander and roue the Countreys; not onely to robbe and spoyle hir of hir honour, but also to bryng hir in displeasure of hir husband, and thereby into the Daunger and Peryll of Death. By reason of which rage (not without cause conceived) she caused an other Chamber to be made ready, next Wall to the other Baron that was become sutch a notable Spynster, and vpon the nexte returne of the Lord Vladislao, she receiued him with no lesse good entertainment than before, and when Nyght came, caused him to be lodged in hir owne house in the Chamber prepared as before, where he slept not very foundly all that Night, through the continuall remembraunce of hys Ladies beauty. Next morning he perceiued himself to be locked fast in a Pryson. And when he had made him readye, thinking to descend to bid the Lady good Morrow, seeking meanes to vnlock the Doore, and perceiuing that he could not, he stoode styll in a dumpe. And as hee was thus standyng, maruelling the cause of his shuttyng in so fast, the maiden repaired to the hole of the dore, giuing his honor an vnaccustomed salutation, which was that hir mistresse commaunded hir to giue him to vnderstand, that if hee had any lust or appetyte to his breakfast, or if he minded from thenceforth to ease his hunger or containe Lyfe, that he should giue him selfe to learne to reele yarne. And for that purpose she willed him to looke in sutch a corner of the Chamber, and he should find certayne spindles of thred, and an instrument to winde his yarn vpon. "Wherefore" (quod she) "apply your self thereunto, and loose no time." He that had that tyme beholden the Baron in the Face, would haue thought that hee had seene rather a Marble stone, than the figure of a man. But conuerting his could conceyued moode, into mad anger, he fell into ten times more displeasure



with himfelfe, than is before described by the other Baron. But feeinge that his mad behauiour, and beaftly vſage was beſtowed in vayne, the next day he began to Reelee. The Lady afterwarde when ſhee had intelligence of the good, and gaynefull Spinning of the Lord Alberto, and the wel diſpoſed, and towardly Reeling of the Lord Vladiflao, greatly reioyced for makinge of futch two Notable Workemen, whoſe workemanſhip exceeded the labours of them that had been Apprentyzeſ to the Occupation ſeuē Yeares together. Sutch bee the apt and ready Wytſ of the Souldiers of Loue: wherein I would wiſhe all Cupides Dearlings to be nouſled and applied in their youthly time: then no doubt their paſſions woulde appeaſe, and rages aſſuage, and would giue ouer bolde attempts, for which they haue no thancke of the chaſte and honeſt. And to thys goodly fight the Lady brought the Seruaunts of theſe noblemen, willing them to marke and beholde the diligence of their Maſters, and to imitate the induſtry of their gallant exerciſe, who neuer attayned meate before by labour they had gayned the fame. Which done, ſhee made them take their Horſe, and Furnitures of their Lords, and to depart: otherwiſe if by violence they reſiſted, ſhe would cauſe their choller to be caulmed with futch like ſeruiſe as they ſaw their Lordes doe before their Eyes. The Seruaunts ſeeing no remedy, but muſt needes depart, tooke their leaue. Afterwards ſhe ſent one of hir Seruaunts in poaſt to the Courte, to aduertife hir huſband of all that which chaunced. The Boeme knight receyuing theſe good newes, declared the ſame vnto the King and Queene, and recited the whole ſtory of the two Hungarian Barons, accordingly as the tenor of his Wyues letters did purport. The Princes ſtoode ſtill in great admiration, and highly commended the wiſedome of the Lady, eſteeming hir for a very ſage and polliticke woman. Afterwards the knight Vlrico humbly beſought the king for execution of his decree and performanſe of the Bargayne. Whereupon the king aſſembled his counſell, and required euery of them to ſaye their minde. Vpon the deliberation whereof, the Lord Chauncellor of the Kingdome, with two Counſellers, were ſent to the Caſtle of the Boeme knight, to enquire, and learne the proceſſe and doinges of the two Lordes, who diligently accompliſhed the kinge's commaundement.

And hauinge examined the Lady and hir mayden with other of the house, and the barons also, whom a little before the arriuall of these Commiffioners, the Lady had caused to be put together, that by Spinning and Reeling they might comfort one another. When the Lord Chauncellor had framed and digested in order the whole discourse of this history, returned to the Court where the king and Queene, with the Pieres and Noblemen of his kingdome, caused the acts of the same to be diuulged and bruted abroade, and after much talk, and discourse of the performauce of this compact, pro, and contra, the Queene taking the Ladie's part, and fauoring the knight, the kinge gaue sentence that sir Vlrico should wholly possesse the landes and goods of the two Barons to him, and to his Heyres for euer, and that the Barons should be banished the kingdomes of Hungary and Boeme, neuer to returne vpon payne of death. This sentence was put in execution, and the vnfortunat Barons exiled, which specially to those that were of their consanguinity and bloud, seemed to feure, and rigorous. Neuerthelesse the couenaunt being most playne and euident to most men, the same seemed to bee pronounced with greate Iustice and equity, for example in time to come, to lesson rash wits how they iudge and deeme so indifferently of Womens behaviours, amongs whom no doubt there bee both good and bad as there bee of men. Afterwards the 2 princes sent for the Lady to the Court, who there was courteously intertayned, and for this hir wife and polliticke fact had in great admiration. The Queene then appoynted hir to be one of hir women of honor, and esteemed hir very deerely. The knight also daily grew to great promotion well beloued and faored of the king, who with his lady long time liued in greate ioy and felicity, not forgetting the cunning Pollacco, that made him the image and likenes of his wife: whose frendship and labor he rewarded with money, and other Benefits very liberally.

## THE TWENTY-NINTH NOUELL.

*Dom Diego a Gentleman of Spayne fell in loue with fayre Gineura, and she with him: their loue by meanes of one that enuied Dom Diego his happy choyse, was by default of light credit on hir part interrupted. He constant of mynde, fell into despayre, and abandoninge all his frends and liuing, repayred to the Pyrene Moun-taynes, where he led a sauage lyfe for certayne moneths, and after-wardes knowne by one of hys freendes, was (by marueylous Circum-stance) reconciled to hys froward mistresse, and maryed.*

MENS mischaunces occurring on the brunts of dyuers Tragical fortunes, albeit vpon their first taste of bitternesse, they fauor of a certayne kinde of lothsome relish, yet vnder the Rynde of that vnfauerouse Sap, doth lurke a sweeter honnye, than sweetenesse it selfe, for the fruit that the Posterity may gather, and learne by others hurts, how they may loathe, and shun the like. But bicause all thinges haue their seasons, and euery thyng is not conuenient for all Times, and Places, I purpose now to shew a notable example of a vayne and superstitious Louer, that abandoned his liuing and friendes, to become a Sauage Desert man. Which History resembleth in a maner a Tragical Comedy, comprehending the very same matter and Argument, wherewyth the greatest part of the sottishe forte Arme themselues to couer and defend their Follies. It is red and seene to often by common custome, and therefore needeleffe heere to display what rage doth gouerne, and headlong hale fonde and licentious youth (conducted by the pangue of loue, if the same be not moderated by reason, and cooled with sacred Lessons) euen from the cradle to more murture and riper age. For the Tyranny of Loue amonges all the deadly Foes that vexe and afflict our mindes, glorieth of his force, vaunting hymselfe able to chaunge the proper nature of things, be they neuer so founde and perfect: who to make them like his lustes, transformeth himselfe into a substaunce qualified diuersly, the better to intrap futch as be giuen to his vanities. But hauing auouched so many examples before, I am content for this present to tell the

discourfe of two perfons, chaunced not long fithens in Catheloigne. Of a Gentleman that for his conftancy declared two extremities in himfelfe of loue and folly. And of a Gentlewoman fo fickle and inconstant, as loue and they which wayted on him, be difordered, for the truffleffe grounde whereupon futch foundation of feruice is layed, which yee fhall eafely conceiue by well viewing the difference of thefe twayne: whom I meane to fummon to the lifts, by the blaft of this founding trump. And thus the fame beginneth. Not long after that the victorious and Noble Prynce, younge Ferdinandus, the Sonne of Alphonfus Kynge of Aragon was deade, Lewes the Twelfth, that tyme being Frenche king, vpon, the Marches of Catheloigne, betwene Barcelona, and the Moun- taynes, there was a good Lady then a Wyddow, which had bene the Wyfe of an excellant and Noble knight of the Countrey, by whom ſhe hadde left one only Daughter, which was fo carefully brought vp by the mother as nothinge was to deare or hard to bee brought to paffe for hir defire, thinking that a creature fo Noble and perfect, could not be trayned vp to delicately. Now befides hir incomparable furniture of beauty, this Gentlewoman was adorned with Hayre fo fayre, curle, and Yealow, as the new fined golde was not matchable to the ſhining locks of this tender Infant, who therefore was commonly called Gineura la Blonde. Halfe adaye's iorney from the houfe of this Wyddow, lay the lands of another Lady a Wydow alfo, that was very rich, and fo wel allied as any in all the Land. This Lady had a Sonne, whom ſhe caufed to be trayned vp fo well in Armes and good letters, as in other honeft Exercifes proper and mete for a Gentleman and great Lorde, for which refpect ſhee had ſent him to Barcelona the chyefe City of all the Countrey of Catheloigne. Senior Dom Diego, (for fo was the Sonne of that Wydow called) profited fo well in all thynges, that when hee was 18 yeares of age, there was no Gentleman of his degree, that did excell him, ne yet was able to approche vnto his Perfections and commendable Behaviour. A thing that did fo well content the good Lady his mother as ſhe could not tell what countenance to keepe to couer hir ioy. A vice very common to fond and fooliſh mothers, who flatter themfelues with a ſhadowed hope of the future goodneffe of their children, which many times

doth more hurt to that wanton and wilfull age, than profit or aduancement. The persuasion also of futch towardnesse, full oft doth blinde the Spirites of Youth, as the Faults which follow the same bee farre more vile than before they were: whereby the first Table (made in his first coloures) of that imagined vertue, can take no force or perfection, and so by incurring sundry mishaps the Parent and Chylde commonly escape not without equall blame. To come agayne therefore to our discourse: It chaunced in that tyme that (the Catholike Kyng deceased) Phillippe of Auftrich which Succeeded him as Heyre, passing through Fraunce came into Spayne to bee Inuested, and take Possession of all hys Seignories, and Kyngdomes: which knowen to the Cityzens of Barcelona, they determined to receiue hym with futch Pompe, Magnificence, and Honor, as duely appertaineth to the greatnes and maiesty of so great a Prince, as is the sonne of the Romane Emperour. And amonges other thinges they prepared a Triumphe at the Tilt, where none was suffred to enter the lifts, but yong Gentlemen, futch as neuer yet had followed armes. Amonges whom Don Diego as the Noblest person was chosen chiefe of one part. The Archduke then come to Barcelona after the receyued honors and Ceremonies, accustomed for futch entertaynment, to gratifie his Subiects, and to see the brauery of the yong Spanish Nobility in armes, would place himsele vpon the scaffolde to iudge the courses and valiance of the runners. In that magnifque and Princely conflict, all mens eyes were bent vpon Dom Diego, who course by course made hys aduerfaries to feele the force of his armes, his manhoode, and dexterity, on horsebacke, and caused them to inuse vpon his toward valiance in time to come, whose noble Ghefts then acquired the victory of the Campe on his side. Which mooued King Phillip to say, that in all his life he neuer saw triumph better handled, and that the same seemed rather a battell of strong and hardy men, than an exercise of yong Gentlemen neuer wanted to support the deedes of armes, and traunyle of warfare. For which cause calling Dom Diego before him he sayd: "God graunt (yong Gentleman) that your ende agree with your good beginnings and hardy shock of prooffe done this day. In memory whereof I will this night that ye do your watch, for I meane to

morrow (by God's assistance) to dub you Knight." The yong Gentleman blushing for shame, vpon his knees kissed the Prince's hands, thanking him most humbly of the honor and fauor which it pleased his maiesty to do to him, vowing and promising to do so wel in time to come, as no man should be deceyued of their conceyued opinion, nor the king frustrate of his seruice, which was one of his most obedient Vassals and subiects. So the next day he was made knight, and receyued the coller of the order at the hands of king Phillip, who after the departure of his prince which tooke his iorney into Castille, retired to his owne landes and houle more to see his mother, whom long time before he had not seene, than for desire of pleasure that be in fieldes, which notwithstanding he exercised so wel as in end he perceyued refaunce in townes and Citties, to be an imprisonment in respect of that he felt in Countrey. As the Poets whilome fayned Loue to shoote his Arrowes amid the Woods, Forrests, fertile Fields, Sea coasts, Shores of great Ryuers, and Fountayne brinckes, and also vpon the tops of Huges, and hygh Mountaynes at the pursute of the sundry forted Nymphes, and fieldish Dimigods, deeming the same to be a meane of liberty to follow Loue's tract without suspection, voyde of company and lothsome cries of Citties, where Iealousie, Enuy, false report, and ill Opinion of all things, haue pitched their Camp, and rayed their Tents. And contrariwise franckly and wythout diffimulation in the fieldes, the Freende discovering his passion to his Mistresse, they enjoy the pleasure of hunting, the naturall musicke of Byrds and sometimes in pleasaunt Herbers compassed with the murmur of some running Brookes, they communicate their Thoughts, beautifie the accorde and vnity of Louers, and make the place famous for the first witnesse of their amorous acquaintance. In like manner thrice, and foure times blest be they there, who leeuing the vnquiet toyle that ordinarily doth chaunce to them that abyde in Citties, doe render duety of their studies to the Muses wherevnto they be most Addicted. Now Dom Diego at his owne houle loued and cherished of his mother, reuerenced and obeyed of his Subiects after he had imployed some time at his study, had none other ordinary pleasure but in rousing the Deere, hunting the wylde Bore, run the Hare, sometimes to fly at the Hearon, or fearful

Partrich alongs the fields, Forests, Ponds, and steepe Mountaynes. It came to passe one day, as he Hunted the wylde Mountayne Goate, which he had dislodged vpon the Hill top, he espied an olde Hart that his Dogges had found, who so ioyfull as was possible of that good lucke, followed the course of that swift, and fearefull beast. But (futch was his Fortune) the Dogges lost the foote of that pray, and he his men : for being horffed of purpose, vpon a fayre Iennet, could not be followed, and in ende loofinge the sight of the Deere, was so farre feuered from company, as he was vtterly ignoraunt which way to take. And that which grieved him moste was his Horfe out of Breath scarce able to goe a false Gallop. For which cause he put his horne to his mouth, and blew so loude as he could : but his men were so farre of, as they could not here him. The young Gentleman being in this distresse, could not tell what to doe, but to returne backe, wherein he was more deceyued than before, for thinkinge to take the way home to hys Castle, wandred still further of from the same. And trotting thus a long tyme, he spied a Castle Situated vppon a little Hill, whereby he knew himselfe far from his owne house. Neuerthelesse hearing a certayne noyse of Hunters, thinking they had bene his People, resorted to the same, who in deede were the Seruaunts of the Mother of Gineura with the golden Locks, which in company of their Mistresse had hunted the Hare. Dom Diego, when he drue neere to the cry of the Hounds, saw right well that hee was deceyued. At what tyme Night approched, and the Shadowes darkening the Earth, by reason of the Sunnes departure, began to Cloth the Heauens with a Browne and misty Mantell. When the Mother of Gineura saw the knight which Rode a soft pace, for that his Horffe was tired, and could trauayle no longer, and knowing by his outward apperance that he was some great Lord, and ridden out of his way, sent one of hir men to knowe what he was, who returned agayne with futch aunswere as shee desired. The Lady ioyfull to entertayne a Gentleman so excellent and famous, one of hir next neighbors, went forwarde to bid hym welcome, which she did with so great curtesy as the Knight sayd vnto hir : “Madame, I thinke that fortune hath done me this fauour, by setting me out of the way, to proue your

curtesie and gentle entertaynement, and to receyue this ioy by visiting your house, whereof I trust in time to come to be so perfect a friend, as my predecessors heretofore haue bene." "Sir," sayd the Lady, "if happineffe may be attributed to them, that most doe gayne, I thincke my selfe better faouored than you, for that it is my chaunce to lodge and entertayne him, that is the worthiest person and best beloued in all Catheloigne." The Gentleman blushing at that prayse, sayd nothing els, but that affection forced men so to speake of his vertues, notwithstandinge sutch as hee was, he vowed from thenceforth his seruice to hir and all hir Household. Gineura desirous not to bee slacke in curtesie, sayd that he should not so do, except she were partaker of some part of that, which the knight so liberally had offered to the whole Family of hir Mother. The Gentleman which till that time tooke no heede to the diuine Beauty of the Gentlewoman, beholding hir at his pleasure, was so astonned, as hee could not tell what to aunswere, his eyes were so fixed vpon hir, spendinge his lookes in contemplation of that freshe hew, stayned with a red Vermilion, vpon the Alabaister and fayre colour of hir cleare and beautiful face. And for the imbelishing of that naturall perfection, the attire vpon hir head was so couenable and proper, as it seemed the same day shee had Looked for the comming of him, that afterwarde indured so much for hir sake. For hir head was Adorned with a Garlande of Floures, interlaced wyth hir Golden, and Enamiled hayre, which gorgeously couered some part of hir Shoulders, disparted, and hanging down some tyme ouer hir passing fayre Foreheade, somewhyles vpon hir ruddy Cheekes, as the Sweete, and Pleasaunt windy Breath dyd mooue them to, and fro: Yee should haue seene hir wauering and crisped tresses disposed with so good grace, and comelyneffe, as a man would haue thought that Loue and the three Graces coulde not tell els where to harbor themselues, but in that riche and delectable place of pleasure, in gorgeous wife laced and imbraudred. Vpon hir Eares did hang two Sumptuous and Riche orientall Pearles, which to the artificial order of hir hayre added a certen splendent brightnes. And he that had beholden the shining and large Forehead of that Nimph which Gallantly was beset with a Diamonde of inestimable price



and value, chafed with a treffe of Golde made in form of little Starres, would haue thought that he had seene a Rancke of the twinkeling Planettes, fixed in the Firmament in the hottest time of Sommer, when that fayre seafon discovereth the order of his glittering Cloudes. In lyke maner the sparkeling eyes of the fayre Gentlewoman, adorned with a stately vaulte with two Archers, equally by euen spaces distinct, and deided, stayned with the Ebene Indian tree, did so well set forth their Brightnesse, as the eyes of them that stayed their lookes at Noone daye's directly vpon the Sunne, could no more be dazeled and offended, than those were that did contemplate those two flaminge Starres, which were in force able throughly to pierce euen the Bottome of the inward partes. The Nose well fourmed, iustly placed in the Amiable valley of the Vysage, by equall conformity Distinguisht the two Cheekes, stayned wyth a pure Carnation, resemblinge two lyttle Apples that were arryued to the due time of their maturity and ripenesse. And then hir Coralline mouth, through which breathing, issued out a breath more soote and fauorous than Ambre, Muske, or other Aromaticall Parfume, that euer the sweete Soyle of Arabie brought forth. She sometime vnclofing the doore of hir Lips, discovered two rancke of Pearles, so finely blanchd, as the purest Orient would blushe, if it were compared with the Beauty of thys incomparable whitenesse. But hee that will take vpon hym to speake of all hir inspeakable Beauty, may make his vaunte that he hath seene all the greatest perfectiones that euer dame Nature wrought. Now to come a little lower, on this freshe Diana appeared a Neck, that furmounted the Blaunch colour of Mylke, were it neuer so excellent white, and hir Stomacke somewhat mounting by the two Pomels, and firme Teates of hir Breasts separated in equal distaunce, was couered wyth a vayle, so lose, and fine, as those two little prety Mountaynes might easily be Discried, to moue, and remooue, according to the affection that rose in the centre of that modest, and sober Pucelle's mynde: who ouer, and besides all thys, had sutch a pleasaunt Countenance, and ioyefull cheere, as hir Beauty more than wonderfull, rendred hir not so woorthy to be serued, and loued, as hir natural goodnesse, and disposed curtesie appearing in hir Face, and hir excel-

lent entertaynement and comely Grace to all indifferently. This was not to imitate the maner of the most parte of our fayre Ladies, and Gentlewomen, who (mooued wyth what Opinion I know not) be so difdaynefull, as almost theyr name causeth discontentment, and breedeth in them great imperfection. And who by thinking to appeare more braue, and fine, by to mutch squeymishe dealing, doe offuscate and darken with folly their exterior Beauty, blotting, and defacing that which beauty maketh amiable, and worthy of honor. I leaue you now to confider wheather Dom Deigo had occasion to Forgo his Speach, and to bee bereft of Senfe, being liuely assayed with one so well armed as Gineura was with hir Graces and Honesty: who no lesse abashed with the Port, Countenance, sweete talk, and stately Behaviour of the knight, which she vewed to be in him by stealing lookes, felt a motion (not wonted or accustomed) in hir tender heart, that made hir to chaunge color, and by like occasion speachlesse: an ordinary custome in them that be surprised with the malady of loue to lose the vse of speach where the same is most needefull to giue the intier charge in the heart, which not able to support and beare the burden of so many passions, departeth some portion to the eyes, as to the faythful messengers of the mynde's secret conceits, which tormented beyond measure, and burninge with affection, causeth sometimes the Humor to gush out in that parte that discovered the first assault, and bred the cause of that Feuer, which frightened the hearts of those two yong persons, not knowing well what the same might be. When they were come to the Castle, and dismounted from their Horffes, many Welcomes and Gratulations were made to the knight, which yielded more wood to the fire, and liuely touched the yong Gentleman, who was so outraged with loue, as almost he had no minde of himselfe, and rapt by litle, and little, was so intoxicated with an Amorous passion, as all other thoughtes were lothsome, and Ioye displeasaut in respect of the faourable Martirdome which hee suffered by thinking of his fayre and gentle Gineura. Thus the knight which in the morning disposed him selfe to pursue the Hart, was in heart so attached, as at euening he was become a Seruaunt, yea and sutch a Slaue, as that voluntary seruitude wholly dispossessed him from his former

Freedome. These be the fruites also of Folly, inuegling the lookes of men, that launch themselues with eyes shut into the Gulfe of despayre which in ende doth cause the ruin and ouerthrow of him, that yeldeth thereunto. Loue proceedeth neuer but of opinion: so likewise the ill order of those that bee afflicted with that Passion, ryfeth not elsewhere, but by the fond perswasion which they conceiyue, to bee Blamed, Despised, and deceyued of the thing beloued: where if they measured that passion according to his valor, they would make no more account of that which doth torment them, than they do of their health, honor, and life, which loue for their great seruice and labor deludeth them, and recompenseth another with that for which the foolish Louer employeth thys trauel, which at length doth haste despaire, and ende more than desperate, when an other enioy that, for which hee hath so longe time beate the Bushes. During the time that supper was preparying, the Lady sente hir men to seeke the huntsmen of Dom Diego, to gyue them knowledge where he was become, and thereof to certify his mother, who when she heard tell that her sonne was lodged there, was very glad beyng a ryght good fryend and very familiar Neighbor with the Lady, the hostesse of Dom Diego. The Gentleman at supper after he had tasted the feruent heate that broyled in his Minde, coulde eate little meate, beinge satisfied with the feeding diete of his Amorous eyes, which without any maner of Iealousie, distributed their nourishment to the heart, who sat very soberly, priuily throwing his secretly Prickes, with louely, and wanton lookes, vpon the heart of the fayre Lady, which for hir part spared not to render vsury of rolling regardes, whereof he was so sparing, as almost he durst not lift vp his eyes for dazeling of them. After Supper, the knight bidding the mother and Daughter good night, went to Bed, where in steede of sleepe, he fell to fighinge and imageninge a thousande diuers deuises, fantasying like number of follies, sutch as they doe whose Braynes be fraught loue. "Alas," (sayde hee) "what meaneth it, that alwayes I haue lyued in so great liberty, and nowe doe feele my self attached with sutch bondage as I cannot expresse whose effects neuerthelesse be fastned in me? Haue I hunted to be taken? Came I from my house in liberty, to be

fhut vp in Pryfon, and do not know wheather I fhall be receyued, or being receyued haue intertaynment, according to defert? Ah Gineura, I would to God, that thy Beauty did pricke mee no worffe, than the tree whereof thou takeft thy name, is fharp in touching, and bitter to them that tafte it. Truely I efteeme my comming hither happy (for all the Paffion that I indure) fith the purchafe of a grieffe fo lucky doth qualify the ioy, that made me to wander thus ouer frankly. Ah Fayre amonges the Fayrefte, truely the fearefull Beaft which with the bloody Hare Houndes was torne in pieces, is not more Martired, than my heart deuided in Opinions vppon thyne Affection. And what doe I know if thou loueft an other more worthy to bee Fauoured of thee than thy poore Dom Diego. But it is impoffible that any can approche the fincerity that I feele in my heart, determining rather to indure death, than to ferue other but fayre and golden Gineura: therefore my loyalty receyuing no comparifon, cannot bee matched in man fufficient (for refpect of the fame) to be called feruaunt of thine excellency. Now come what fhall, by meanes of this, I am affured that fo long as Dom Diego liueth, his heart fhall receyue none other impreffion or defire, but that which inciteth him to loue, ferue, and honor the faireft creature at thys day within the compaffe of Spayne." Resolued hereupon, sweating, laboring, and traueilling upon the framing of his loue, he founde nothing more expedient than to tel hir his paffion, and let hir vnderftand the good wil that he had to do hir feruice, and to pray hir to accept hym for futch, as from that time forth would execute nothing but under the title of hir good name. On th'otherfide Gineura could not clofe hir eyes, and knew not the caufe almoft that fo impeched hir of fleepe, wherefore now toffing on th'one fide, and then turning to the other, in hir rich and goodly Bed, fantafted no fewer deuifes than paffionated Dom Diego did. In th'end ſhe concluded, that if the knight fhewed hir any euident ſigne, or opened by word of mouth any Speech of loue and feruice, ſhe would not refuſe to do the like to him. Thus paſſed the night in thoughts, ſighes, and wiſhes betwene theſe 2 apprentices of the thing, whereof they that be learners, ſhall ſoone attayne the experience, and they that follow the occupation throughly, in ſhort time be their crafts

maisters. The next day the knight would depart so soone as he was vp: but the good widow, imbracing the personage and good order of the knight in hir heart, more than any other that she had seene of long time, intreated him so earnestly to tarry as he which loued better to obey hir request then to depart, although fayned the contrary, in the end appeared to be vanquished vpon the great importunity of the Lady. Al that morning the Mother and the Daughter passed the time with Dom Deigo in great talke of common matters. But he was then more astonned and inamored than the night before, in sutch wise as many times he aunswered so vnaptly to their demaunds, as it was easily perceiued that his minde was much disquieted with some thing, that only did possesse the force and vehemence of the same: notwithstanding the Lady imputed that to the shamefastnesse of the Gentleman, and to his simplicity, which had not greatly frequented the company of Ladies. When dinner time was come, they were serued with sutch great fare and sundry delicates accordingly as with hir hart she wyshed to intertain the young Lord, to the intent from that time forth, he might more willinglye make repaire to hir house. After dinner he rendred thanks to his hostesse for his good cheare and intertainment that he had receiued, assuring hir, that all the dayes of his Life he would imploy himselfe to recompence hir curtesy, and with all duety and indeuor to acknowledge that fauor. And hauing taken his leaue of the mother, he went to the Damofell, to hir I say, that had so sore wounded his hearte who already was so deeply grauen in his mind, as the marke remained there for euer, taking leaue of hir, kissed hir handes, and thinking verily to expresse that whereuppon hee imagined all the Nyghte, his Tongue and Wits were so tyed and rapt, as the Gentlewoman perfectly perceiued this alteration, whereat she was no whit discontented and therefore all blushyng, sayde vnto him: "I pray to God fir, to ease and comfort your gryefe, as you leaue vs desirous and glad, long to enioy your company." "Truely Gentlewoman," (aunswered the Knyght) "I think my selfe more than happy, to heare that wysh procede from sutch a one as you be, and specially for the desire whych you say you haue of my presence, whych shall be euer readye

to doe that which it shall please you to commaunde." The Gentlewoman bashfull for that offer, thanked hym very heartilye praying him wyth sweete and smilinge Countenance, not to forget the waye to come to visite them, beyng wel assured, that hir mother would be very glad thereof. "And for mine owne part," (quod she) "I shall thinke my self happy to be partaker of the pleasure and great amity that is betwene our two houses." After great reuerence and leaue taken between them, Dom Diego returned home, where he tolde his mother of the good interteynment made him, and of the great honesty of the Lady hys hostesse: "Wherefore madam," (quod he to hys Mother) "I am desyrous (if it be your pleasure) to let them know how much their bountifull hospitality hath tied me to them, and what desire I haue to recompence the same. I am therefore wylling to bydde them hyther, and to make them so good cheare, as wyth all theyr Hearte they made me when I was wyth them." The Lady which was the assured fryende of the Mother of Gineura, lyked well the aduyse of hir sonne, and tolde him that they should bee welcome, for the aunciente amity of long time betwene them, who was wont many times to visit one an other. Dom Diego vpon his mother's words, sent to intreat the Lady and fayr Gineura, that it would please them to do him the honour to come into his house: to which request she so willingly yelded, as he was desyrous to bid them. At the appointed day Dom Diego sought al meanes possible honourably to receyue them: In meates whereof there was no want, in Instruments of all sortes, Mummeries, Morescoes, and a thousand other pastymes, whereby he declared his good bringing vp, the gentleness of his Spyrte, and the desire that he had to appeare sutch one as he was, before hir, which had already the full possession of his liberty. And because he would not faile to accomplyshe the perfection of his intent, hee inuyted all the Gentlemen and Gentlewomen that were his neighbours. I will not here describe the mooste part of the prouision for that feast, nor the diuersity of Meates, or the delycate kyndes of Wines. It shall suffice mee to tell that after dynner they daunced, where the knight tooke his mistresse by the hand who was so glad to see hir

felfe fo aduanced, as he was content to be fo neare hir, that was the sweete torment and vnſpeakable paſſion of his mynd, which hee began to diſcouer vnto hir in this wyfe: “Miſtreſſe Gineura I have ben alwayes of this Minde, that Muſike hath a certeine ſecrete hydden vertue (which wel can not be expreſſed) to reuiue the thoughts and cogitations of man, be he neuer ſo mornfull and penſiue, forcing him to vtter ſome outward reioyſe: I ſpeake it by my ſelf, for that I liue in extreme anguiſh and payne, that al the ioy of the World ſeemeth vnto mee diſpleaſaunt, care, and diſquyetneſſe: and neuertheleſſe my paſſion, agreeing with the plaintife voice of the Inſtrument, doth reioyce and conceiue comforte, as well to heare inſenſible thinges conformable to my deſires as alſo to ſee my ſelf ſo neere vnto hir, that hath the ſalue to eaſe my payne, to diſcharge my diſeaſe, and to de pryue my Mynd from all gryefs. In like maner reaſon it is, that ſhe hir ſelfe do remedy my diſeaſe, of whom I receiued the prycke, and which is the firſt foundation of all mine euil.” “I can not tell” (ſayd the Gentlewoman) what diſeaſe it is you ſpeak of, for I ſhoulde bee very vnkinde to giue him occaſion of grieſe, that doth make vs this great cheere.” “Ah Lady myne,” (ſayd the knight, fetching a ſigh from the bottome of his heart,) “the intertaynement that I receyue by the continuall contemplation of your diuine Beauties, and the vnſpeakeable brightneſſe of thoſe two Beames, which twinkle in your Face, bee they that happily doe vex me, and make me drink this Cup of bitterneſſe, wherein notwithstanding I finde futch ſweeteneſſe as al the Heauenly Drinke called Ambroſia, fayned by the Poets, is but Gall in reſpect of that which I taſte in mynde, feeling my deuotion ſo bent to do you ſeruiſe, as onely Death ſhall vnty the knot wherewith voluntarily I Knyt my ſelfe to be your Seruaunt for euer, and if it ſo pleaſe you, your Faythfull, and Loyall Freende, and Huſbande.” The yonge Damoſell not wanted for to heare futch Songs, did chaunge hir coloure at leaſt three or foure times, and neuertheleſſe fayned a little angre of that which did content hir moſt: and yet not ſo ſharpe, but that the Gentleman perceyued well enough, that ſhee was touched at the quicke, and alſo that he was accepted into hir

good Grace and Fauoure. And therefore hee continued styll hys talke, all that time after dinner, vntill the Mayden made hym thys aunswere: "Sir, I will nowe confesse that grieffe may couer alteration of affections proceeding of Loue. For although I had determined to dissemble that which I thinke, yet there is a thinge in my Mynde (which I can not name) that gouerneth mee so farre from my proper Deuises, and Conceyptes, as I am constraigned to doe that which this second Inspiration leadeth mee vnto, and forceth my Mynde to receyue an Impression: but what will be the ende thereof, as yet I knowe not. Notwithstandinge, reposinge mee in youre Vertue, and Honesty, and acknowledgyng your merite, I thincke my selfe happy to haue futch one for my Freende, that is so Fayre and comely a knight, and for futch I doe accept you vntill you haue obtayned of the Lady, my Mother, the second poynct, which may accomplish that which is moste defyred of them, that for vertue's sake do loue. And but for that you shall bee none otherwyse faouored of me, than hytherto you haue ben." "Tyll now haue I attended for thys ryght happye day of Ioy and Blyffe (sayd the Knyght) in token whereof, I doe kyffe your whyte and delicate Hands, and for acknowledging the faour that presently I do receiue, I make my vaunt to be the seruauant of hir that is the fayrest, and most curteous Gentlewoman, on thys side the Mountaynes." As hee had fynished those words they came to couer for Supper, where they were serued so honourably, as yf they had ben in the Court of the Monarch of Spayne. After Supper they went to walke abroad alongs the Riuer side, besette wyth Wyllow Trees, where both the Beauty of the time, the runnyng Ryuer, the Charme of the Natural musicke of birds, and the pleasaunt Murmure of the tremblyng Leaues, at the whistelyng of the swete Westerne Wynd, moued them agayne to renew theyr Pastyme after Dynner. For some dyd gyue themselues to talke, and to deuyse of delectable matter: some framed Nofegayes, Garlandes, and other prety posyes for theyr Fryendes; other some did leape, runne, and throwe the Barre. In the end a great Lord, neighbor to Dom Diego, whose name was Dom Roderico, knowyng by his Fryend's Countenance to what faynt hee was vowed, and perceyue-



ing for whose loue the feaste was celebrate, tooke by the hand a Gentlewoman that fate nexte to fayre Gineura, and prayed hir to daunce after a Song, whereunto shee beeynge pleafaunt and wyfe, made no great refusall. Dom Diego fayled not to ioyne wyth hys mystresse, after whome folowed the rest of that noble trayne, euery of them as they thought best. Now the Gentlewoman, that was ledde into daunce, song thys song so apt for the purpose, as if shee had entred the heart of the Ennimy and Mystresse of Dom Diego, or of purpose had made the same in the Name of hir, whom the matter touched aboute the rest.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,  
Than she that doth hir louer's heart possesse in bondage thrall?

The yong and tender feebleness  
Of myne vnkilfull age,  
Whereof also the tenderesse  
Doth feeble heart assuage:  
Whom Beauty's force hath made to frame  
Vnto a Louer's heft,  
So soone as first the kindled flame  
Of louinge Toyes increft.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,  
Than she that doth hir louer's heart possesse in bondage thrall?

I haue assayed out to put  
The fier thus begoone,  
And haue attempted of to cut,  
The threede which loue hath spoone:  
And new alliance fayne would flee  
Of him whom I loue best,  
But that the Gods haue willed me  
To yeld to his request.

Who may better sing and daunce among vs Ladies all,  
Than she that doth hir louer's heart possesse in bondage thrall?

So amiable is his grace,  
Not like among vs all:  
So passing fayre is his Face,  
Whose hue doth stayne us all:

And as the shining sunny day  
 Doth eu'ry man delight,  
 So he alone doth beare the sway,  
 Amongst eche louing wight.

Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,  
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart possesse in bondage thrall?

Why should not then, the fayrest dame,  
 Apply her gentle minde,  
 And honor giue vnto his name,  
 Wyth humble heart and kinde?  
 Sith he is full of curtesie,  
 Indewd with noble grace,  
 And breest replete with honesty,  
 Well knowne in euery place.

Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,  
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart possesse in bondage thrall?

If I should loue, and serue him than,  
 May it be counted vice?  
 If I retayne that worthy man,  
 Shall I be deemde vnwife?  
 I will be gentle to him sure,  
 And render him myne ayde:  
 And loue that wight with heart full pure,  
 That neuer loue affayde.

Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,  
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart possesse in bondage thrall?

Thus the most sacred vnity,  
 That doth our hearts combine:  
 Is voyde of wicked flattery,  
 The same for to vntwine.  
 No hardned rigor is our guide,  
 Nor folly doth vs lead:  
 No Fortune can vs twayne deuide,  
 Vntill we both be deade.

Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,  
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart possesse in bondage thrall?

And thus affured certaynely,  
 That this our loue shall dure,  
 And with good lucke hope verely,  
 The fame to put in vre  
 The fowen feedes of amity,  
 Begon betwixt vs twayne,  
 Shall in moft perfect vnity,  
 For euermore remayne.

Who may better fing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,  
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart poffeffe in bondage thrall?

Thys Song delighted the Myndes of many in that company, and principally Dom Deigo, and Gineura, who felt themfelues tickled without laughing: And the mayden reioyfed to heare hir felfe fo greatly prayfed in fo noble a company, and fpecially in the pre-  
 fence of hir friende who had no leffe pleasure by hearing the praifes of his beloued, than if he had bin made Lord of all Aragon. She for all hir difsembled Countenaunce could not hide the alteration of hir Mynde, without fending forth a fodayne change of colour, that forced a fayre and goodly taynt in hir Face. Dom Diego feeling that mutation, was fo ioyful as was poffible, for thereby he knew and Iudged himfelfe affured of the good grace of hys Miftrefse, and therefore wringing hir finely by the hands, fayd vnto her very foberly Smiling: "What greater pleasure my louinge Wench can there happen vnto your Seruaunt, than to fee the accomplifhment of this Prophetical Song? I affure you that in all my life I neuer heard muficke, that delighted me fo much as this, and thereby doe vnderftand the good will of the Gentlewoman, which fo curteoufly hath difcouered yours towards me, and the faythfull feruice whereof you fhall fee me from henceforth fo liberall, as neyther goods nor life fhall be fpared for your fake." Gineura who loued him with all hir heart, thanked him very humbly, and prayed him to beleeeue that the Song was truly foonge, and that without any fayle, she that foonge, had thereby manyfted all the secrets of hir mynde. The daunce ended, they fat them downe rounde about a cleare Fountayne, which by filent difcourfe, iffued from an high and moyfty rock, enuironned

with an infinite number of Maple trees, Poplars, and Ashes. To which place a Page brought a Lute to Dom Diego, whereupon hee could play very well, and made it more pleasauntly to sound for that hee accorded hys Fayninge Voyce to the Instrument, Singing this song that followeth.

That I should loue and serue also, good reason doth require,  
 What though I suffre loathsome grief, my life in woe to wrap?  
 The same be th'only instruments of my good lucke and hap,  
 The foode and pray for hungry corps, of rest th'affured hire.

By thought wherof (O heauy man) gush forth of teares great  
 fore  
 And by and by reioyft agayne, my driery teares do cease:  
 Which guerdon shall mine honor sure in that triumphant peace,  
 The summe wherof I offer now, were it of price mutch more.

Which I do make withall my heart, vnto that blessed wight,  
 My proper Goddesse here on earth, and only mistresse deere:  
 My goods and life, my brething ghost within this carcase here,  
 I vow vnto that maiesty, that heauenly starre most bright.

Now sith my willing vow is made, I humbly pray hir grace,  
 To end th'accord betwene vs pight, no longer time to tracte:  
 Whych if it be by fured band, so haply brought to passe,  
 I must my self thrice happy count, for that most heauenly fact.

Thys Song made the company to muse, who commended the trim inuention of the Knight, and aboue all Gineura prayfed him more than before, and could not so well refrayne hir lookes from him, and he with counterchaunge rendring alike agayne, but that the two wydowes their Mothers tooke great heede thereof, reioyving greatly to see the same, desirous in time to couple them together. For at that present they deferred the same, in consideration they were both very young. Notwithstanding it had bene better that the same Coniunction had ben made, before Fortune

had turned the Wheele of hir vnstablenes. And truely delay and prolongation of time sometymes bryngeth futch and so great missehappe that one hundred times men curffe their fortune, and little aduysse in foresight of their infortunate chaunces that commonly do come to passe. As it chaunced to those Wydowes, one of them thinking to loofe hir son by the vaine behauior of the other's daughter, who wythout the help of GOD, or care vnto his wil, disparaged hir honor, and prepared a poyson so daungerous for his Mother's age, as the foode thereof hastened the way to the good Ladye's Graue. Now whiles this loue in thys manner increafed and that the desyre of these two Louers, flamed forth ordinarily in fire and flames more violent, Dom Diego all chaunged and transformed into a new man, receiued no delyght, but in the sight of his Gineura. And she thought that there could be no greater Felicity or more to be wyshed for, than to haue a Fryend so perfect, and so well accomplyshed wyth all thyngs requisite for the ornament and full furniture of a Gentleman. This was the occasion that the young Knyght let no Weeke to passe without visting his mystresse twice or thryce at the least, and she did vnto hym the greatest curtesy and best Entertaynment, that vertue could suffer a Mayden to doe, whych was the diligent Treasurer and careful tutor of hir honor. And this she dyd by consent of hir Mother. In lyk maner, honestie doth not permyt chaste Maydens to vse long talk or immoderate speach, with the fyrst that be suters vnto them, and mutch lesse seemely it is for them to be ouer squeeimysh Nice, wyth that man whych seeketh (by way of marryage) to wyne power and tyle of the Body, beyng in very deede, or ought to be the moiety of theyr soule. Sutch was the desyres of these two Louers, which notwithstanding was impeeched by meanes, as hereafter you shal heare. For duryng the rebounding ioy of those faire couple of Loyall Louers, it chaunced that the Daughter of a Nobleman of the Countrey, named Ferrando de la Serre, whych was fayre, very Comely, Wife, and of good behauiour, by keepynge daily Company with Gineura, fell extremely in loue with Dom Diego, and affayed by all meanes to do him to vnderstand what the puiffance was of hir Loue which willingly shee meant to bestowe vpon him, if it woold please hym

to honor hir so much, as to loue hir with like sincerity. But the knight which was no more his own Man, beyng possessed of another, had with hys Lybertye lost his Wyts and Mynd to marke the affectyon of this Gentlewoman, of whom he made no accompt. The Maiden neuerthelesse ceased not to loue him, and to proue all possible wayes to make him hir owne. And knowing how much Dom Diego loued Hawking, she bought a hauke the best in all the cuntry, and sent the same to Dom Diego, who wyth all his heart receiued the same, and affectuously gaue hir thanks for that desired gyft, praying the messenger to recommend him to the good grace of his mistresse, and to assure hir self of his faythfull seruice, and that for hir sake he would kepe the Hauke so tenderly as the Balles of his eyes. Thys Hauke was the cause of the ill fortune that afterwards chaunced to this poore Louer. For going many times to see Gienura with the hauke on his fist and bearing with him the tokens of the goodnesse of his Hauke, it escaped his mouth to say, that the same was one of the things that in all the World he loued best. Truly this Word was taken at the first bound contrary to his meaning, wherewith the matter so fell out, as afterwards by despayre he was like to lose his Lyfe. Certaine dayes after, as in the absence of the knight, talk rose of his vertue and honest conditions, one praying his prowesse and valyance, another his great Beauty and Curtesy, another passing further, extolling the sincere affectyon and constancy which appeared in him touching matters of Loue, one enuious person named Gracian spake his mind of hym in this wyse: "I will not deny but that Dom Diego is one of the most excellent most honest and brauest knyghtes of Catheloigne, but in matters of Loue he seemeth to me so walteryng and inconstant, as in euery place where he commeth, by and by he falleth in loue, and maketh as though he were sicke and would dy for the fame." Gineura maruelling at those words said vnto him: "I pray you my frend to vse better talk of the Lord Dom Diego. For I do thynk the Loue whych the Knight doth beare to a Gentlewoman of thys cuntry, is so firme and assured, as none other can remoue the same out of the siege of hys mind?" "Lo howe you be deceiued Gentlewoman" (quod Gracian) "for vnder coloure of diffymulate seruice, he and sutch as he is doe abuse the simplicity of young

Gentlewomen. And to proue my fayinge true, I am affured that he is extremely enamored wyth the Daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre, of whom he receyued an Hauke, that he loueth aboute all other things." Gineura remembryng the words which certayn dayes before Dom Diego spake touching his hauke, began to suspect and beleue that which Gracian alleaged, and not able to support the choler, whych cold Jealofy bred in hir stomack, went into hir Chaumber full of so greate gryefe and heauynesse as she was many tymes lyke to kyll hir selfe. In the end, hoppyng to be reuenged of the wrong whych she beleued to receyue of Dom Diego, determyned to endure hir fortune patiently. In the meane tyme she conceyued in hir Mynd a despyte and hatred so great and extreame agaynst the poore Gentleman that thought lyttle hereof, as the former loue was nothing in respecte of the reuenge by death which she then desired vpon hym. Who the next day after his wonted maner came to see hir, hauing (to hys great damage) the hauke on his fyfte, which was the onely cause of all her Jealofie. Nowe as the knyght was in talke with the Mother, seeyng that his beloued came not at al (accordyng to hir custome) to salute him and bid him welcome, inquired how she dyd. One that loued hym more than the rest, sayd vnto him: "Syr, so soone as she knewe of your comming, immedyately she wythdrew hir self into hir Chaumber." He that was wyfe and well trayned vp diffembled what he thought, imagining that it was for some lyttle fantasie, whereunto Women wyllingly be subiecte. And therefore when he thought time to depart he toke leaue of the wydow, and as he was goyng down the staires of the great Chamber, he met one of the maides of Gineura, whom he prayed to commend him to hir mistresse. Gineura duryng al this time tooke no reste, deuising howe she myghte cutte of cleane hir loue entertained in Dom Diego, after she knewe that hee carryed the hauke on his fyfte: beyng the onely instrument of her frensie. And therefore thynkyng hir selfe both despyfed and mocked of hir Knyght, and that he had done it in despyte of hir, she entred into so great rage and Choler as she was like to fall mad. She being then in this trouble of Mynde, behold hir Gentlewoman came vnto hir, and dyd the knyght's messege. Who hearing but the sypmple name of hir sup-

posed Ennimy, began to fighe so fraungely, as a Man would haue thought hir soule presently would haue departed hir Body. Afterwards when she had vanquished hir raging fit whych stayed hir speach, she gan very tenderly to weepe, saying: "Ah traytor and vnfaithful Louer, is thys the recompence of the honest, and firme Amity whych I haue borne thee, so wyckedly to deceiue me vnder the colour of so faint and detestable a Fryendship? Ah rashe and arrant Theefe, is it I vpon whom thou oughtest to bend thy wycked Trumperies? Doste thou thinke that I am no better worth but that thou prodigally shouldest waste myne honor to bear the spoyles thereof to hir, that is in nothing comparable vnto me? Wherein haue I deserued thys discourtesy, if not by louyng thee more than thy beauty and fained loue deserue? Diddest thou dare to aduenture vpon me, hauyng thy conscyence wounded wyth futch an abhominable and deadly Treason? Durste thou to offer thy Mouth to kyffe my Hand, by the mouth of another, to whome thou haddest before dedicated thy lying Lyppes in thine owne person? I most humbly thancke Almighty God that it pleased him to let me see the Poison by thee prepared for the ruine of my lyfe and honor. Ha foole, hope not to take me in thy Trap, nor yet to deceyue me through thy sugred and deceitfull Words. For I sweare by the Almyghty God, that so long as I shall liue, I will accompte thee none other, but the most cruell and mortall Ennimy that I haue in this world." Then to accomplish the rest of hir carefull Minde she wrote a Letter to giue hir farewell to hir olde Friend Dom Diego. And for that purpose instructed hir Page with this Lesson, that when the knyght should come, he should be ready before hir lodging and say vnto him in the behalfe of hir, that before he passed any further, hee shoulde reade the Letter, and not to fayle to doe the Contents: the Page which was malicious, and il affectioned to Dom Diego, knowyng the appointed day of hys comming, wayted for hym a quarter of a mile from the Castle, where he had not long taryed, but the innocent louer came, agaynst whome the page went, bearyng about him more hurtfull and noysome weapons than al the Theeues and robbers had in all the Countrey of Catheloigne. In this manner presenting his mystresse letters, he said vnto him: "My Lord, madame Gineura my



mistresse hath sent me vnto you: and bicause she knoweth how feareful you be to dysplease hir, prayeth you not to fayle to reade this Letter before you passe anye further, and there wyth al to accomplysh the effecte thereof." The knyght abashed wyth that sodayne message, aunswered the Page: "God forbid my fryend," (quod he) "that I should disobey hir by anye meanes, vnto whom I haue gyuen a full authority and puissaunce over myne affectyons." So receyuing the letters, he kiffed them thre or four times, and openyng them, found that he loked not for, and red that whych he thought not off. The contents were these.

*The letters of faire Gineura, to the Knight Dom Diego.*

There shall passe no day of my Lyfe, from making complaynts of the disloyall and periured Louer, who being more esteemed and better beloued than thou dydst deserue, hast made so small accompte of mee, whereof I wyll be reuenged vpon my selfe, for that I so lightly beleued thy wordes so full of crafte and guyle. I am in mynd that thou henceforth shalt flye to buzze and beat the Bushes, where thou suspectest to catch the pray: for heere thou art lyke to be deceiued. Goe varlet, (goe I say,) to deceyue hir whych holdeth thee in hir nets and snares, and whose Presentes (althoughe of small Value) moued thee more than the Honest, Vertuous and Chaste Loue, that Vertue hir selfe began to knytte betweene vs. And sith a Carrion Kyte hath made the fly further off, than the Wynde of the Ayre was able to bear thee, God defende that Gineura should goe aboute to hynder thy follyes, and mutch lesse to suffer hir selfe to bee beguyled throughe thine Excuses. Nay rather God defend (except thou desirest to se me dy) that thou shouldest euer bee in place where I am, assuryng thee of thys my mynde, neuer to be chaunged so long as my soule shall rest wythin my body: which giuing breath vnto my panting breast, shal neuer be other, but a mortall enemy to Dom Diego: and futch one as euen to the Death wyl not fayle to prosecute the default of the most traiterous and vnfaythfull Knyght that euer was gyrte in girdle, or armed with Sword. And behold the last fauour that thou canst, or oughtest to hope of me, who

lyueth not but onelye to martir and crucify thee, and neuer shal  
beother but

The greateft Enimy, that euer thou haddeft, or  
fhalt haue, Gineura the fayre.

The myferable louer had no fooner red the Letter, but lifting vp his eyes to the heauens, he fayd: "Alas, my God thou knoweft well if euer I haue offended, that I ought to be banyfhed from the place, where my contentation is chyefly fixed, and from whence my heartfhall neuer departe, chaunce what myffehappe and Fortune fo euer fhall." Then tournyng himfelf towards the Page, hee fayd: "Sir Page my fryend, fay vnto my Ladye, moft humblye commending me vnto hir, that for this prefent time I wyll not fee hir, but hereafter ſhe fhall heare ſome newes from me." The page well leffoned for the purpoſe, made hym aunfwere, ſaying: "Sir, ſhe hath wylled me to ſay thus much by mouth, that ye cannot do hir greater pleaſure, than neuer to come in place where ſhee is: for ſo much as the Daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre hath ſo caught you in hir nettes, that loth ſhe is your faithfull heart ſhoulde hange in ballance, and expect the vncertaine Loue of two Ladyes at once." Dom Diego hearing the truth of hys miſſehap, and the occaſion of the ſame, made Lyghte of the matter for that tyme, till at length the Choler of his Miſtreſſe were abated, that thereby ſhee might know vpon how bryttle Ground ſhe hadde planted a ſuſpition of hir moſt faythfull and louing Seruaunt, and ſo retiring to his Houſe, altogether vexed and yll contented, he wente into hys Chaumber where with his Dagger he paunched the gorge of the poore birde, the cauſe of hys Ladies Anger, ſaying: "Ha vyle carraine kite, I ſweare by the bloud of him, that thou ſhalt neuer be the cauſe agayne, to make hir fret for futch a triflyng thing as thou art: I beleue that what ſo euer fury is hidden within the Body of this curſſed Kite, to engender a Plague, the ſame now is feafed on me, but I hope to doe my Myſtreſſe vnderſtande what Sacrifice I haue made of the thyng that was ſent me, ready to do the lyke vpon mine owne fleſh, where it ſhall pleaſe her to commaund." So taking Inke and Paper, he made aunfwere to Gineura as foloweth.

*The Letters of Dom Diego, to Gineura the faire.*

But who would euer thynck (my Lady deare) that a Lyght Opinion could so soone haue deuided your good iudgement, to condempn your Knight before you had heard what he was able to fay, for himself? truely I thought no more to offend you, than the man which you neuer knew, although you haue bene deceiued by colored words, vttered by those that be eniuious of my happe, and Enimies of your ioy, who haue filled your minde full of false report. I swere vnto you (by God, my good Lady) that neuer thinge entred into my fantasie more, than a desire to serue you alone and to auoide the acquaintance of all other, to preferue for you a pure and entire heart. Whereof longe agone I made you an offer. In wytnesse whereof I humbly beseech you to beleue, that so soone as you see this Birde (the cause of your anger and occasion of my mishap) torne and pluckte in pieces, that my heart feeleth no lesse alteration or torment: for so long as I shall vnderstand your displeasure to endure against mee, assure your selfe my Life shall abide in no lesse paine than my ioye was great when I franckly possessed your prefence. Be it sufficient (Madame) for you to know, that I neuer thought to offend you. Be contented I beseech you, with this sacrifice which I send you, if not that I doe the like vpon myne owne body, which without your good will and grace can no longer liue. For my lyfe depending vppon that only benefit, you ought not to be astonned if the same fayling his nourishment doth pearish, as frustrate of that foode, propre, and apt for his Appetite: and by like meanes my sayd life shall reuiue, if it may please you to spread your beames ouer mine obscure and base personage, and to receiue thys satisfaction for a fault not committed. And so wayting a gentle aunswere from your great curtesie, I humbly kisse your white and delicate handes, with all humility, praying God sweete Lady, to let you see how much I suffer without desert, and what puissaunce you haue ouer him that is all your

Faythfull and euer seruaunt  
most obedient, Dom Diego.

The letter clofed, and fealed, he deliuered to one of his faythfull and fecret Seruaunts, to beare (with the deade Hauke) vnto Gineura, charging him diligently to take heede to hir countenance, and aboue all, that faithfully he fhould beare away what ſhe dyd fay vnto him for aunfwere. His man fayled not to ſpeede himſelfe with diligence: and being come before Gineura, he preſented that which his maifter had ſent hir. She full of wrath and indignation, would not once vouchſafe to reade the letter, and mutch leſſe to accept the preſent which was a witneſſe of the contrary of that ſhee did beleue, and turninge vnto the meſſenger, ſhe ſayde: “My Frende, thou mayeſt goe get thee backe agayne, wyth the ſelfe ſame charge which thou haſt brought, and fay vnto thy mayſter, that I haue nothing to doe with his Letters, his Excuses, or any other thing that commeth from his handes, as one hauing good experience of his ſleyghts and deceipts. Tell him alſo, that I prayſe God, in good time I haue taken heede to the little fayth and truſt that is in him for a countergarde, lightly neuer hereafter to bee deceiued.” The ſeruyng man would fayne haue framed an Oration to purge his maifter, but the fierce Gentlewoman brake of his talke, ſaying vnto hym, that ſhe was wel reſolued vpon hir intent, whych was that Dom Diego ſhould neuer recouer place in hir minde: and that ſhee hated hym as mutch at that time as euer ſhee loued him before. Vppon whych aunfwere the Meſſenger returned, ſo ſorrowfull for the Miſfortune of his Mayſter (knowing hym to bee very innocent) as he knew full well into what deſpayre his Mayſter would fall, when he vnderſtode thoſe pitifull and heavy newes: notwithstanding needes he muſt knowe them, and therefore when he was come before Dom Diego, he recyted vnto hym from poynt to poynt his ambaffage, and deliuered hym agayne his Letters. Whereof the infortunate Gentleman was ſo fore aſtonned, as he was like to haue fallen downe dead at that inſtant. “Alas,” (ſayd he) “what yll lucke is this, that when I thought to enioye the benefite of my attempte, Fortune hath reuolted to bryng me to the extremity of the moſte deſperate man that ever lyued? Is it poſſible that my good ſeruiſe ſhould bee the cauſe of my approached ouerthrow? Alas, what may true and faithfull louers henceforth hope for, if not the loſſe of theyr tyme, when

after long deuoir and duetye, an Enuious fool shall come to depryue them of their ioy and gladnesse, and they feelyng the bytternesse of their abandoned farewell, one that loueth lesse shall beare away the sweete fruite of sutch hope, and shall possesse withoute deferte the glory due to a good and faythfull suter. Ah fayre Gineura, that thou seeft not the grieffe whych I do feele, and the affection wherewith I serue thee, and how much I would suffer to gayne and recouer thy good grace and fauour. Ha vayne hope, which vntill now hast fylled me, with mirth and gladnesse, altogether spent and ouerwhelmed in the gaulle of thy bytter fauour, and in the tast of thy corrupted lycour: better it had ben for me at the begining to haue refused thee, than afterwards receiued, cherished, and sincerely beloued, to be banished for so light occasion, as I am ful fore ashamed to conceyue the same within remembrance: but fortune shal not haue hir wil ouer me: for so long as I shall liue I wyll contynue the seruaunt of Gineura, and my lyfe I wyll preferue, to lette her vnderstand the force of Loue: by continuance whereof, I wyll not sticke to sette my selfe on fyre with the liuely flames of my passions, and then withdrawe the fyrebrandes of my ioy, by the rigour and frowardnesse that shall procede from hir." When he had fynished his talke, he began to sigh and lament so strangely, as his man was about to go cal the lady his mother. In whom dyd appeare sutch signes, as if death had ben at hand, or els that he had ben attached wyth the Spirite of phrensie. But when hee sawe hym aboute to come agayne to himselfe, he sayed thus vnto him: "How now, syr, wyl you cast your selfe away for the foolyshe toy of an vndiscrete girle, yll mannered and taught, and who perchaunce doth al this to proue how constant you would be? No, no sir, you must turne ouer an other Lease, and sith you bee determyned to loue hir, you must perseuere in your pursute. For at length it is impossible, but that this Diamont hardnesse, must needes bee mollified, if she be not a Diuell incarnate, more furious than the wildest beasts, whych haunt the deserts of Lybia." Dom Diego was comforted with that admonition, and purposed to persist in hys affection, and therefore sent many messages, giftes, letters, and excuses to hys angry mistresse Gineura. But she made yet lesse accompt

of them than of the first, charging the messengers not to trouble themselves about those trifles, for shee had rather dye than see hym, or to receyue any thyng from him, whom she deadly hated. When newes hereof came to the knyght, he was altogether impatient, and seeing the small profite which he did gaine by pursuing his folysh opinion, and not able to bestow his loue elsewhere, he determined to die: and yet vnwilling to imbrue his hands with his owne blood, he purposed to wander as a vacabond into some deserte, to perourne the course of his vnhappye and sorrowfull dayes, hoping by that meanes to quench the heat of that amorous rage, either by length of tyme, or by death, the last refuge of the myserable. For which purpose then, he caused to be made two pylgrims wedes, the one for himselfe, and the other for his man, and prepared al their necessaries for his voiage. Then writing a Letter to his Gineura, he called one of his men, to whom he said: "I am going about certayne of myne affayres, whereof I will haue no man to knowe, and therefore when I am gone, thou shalt tell my Lady Mother what I say to thee, and that within twenty dayes (God willing) I meane to retourne: moreouer I require thee, that foure dayes after my departure, and not before, thou beare theese letters to mistresse Gineura, and if so be she refuse to receyue them, saye not to deliuer them vnto hir mother. Take heede therefore if thou loue me, to do all that which I haue geuen thee in charge." Afterwards he called his seruauant vnto hym, which had done the first message vnto Gineura, which was a wise, and gentle fellow, in whom the knight reposed great affiaunce, to him he declared all his enterpryse, and th'ende whereunto his fierce determination did extend. The good Seruauant whych loued his mayster, hearing his intent so vnreasonable, sayde vnto him: "Is it not enough for you sir, to yelde your selfe a pray to the most fierce, and cruell woman that lyueth, but thus to augment hir glory, by seeing hir selfe so victorious over you? Are you ignoraunt what the mallice of Women is, and how much they triumph in tormenting the poore blynded foules that become their Seruauants, and what prayse they attribute vnto themselves, if by some misfortune they driue them to dispaire? Was it without cause that the Sage in times past did so greatly hate that Sexe,

and Kinde, as the common Ruine, and ouerthrow of men? What moued the Greeke Poet to fing theefe verses againft all forts of Women?

A common woe though filly woman be to man,  
 Yet double ioy againe ſhe doth vnto him bring:  
 The wedding night is one, as wedded folk tell can,  
 The other when the knill for hir poore ſoule doth ring.

If not for that he knew the happineſſe of man conſiſted more in auoyding the acquaintance of that fury, than by imbracing, and cheariſhing of the ſame, ſith hir nature is altogether like vnto *Æſop's* Serpent, which being deliuered from pearill and daunger of death by the ſhepeheard, for recompence thereof, infected his whole houſe with his venomous hiſſing, and rammith Breath. O howe happy is hee that can mayfter his owne affections, and like a free man from that paſſion, can reioyce in liberty, fleeing the ſweete euill which (as I well perceyue) is the cauſe of your deſpayre. But ſir, your wifedome ought to vanquiſh thoſe light conceipts, by ſetting ſo light of that your rebellious Gentlewoman, as ſhee is vnworthy to be fauoured by ſo great a Lord as you be, who deſerueſt a better perſonage than hir's is, and a frendlier entertainment than a farewell ſo fondly giuen." Dom Diego, although that he tooke pleaſure to heare thoſe diſcourſes of his faythfull ſeruaunt, yet he ſhewed ſo ſower a Countenance vnto him, as the other with theefe fewe wordes helde his peace: "Sith then it is ſo fyr, that you be reſolued in your miſhap, it may pleaſe you to accept mee to wayte vpon you, whither you are determined to goe: for I meane not to liue at mine eaſe, and ſuffer my mayſter, in payne, and grieſe. I will be partaker of that which Fortune ſhall prepare, vntill the heauens doe mitigate their rage vpon you, and your predeſtinate miſhap." Dom Diego, who deſired no better company, imbraced him very louingly, thankinge him for the good will that hee bare him, and ſayd: "This preſent Night about midnight, we wil take our Iourney, euen that way wheather our Lot and alſo Fortune ſhall Guide vs, attendinge eyther the ende of my Paſſion, or the whole ouerthrow of my ſelfe." Their intent they did put in prooffe: for at Midnight the Moone being cleere

when all things were at rest, and the Crickets chirping through the Creauifes of the Earth, they tooke their way vnseene of any. And so soone as Aurora began to garnish hir Mantle with colors of red and white, and the morning Starre of the Goddesse of stealing loue, appeared, Dom Diego began to sigh, saying: "Ah yee frefhe and dewy Mornings, that my hap is farre from the quiet of others, who after they haue rested vpon the Cogitation of their Ease, and ioye, doe awake by the pleasaunte Tunes of the Byrdes, to perfourme by effect that which the Shadowe and Fantasie of their Minde, did present by dreaming in the Night, where I am constraigned to separate by great distaunce exceeding vehement continuation of my Torments, to followe wilde Beasts, wandring from thence where the greatest number of men doe quietly sleepe and take their rest. Ah Venus, whose Starre now conducteth me, and whose beames long agoe did glow and kindle my louing heart, how chaunceth it that I am not intreated according to the desert of my constant minde and meaning most sincere? Alas, I looke not to expect any thyng certayne from thee, sith thou hast thy course amongs the wandring starres. Must the Influence of one Starre that ruleth ouer mee, deface that which the Heauens would to bee accomplished, and that my cruel mistresse, deluding my languors and griefs, triumpheth ouer mine infirmity, and ouerwhelmeth me with care and sorow, that I liue pynning away, amongs the sauage beasts in the Wilderneffe? For somutch as without the grace of my Lady, all company shalbe so tedious and lothfom vnto me, that the only thought of a true reconciliation with hir, that hath my heart, shal serue for the comfort and true remedy of all my troubles." Whiles he had with these pangs forgotten himselfe, hee sawe that the day began to waxe cleere, the Sun already spreading his golden beames vpon the earth and therefore hastely he set himself forthwards, vsing Bywayes, and far from common vsed trades, so neere as he could, that hee might not by any meanes be knowne. Thus they rode forth till Noone: but seeing their horffe to be weary and faynt, they lighted at a village, farre from the high way: where they refreshed themselues, and bayted their horffe vntill it was late. In this sort by the space of three daies they trauerfed the Countrey vntill they arriued to the foote



of a mountayne, not frequented almost but by Wilde and sauage Beasts. The countrey round about was very fayre, pleasaunt, and fit for the solitarines of the Knight: for if shadow pleased him, hee might be delighted with the couert of an infinite number of fruitfull trees, wherewith only nature had furnished those hideous and Sauage Defertes. Next to the high and well timbred Forrefts, there were groues and bushes for exercise of hunting. A man could desire no kinde of Venefon, but it was to be had in that Wildernesse: there might be seene also a certain sharpe and rude situation of craggy, and vnfruitfull rocks, which notwithstanding yelded some pleasure to the Eyes, to see them tapissed with a pale moasse greene, which disposed into a frizeled guise, made the place pleasaunt and the rock soft, according to the fashion of a couerture. There was also a very fayre and wide Caue, which liked him well compassed round about with Firre trees, Pine apples, Cipres, and Trees distilling a certayne Rosen or Gumme, towards the bottom whereof, in the way downe to the valley, a man might haue viewed a passing company of Ewe trees, Poplers of all sortes, and Maple trees, the Leaues whereof fell into a Lake or Pond, which came by certayne smal gutters into a fresh and very cleare fountayne right agaynst that Caue. The knight viewing the auncienty and excellency of the place, deliberated by and by to plant there the siege of his abode, for performing of his penaunce and life. And therefore sayd unto his seruaunt: "My friend, I am aduised that this place shall be the Monastery, for the voluntary profession of our religion, and where we will accomplish the Voyage of our Deuotion. Thou seest both the beauty and solitarinesse, which do rather commaund vs here to rest, than any other place nere at hand." The Seruaunt yelded to the pleasure of his mayster, and so lightinge from their horffe, they diffurnished them of their Saddles, and Bridles, giueing to them the liberty of the fields, of whom afterwards they neuer heard more newes. The saddles they placed within the Caue and leauing their ordinary apparell, clothed themselues in Pilgrimes weedes, fortifying the mouth of the caue, that wilde beasts should not hurt them when they were a sleepe. There the seruaunt began to play the Vpholster, and to make 2 little beds of mosse,

ramage". ! Arthur.

( whose spindle and wheele were of wood, ) so well polished and trimmed, as if he had bin a carpenter wel expert in that Science. They liued of nothing els, but of the fruits of those wilde trees, sometimes of herbs, vntill they had deuised to make a crosbow of wood, wherewith they killed now and then a Hare, a Cony, a Kid, and many times some stronger beast remayned with them for gage: whose bloude they pressed out betwene two pieces of wood and roasted them against the Sunne, seruing the same in, as if it had bene a right good Dish for their first course of their sober and vndelicate Table, whereat the pure water of the fountayne, next vnto their hollow and deepe house, serued in steade of the good Wynes, and delicious Drinks that abounded in the house of Dom Diego. Who liuing in this poore state, ceased night nor day to complayne of his hard fortune and cursed plight, going many times through the Defertes all alone, the better to muse and study thereupon, or (peradventure) desirous that some hungry Beare should descend from the mountayne, to finishe his life and paynefull griefes. But the good Seruaunt knowing his Mayster's sorow and mishap, would neuer go out of his sight but rather exhorted him to retourne home againe to his goods and possessions, and to forget that order of lyfe, vnworthy for futch a personage as he was, and vncomely for him that ought to be indued with reason and iudgement. But the desperate Gentleman wilfull in his former deliberation, would not heare him speake of futch retrayt. So that if it escaped the seruaunt to be earnest and sharpe agaynst the rudenessse and sottish cruelty of Gineura, it was a pastime to see Dom Diego mount in choller against him, saying: " Art thou so hardy to speak il of the gentlewoman, which is the most vertuous personage vnder the coape of heauen? Thou maist thancke the loue I beare thee, otherwise I would make thee feele how mutch the flaunder of hir toucheth mee at the heart, which hath right to punish me thus for mine indiscretion, and that it is I that commit the wronge in complayning of hir seuerity." " Now fir," sayd the seruaunt, " I do indeede perceyue what maner of thing the contagion of loue is. For they which once doe feele the corruption of that Ayre, think nothing good or faury, but the filthy smel of that pestiferous meat. Wherefore

! canby the

dried!

I humbly befeech you a little to fet apart, and remoue from minde, that feare and prefumptuous dame Gineura, and by forgetting hir beauty, to meafure hir Defert and your grieffe, you fhall know then (being guided by reafon's lore) that you are the fimpleft and weakeft man in the worlde, to torment your felfe in this wife, and that ſhee is the fondeft Girle, wholly ftraught of wits, fo to abufe a Noble man that meriteth the good grace and fweete embracement of one more fayre, wife and modeft, than ſhe fheweth hirfelfe to be." The knight hearing theſe words thought to abandon pacience, but yet replied vnto him: "I ſweare vnto thee by God, that if euer thou haue any futch talke agayne, eyther I will dye, or thou fhalt depart out of my company, for I cannot abide by any meanes to fuffer one to deſpiſe hir whom I do loue and honor, and ſhal ſo do during life." The ſeruaunt loth to offend his mayfter held his peace, heauy for all that in heart, to remember how the poore gentleman was reſolued to finiſh there, (in a defert unknowen to his Freendes) all the remanant of his life. And who aſwell for the euill order, and not accuſtome nourtire, as for affiduall playnts and weepings, was become ſo pale and leane, as he better reſembled a dry Chip, than a man, hauing feeling or lyfe. His eyes were fonke into his Head, his Beard vnkempt, his hayre ſtaring, his ſkin ful of filth, altogether more like a wilde and Sauage creature (futch one as is depainted in brutal forme) than faire Dom Diego, ſo much commended, and eſteemed throughout the kingdome of Spayne. Now leaue we this Amorous Hermit to paſſionate and playne his miſfortune, to ſee to what ende the Letters came that he wrote to his cruel Miſtreſſe. The day prefixed for deliucry of his Letters, his ſeruaunt did his charge, and being come to the houſe of Gineura, founde hir in the hall with hir mother, where kiſſing his Mayfter's Letters, hee preſented them with very great reuerence to the Gentlewoman. Who ſo ſoone as ſhee knew that they came from Dom Diego, all chaunged into raging colour, and fooliſhe choller, threwe theym incontinently vppon the grounde, ſayinge: "Sufficieth it not thy Mayfter, that already twice I haue done him to vnderſtand, that I haue nothing to doe with his Letters nor Ambaſſades, and yet goeth he about by futch aſſaultes to encrease

my displeasure and agony, by the only remembrance of his folly?" The Mother seeing that vnciuile order, although shee vnderstoode the cause, and knowinge that there was some discorde betweene the two Louers, yet thought it to bee but light, sith the Comike Poet sayeth:

The Louers often falling out,  
And prety warling rage:  
Of pleasaunt loue it is no doubt,  
The sure renewing gage.

She went vnto hir Daughter, and sayd vnto hir: "What great rage is this: let me see that Letter that I may reade it: for I haue no feare that Dom Diego can deceyue me with the sweetenes of his honny words. And truly Daughter you neede not fear to touch theym, for if there were any Poyson in theym, it proceeded from your beauty that hath bitten and stong the knight, whereof if he assay to make you a partaker, I see no cause why he ought to be thus rigorously reiected, deseruing by his honesty a better enter-taynement at your hands." In the meane time one of the seruing men toke vp the Letters, and gaue them to the Lady, who reading them, found written as followeth.

*The letters of Dom Diego, to mistresse Gineura.*

My dearest and most wel beloued Lady, sith that mine innocency can finde no resting place within your tender Corpse, what honest excuse or true reason so euer I do alledge, and sith your heart declareth itself to be Implacable, and not pleased with hym that neuer offended you, except it were for ouermutch loue, which for guerdon of the rare and incomparable amity, I perceyue my selfe to be hated deadly of you and in sutch wise contemned, as the only record of my name causeth in you an insupportable grieffe and displeasure vnspokeable. To auoide I say your indignation, and by my mishap to render vnto you some ease and contentment, I haue meant to dislodge my self so far from this Countrey, as neyther you nor any other, shal euer heare by fame

or true report, the place of my abode, nor the graue wherein my bones shall rest. And although it be an inexplicable heart's sorrow and torment, which by way of pen can not be declared, to be thus misprised of you, whom alone I do loue and shal, so long as mine afflicted soule shall hang vpon the feeble and brittle threede of life: yet for all that, this grieffe falling vpon me, is not irkesome, as the punishment is grieuous, by imagining the passion of your minde when it is disquieted with disdayne and wrath agaynst me, who liueth not, but to wander vpon the thoughts of your perfections. And forsomutch as I doe feele for the debility that is in me, that I am not able any longer to beare the sowe flockes of my bitter torments and martyrdom that I presently doe suffer, yet before my life doe fayle, and death doe seafe vpon my senses, I haue written vnto you this present letter for a testimoniall of your rigour, which is the marke that iustificth my vnguiltynesse. And although I doe complayne of mine vnhappy fortune, yet I meane not to accuse you, onely contented that eche man doe know, that firme affection and eternall thraldome do deserue other recompence than a farewell so cruell. And I am wel assured, that when I am deade, you will pittie my torment, knowing then, although to late, that my loyalty was so sincere, as the report of those was false, that made you beleeeue, that I was very far in loue with the Daughter of Dom Ferrande de la Serre. Alas, shall a Noble gentleman that hath bene well trayned vp, be forbidden to receiue the gifts that come from a vertuous Gentlewoman? Ought you to be so incapable and voyde of humanity, that the sacrifice which I haue made of the poore Birde, the cause of your disdayne, my repentaunce, my lawfull excuses, are not able to let you see the contrary of your perswasion? Ah, ah, I see that the dark and obscure vayle of uniuert disdayne and immoderate anger, hath so blindfold your eyes, and inuegled your mynde, as you can not iudge the truth of my cause and the vnrighthousnes of your quarell. I will render vnto you none other certificate of myne innocency, but my languishing heart, which you clepe betweene your hands, feling sutch rude intertaynement there, of whom he loaked for reioyse of his trauayles. But forsomutch then as you do hate me, what resteth for me to do, but to procure destruction to my self?

And fith your pleafure confifteth in mine ouerthrow, reafon willeth that I obey you, and by deth to facrifice my life in like maner as by life you were the only miftrefse of my heart. One only thing cheereth vp my heart agayne, and maketh my death more myferable, which is, that in dying fo innocent as I am, you fhall remayne guilty, and the onely caufe of my ruine. My Lyfe will depart like a Puffe, and Soule fhall vanifh like a fweete Sommer's blaft: whereby you fhall be euer deemed for a cruell Woman and bloody Murderer of your deuout and faythfull Seruaunt. I pray to God mine owne fweete Lady, to giue you futch Contentation, Ioyc, Pleafure, and Gladneffe, as you do caufe through your Rigor, Difcontentment, Griefe, and Difpleafure to the poore languifhing Creature, and who for euermore fhall bee

Your moft obedient and affected

feruaunt Dom Diego.

The good Lady hauing red the Letter, was fo aftonned, as hir words for a long fpace ftaied within hir mouth; hir heart panted, and fpirite was full of confufion, hir minde was filled with forrow to confider the anguifhes of the poore vagabound, and fofter Hermit. In the ende before the houfhold difsembling hir paffion which moued hir fenfe, fhe tooke her Daughter a fide, whom very fharpely fhe rebuked, for that fhe was the caufe of the loffe of fo notable and perfect a Knight as Dom Diego was. Then fhe red the Letter vnto hir, and as all hir eloquence was not able to moue that cruel damfell, more venemous than a Serpent agaynft the knight, who (as fhe thought) had not indured the one halfe of that which his inconfancy and lightneffe had wel deferued, whose obftinate minde the mother perceyuinge, fayde vnto hir: "I pray to God (deare daughter) that for your frowardneffe, you bee not blinded in your beauty, and for refusall of fo great a benefit as is the alliaunce of Dom Diego, you be not abufed with futch a one as fhall dimme the light of your renoume and glory, which hitherto you haue gayned amongs the fobrefte and modeft maydens." Hauing fayd fo, the wyfe and fage widow, went to the feruaunt of Dom Diego, of whom fhe demaunded what day his mayfter departed, which fhe knowing, and not igno-

raunt of the occasion, was more wroth than before: notwithstanding she difsembled what she thought, and fending backe his feruant, she required him to do hir hearty commendations to the Lady his miftrefse, which he did. The good Lady was ioyfull of them not knowing the contents of her sonne's letters, but looked rather that he had sent word vnto his lady of the iust hour of his returne. Howbeit when she saw that in the space of 20 dayes, nor yet within a moneth he came not, shee could not tell what to thinke, so dolorous was she for the absence of hir sonne. The time passinge without hearing any newes from him she began to torment hirselfe, and be so pensiue, as if she had heard certayne newes of his death. "Alas," (quod she) "and wherefore haue the heauens giuen me the possession of such an exquisite fruit, to depriue mee thereof before I do partake the goodnesse, and swetenes therof, and before I do enioy the gifts proceeding from so goodly a stock. Ah God, I fear that my immoderate loue is the occasion of the losse of my sonne, and the whole ruine of the mother, with the demolition and wast of al our goods. And I would that it had pleased God (my Son) the hunter's game had neuer bene so deere, for thinking to catch that pray thou thy selfe wast taken and thou wandring for thy better disport, missing the right way, so strangely didst straggle, that hard it is to reduce thee into the right track agayne. At least wif if I knew the place, whereunto thou arte repaired to finde againe thy losse, I would trauell thither to beare the company, rather than to lyue heere voyde of a Husbände, betrayed by them whom I best trusted and bereft from the presence of the my Sonne, the Staffe and onely comfort of myne olde age, and the certayne hope of all our House and Family." Now if the Mother vexed hir selfe, the Sonne was eased with no great reioyce, being now a free cittizen with the Beasts, and Foules of the Forrests, Dennes, and Caues, leauing not the Profundity of the Woods, the Craggednes of the Rocks, or beauty of the Valley, without some signe or token of his grieffe. Sometime with a Puncheon wel sharpned, seruing him in steede of a Penknife, he graued the sucresse of his loue vpon an hard stone. Other times the softe Bark of some tender and new growen spray serued him in steede of Paper, or Parchment. For there he

carued in Cyphres properly combined with a Knot (not easly to be knowne) the name of his Lady, interlaced so properly with his owne, that the finest heads might bee deceyued, to Disciphre the righte interpretation. Vpon a day then, as he passed 'his time (accordinge to his custome) to muse vpon Myffehaps, and to frame his succeffe of loue in the Ayre, hee Ingraued these Verfes vpon a Stone by a Fountayne side, adioyning to his rude and Sauage house.

If any Forrest Pan, doth haunt here in this place,  
Or wandring Nymphe, hath hard my wofull playnt:  
The one may well beholde, and view what drop of grace,  
I haue deseru'de, and eke what griefes my heart do taynt,  
The other lend to me some broke, or showre of rayne  
To moyst myne heart and eyes, the gutters of my brayne.

Somewhat further of many times at the rising of the Sunne, he mounted the Top of an high and greene Mountayne to solace himselfe vpon the freshe and greene grasse, where four Pillers were erected, (eyther naturally done by dame Nature, or wrought by the industry of man,) which bore a stone in forme four square, well hewed, made and trimmed in maner of an Aulter, vpon which Aulter he dedicated these verfes to the Posterity.

Vpon this holy squared stone, which Aulter men doe call,  
To some one of the Gods aboue that consecrated is,  
This dolefull verse I do ingraue, in token of my thrall,  
And deadly griefes that do my silly heart oppresse,  
And vex with endeleffe paynes, which neuer quiet is,  
This wofull verse (I say) as surest gage of my distresse,  
I fixe on Aulter stone for euer to remayne,  
To shew the heart of truest wight, that euer liued in payne.

And vpon the brims of that Table, he carued these Wordes :

This Mason worke erected here, shall not so long abide,  
As shall the common name of two, that now vncoupled bee,  
Who after froward fortune past, knit eche in one degree,  
Shall render for right earnest loue, reward on either side.



And before his Lodging in that wilde and stony Forrest vpon the Barke of a lofty Beeche Tree, feeling in himselfe an unaccustomed lustinesse, thus he wrote :

Th'increasing beauty of thy shape, extending far thy name,  
By like increase I hope to see, so stretched forth my fame.

His man seeing him to begin to be merily disposed, one day said vnto him: "And wherefore sir serueth the Lute, which I brought amongst our Males, if you do not assay thereby to recreate youre selfe, and sing thereupon the prayes of hir whom you loue so wel: yea and if I may so say, by worshipping hir, you do commit idolatry in your minde. Is it not your pleasure that I fetch the same vnto you, that by immitation of Orpheus, you may moue the Trees, Rocks, and wylde Beastes to bewaile your misfortune, and witnesse the penaunce that you doe for hir sake, without cause of so haynous punishment:" "I see well," (quod the knight) "that thou wouldest I should be mery, but mirth is so far from me, as I am estraunged from hir that holdeth me in this misery. Notwithstanding I will performe thy request, and will awake that instrument in this desert place, wherewith sometime I witnessed the greatest part of my passions." Then the knight receyuing the Lute sounded thereupon this song ensuing.

The waues and troubled scum, that mooues the Seas alofte,  
Which runs and roares against the rocks, and threatneth daungers oft  
    Refembleth lo the fits of loue,  
    That dayly do my fanfie moue.

My heart it is the ship, that driues on salt Sea some,  
And reason sayles with senselesse wit, and neuer loketh home,  
    For loue is guide, and leades the daunce,  
    That brings good hap, or breedes mischaunce.

The furious flames of loue, that neuer ceaseth fure,  
Are loe the busie sailes and oares, that would my rest procure,  
    And as in Skies, great windes do blo,  
    My swift desires runnes, fleeting so.

As sweete Zephyrus breath, in spring time feedes the floures,  
My mistresse voice would ioye my wits, by hir most heauenly powers,  
    And would exchange my state I say,  
    As Sommer chaungeth Winter's day.

She is the Artique starre, the gracious Goddesse to,  
She hath the might to make and marre, to helpe or els vndo,  
    Both death and life she hath at call,  
    My warre, my peace, my ruine and all.

She makes me liue in woe, and guides my sighs and lookes,  
She holds my fredome by a lace, as fish is held with hookes,  
    Thus by despayre in this conceite,  
    I swallow vp both hooke and baite.

And in the deserts loe I liue, among the sauage kinde,  
And spend my time in wofull sighs, rayf'd vp by care of minde,  
    All hopelesse to in paynes I pyne,  
    And ioyes for euer doe resigne.

I dread but Charon's boat if she no mercy giue,  
In darknesse then my foule shall dwell, in Pluto's raygne to liue,  
    But I beleue she hath no care,  
    On him that caught is in hir snare.

If she releafe my woe, a thousand thanks therefore,  
I shall hir giue, and make the world to honor hir the more,  
    The Gods in Skies will prayse the fame,  
    And recorde beare of hir good name.

O happy is that life, that after torment straunge,  
And earthly sorows on this mould, for better life shall chaunge  
    And liue amongst the Gods on high,  
    Where loue and Louers neuer die.

O lyfe that here I leade, I freely giue thee now,  
Vnto the fayre where ere she rests, and loke thou shew hir how

I linger forth my yeares and dayes,  
To win of hir a crowne of prayse.

And thou my pleafaunt Lute, ceafe not my fongs to found,  
And shew the torments of my minde, that I throughloue haue found,  
And alwayes tell my Miftresse fill,  
Hir worthy vertues rules my will.

The Foster Louer.

The Foster louer finging this fong, fighting sundry tymes betwene, the triclingle teares ranne downe his Face: which thereby was fo diffigured, as scarce could any man haue knowne him, that al the dayes of their lyfe had frequented his company. Sutch was the ftate of this myferable yong gentleman, who dronke with hys owne Wyne, balanced himfelfe downe to depayre rather than to the hope of that which he durft not looke for. Howbeit like as the mifchiefs of men be not alwayes durable, and that all thinges haue their proper feafon, euen fo Fortune repentinge hir euill intreaty which wrongfully fhee had caufed this poore penitentiary of Gineura to endure, prepared a meanes to readuance him aloft vpon hir Wheele, euen when he thought leaft of it. And certes, herein appeared the mercy of God, who caufeth things difficult and almoft impoffible, to be fo eafy, as thofe that ordinarily be brought to paffe. How may this example fhew how they which be plunged in the bottome of defiaunce, deeming their life vtterly forlorne, be foone exalted euen to the top of all glory, and felicity? Hath not our age feene a man whych was by aucthority of his Enimy iudged to dye, ready to bee caried forth to the Scaffolde miraculously deliuered from that daunger, and (wherein the works of God are to be marueyled) the fame man to be called to the dignity of a Prynce, and preferred aboue all the reft of the people? Now Dom Diego attending his fieldifh Philofophy in the folitary valeys of the riche Mountayne Pyrene, was refcowed with an helpe vnlooked for as you fhall heare. You haue hard how hee had a Neyghbour and finguler Frend a Noble Gentleman named Dom Roderico. Thys Gentleman amongs all his faithfull Companions did moft lament the harde fortune of Dom Diego. It came to paffe that 22 moneths after that the poore Wilde penitent perfon

was gonne on Pilgrimage, Dom Roderico tooke his Iourney into Gascoyne for diuers his vrgent Affayres, which after hee had dispatched, were it that hee was gon out of his way, or that GOD (as it is most likely) did driue him thither, he approached towarde that Coaste of the Pyrene Mountaynes, where that tyme his good Frende Dom Diego did Inhabite, who dayly grew so Weake and Feeble, as if God had not sent him fodayne succour hee had gotten that hee most desired, which was death that should haue bene the ende of his trauayles and Afflictions. The trayne of Dom Roderico being then a bowe shot of from the sauage Caben of Dom Diego, espyed the tractes of mens Feete newly troden, and beganne to maruayle what hee should bee that dwelled there, considering the Solitude, and Infertility of the Place, and also that the same was farre of from Towne or House. And as they deuifed hereupon, they saw a man going into a Caue, which was Dom Diego, comming from making his complayntes vpon the Rock spoken of before. From which hauinge turned his face toward that parte of the worlde where he thought the lodging was of that Saynct, whereunto he addressed his deuotions, Dom Diego hearinge the Noyse of the horffe, was retired because hee woulde not bee seene. The knight which rode that way, seeing that, and knowing how far he was oute of the way, commaunded one of his men to Gallop towardes the Rocke, to learne what people they were that dwelled within, and to demaund how they might coaste to the high way that led to Barcelona. The Seruaunt approching neare the Caue, perceiued the same so well Empaled and Fortified with Beasts skins before, fearing also that they were Theeues and Robbers that dwelled there, durst not approche, and lesse enquire the way, and therefore returned towards his mayster, to whom hee tolde what hee saw. The knight of another maner of Metall and hardineffe than that Rascall and coward seruaunt, like a stout, Couragious, and valiaunt Man, poasted to the Caue, and demaundinge who was within, he saw a man come forth so disfigured, horrible to looke vpon, pale with staring hayre vpright, as pitifull it was to behold him, which was the seruant of the foster Hermit. Of him Roderico demaunded what he was, and which was the way to Barcelona. "Syr," aunfwered that disguised person: "I know not

how to aunfwere your demaund, and mutch leffe I know the country where we now presently be. But fir, (sayde he fighing) true it is that we be two poore companions whom Fortune hath sent hither, by what il aduerture I know not, to do penaunce for our Trespaffes, and Offences." Roderico hearing him say so, began to call to his remembraunce his Freende Dom Diego, although he neuer before that tyme suspected the place of his abode. He lighted then from his horffe, desirous to see the singularities of the Rocke, and the magnificence of the Cauish lodging, where hee entred and sawe him whom he fought for, and yet for all that did not know him: He commoned with him a long tyme of the pleasure of the solitary life in respect of them that liued intangled with the comberfome Follies of this World. "For somutch" (quod he) as the spirite diftracted and withdrawen from Worldly troubles is eleuate to the contemplation of heauenly thinges, and sooner attendeth to the knowledge and reuerence of his God, than those that bee conuerfaunt amongs men, and to conclude, the complaynts, the delights, ambitions, couetousnesse, vanities, and superfluities that abounde in the confused Maze of Worldely troupe, doe cause a misknowledge of our selues, a forgetfulnesse of our Creator, and many times a negligence of piety and purenesse of Religion. Whiles the vnknowne Hermit, and the knight Roderico talked of these thinges, the Seruauntes of Roderico visiting all the Corners of the deepe, and Stony Cell of those Penitents, by Fortune espied two Saddles, one of theym rychely wroughte and Armed wyth Plates of Steele, that had bene made for some goodly Ienet. And vppon the Plate well Wroughte, Grauen and Enameled, the Golde for all the Rust cankering the Plate, did yet appear. For whych Purpose one of theym sayde to the seruaunt of Dom Diego: "Good Father hitherto I see neyther Mule, nor Horffe, for whom these Saddles can serue, I pray thee to sell them vnto vs, for they will doe vs more pleasure, than presently they do you." "Maisters (quod the Hermit,) if they like you, they be at your commaundement." In the meane time Roderico hauing ended his talke with the other Hermit, without knowing of any thinge that he desired, sayd vnto his men: "Now firs to horse, and leaue wee theefe poore people to rest in peace, and let vs goe seeke for the

right way which we so well as they haue lost." "Syr," (quod one of his men,) "there be two Saddles, and one of them is so exceeding fayre, so well garnished and wrought as euer you saw." The knight feeling in himselfe an vnaccustomed motion, caused them to be brought before him, and as he viewed and marked the riche Harnesse, and Trappings of the same, he stayeth to looke vpon the Hinder parte minionly wrought, and in the midst of the engraing he red this deuise in the Spanish Tongue.

*Que brantare la fe, es causa muy fea.*

That is,

To violate or breake fayth, is a thing detestable.

That only inscription made him to pause a while. For it was the Poesie that Dom Diego bore ordinarily in his armes, which moued him to think that without doubt one of those Pilgrimes was the very same man to whom that Saddle did appertayne. And therefore he bent himselfe very attentiuely afterwarde to behold first the one, and then the other of those desert Citizens. But they were so altered, as hee was not able to know them agayne. Dom Diego seeing his Freende so neare him, and the desire that he had to knowe hym, chafed very much in hys mynde, and the more his Rage began to waxe, when hee saw Roderico approach neare vnto hym more aduisedly to looke vpon hym, for hee had not his own Affections so much at commaundement, but hys Bloude moued hys Entrailes, and mounting into the most knownen place, caused outwardly the alteration which hee endured, to appeare. Roderico seeing hym to chaunge colour, was assured of that which before hee durst not suspect: and that which made him the sooner beleue that he was not deceived, was a lyttle tuft of haire, so yelow as Gold, which Dom Diego had vpon his Necke, whereof Dom Roderico takyng heede, gaue ouer all suspition, and was well assured of that he doubted. And therefore displaying himselfe with hys armes opened vpon the necke of his friend, and imbracing him very louingly, his face bedewed with tears, sayd vnto him: "Alas, my Lord Dom Diego, what euill lucke from Heauen hath departed you from the good company of them which dye for forrow, to see themselues berieued of the Beauty, lyght and ornament of their felowship? What are they that haue giuen

you occasion thus to Eclipse the bryghtneffe of your name, when it oughte most clearely to shyne, both for theyr present pleasure, and for the honour of your age? Is it from me fir, that you oughte thus to hide yourfelfe? Do you think me so to be blynd, that I know not ryght well, that you are Dom Diego, that is so renoumed for vertue and prowesse? I would not haue tarried here so longe, but to carry away a power to reioyce two persons, you being the one, by withdrawing your selfe from this heauy and vnseemely Wylderneffe, and my selfe the other, to enioy your Company, and by bearyng newes to your fryends, who sith your departure, do bewaile and lament the same." Dom Diego seeing that he was not able to conceyle the truth of that which was evidently seene, and the louing imbracements of his best Friende, began to feele a ccertayne tenderneffe of heart lyke vnto that whych the Mother conceyueth, when she recouereth hir Sonne that is long absent, or the chaste wyfe, the presence of hir deare Husband, when she clepeth him betwene hir armes, and frankly culleth and cherisheth hym at hir pleasure. For whych cause not able to refrain any longer for ioy and sorrow together, weping and sighing began to imbrace him wyth so good and hearty affection, as with good wyl the other had fought and longed to knowe where he was. And being come againe to himself, he sayd to his faithfull and most louinge friend: "Oh God, how vneasy and difficult be thy iudgments to comprehend? I had thought to liue here miserably, vnknown to al the world, and behold, I am here discouered, when I thought least of it. I am indeede" (quod he to Roderico) "that wretched and vnfortunate Dom Diego, euen that thy very great and louing fryend, who weary of his lyfe, afflycted wyth his vnhap, and tormented by fortune, is retyred into these desertes to accomplysh the ouerplus of the rest of his ill luck. Now sith that I haue satisfied you herein, I beseech you that being content wyth my fighte, yee wyll get you hence and leaue me heere to performe that lyttle remnant whych I haue to lyue, without telling to any person that I am aliue, or yet to manifeste the place of my abode." "What is that you say fir," (sayd Roderico) "are you so farre fraught from your ryght wits, to haue a minde to continue this brutal Lyfe, to depryue al your

friends from the ioy which they receiue by inioying your company? Think I pray you that God hath caufed vs to be born noble men, and hauing power and authority not to lyue in Corners, or be buried amid the flauery of the popular fort, or remain idle within great palaces or fecrete Corners, but rather to illuſtrat and giue lyght with the example of our vertue to thoſe that ſhal apply themſelues to our dexterity of good behaior, and do lyue as depending vpon our edicts and commaundments: I appeale to your faith, what good ſhal ſuccede to your ſubiects, who haue both heard and alſo knowne the benefit beſtowed vpon them by God, for that hee gaue them a Lord ſo modeſt and vertuous, and before they haue experimented the effect of his goodneſſe and Vertue, depriued of him, that is adorned and garniſhed with futch perfections? What comfort, contentation and ioy ſhal the Lady your mother receiue, by feelyng your loſſe to be ſo fodaine, after your good and delycate bryngyng up, inſtructed with futch great diligence and vtterly berieued of the fruit of that education? It is you fir, that may commaund obedience to Parents, ſuccor to the afflicted, and do iuſtice to them that craue it: Alas, they be your poore ſubiectes that make complaints, euen of you, for denying them your due preſence. It is you of whom my good madame doth complayne, as of him that hath broken and violated his faith, for not comming home at the promiſed day.” Now as he was about to continue his oration, Dom Diego vnwilling to heare him, brake of his talk ſaying: “ Ah fir, and my great Friend: It is an eaſy matter for you to iudge of mine affayres, and to blame myne abſence, not knowing peradventure the cauſe thereof. But I eſteeme you a man of ſo good iudgement, and ſo great a fryend of thinges that be honeſte, and a Gentleman of great fidelity, as by vnderſtanding my hard luck, when you be aduertised of the cauſe of my withdrawing into this ſolitarie place, you wyll rightly confeſſe, and playnely ſee that the wiſeſt and moſt conſtant haue committed more vaine follies than thoſe don by mee, forced with like ſpирite that now moueth and tormenteth me.” Hauing ſayd, he tooke aſide Roderico, where he dyd tell vnto hym the whole diſcourſe both of his Loue, and alſo of the rigor of hys Lady, not without weepyng, in futch abundaunce



and with such frequent sighes and sobs interruptyng so hys speach, as Roderico was constrained to keepe him company, by remembryng the obstinacie of hir that was the Mistresse of his heart, and thinkyng that already he had seene the effect of lyke missehap to fal vpon his owne head, or neare vnto the lyke, or greater distresse than that which he sawe his deare and perfect Fryend to endure. Notwythstanding he assayed to remoue him from that desperate minde and opinion of continuance in the desert. But the froward penitente swore vnto him, that so long as he liued (without place recouered in the good graces of his Gineura,) he would not returne home to his house, but rather change his being, to seke more sauage abode, and lesse frequented than that was. "For" (quod hee) "to what purpose shall my retourneserue where continuinge mine affection, I shall fele lyke cruelty that I dyd in time past, which wil bee more painful and heauy for me to beare than voluntary exile and banishment, or bring me to that end wherein presently I am." "Contente your self I beseech you, and suffer me to be but once vnhappy, and do not perswade mee to proue a second affliction, worffe than the first." Roderico hearing his reasons so liuely and wel applied would not reply, onely content that he would make him promyse to tarry there two monthes, and in that time attempt to reioyse himselfe so wel as he could. And for hys owne part, he swore vnto him, that he would bee a meanes to reconcile Gineura, and bryng them to talke together. Moreouer, he gaue him assurance by othe, that hee shoulde not bee discouered by hym, nor by any in his Company. Wherewith the knyght somewhat recomforted, thanked him very affectuously. And so leauyng wyth him a fiede bed, two seruants, and Money for his Necessities, Roderico tooke hys leaue, tellyng hym that shortely he would visite him againe, to his great contentation, as euer he was left and forsaken with gryefe and forrow, himselfe makyng great mone for the vnseemly state and myserable plyght of Dom Diego. And God knoweth whether by the way, he detested the cruelty of pitiless Gineura, blasphemyng a million of times the whole sexe of Womankynd, peradventure not without iust cause. For there lieth hydden (I know not what) in the breasts of Women, which at times like the

Wane and increafe of the Moone, doth chaunge and alter, whereof a man can not tell on what foote to ftand to conceiue the reafons of the fame: whych fickle fragility of theirs (I dare not fay mobility) is futch, as the fubtilleft wench of them al beft skilled in Turner's Art, can not (I fay deface) or fo much as hide or colour that naturall imperfektion. Roderico arriued at his houfe, frequented many times the lodging of Gineura, to efpy hir fashions, and to fee if any other had conquered that place, that was fo well affayled and befieged by Dom Diego. And this wyfe and fage knyght vfed the matter fo well, that he fell in acquaintance wyth one of the Gentlewoman's Pages, in whom ſhe had fo great truſt, as ſhe conceyled from him very few of hir greateſt ſecretes, not well obferuing the precepte of the wyfe man, who councelleth vs not to tell the ſecretes of the mynde to thoſe, whoſe iudgement is but weake, and tongue very lauifh and frank of ſpeech. The Knyght then familiar with this Page, dandled him fo with faire words, as by lyttle and lytle he wrong the Wormes out of his Noſe, and vnderſtode that when Gineura began once to take Pepper in fnuffe againſt Dom Diego, ſhe fell in loue wyth a Gentleman of Biſkaye, very poore, but Beautyfull, young and luſtye, whych was the Stewarde of the houſe: and the Page added further that hee was not then there, but woulde returne wythin three Dayes, as he had ſent Woorde to hys myſtreffe, and that two other Gentlemen woulde accompany him to cary away Gineura into Biſkaye, for that was their laſt concluſion: "And I hope" (quod he) "that ſhe will take me with hir, bicauſe I am made priuy to their whole intent." Roderico hearing the treaſon of this flight and departure of the vnfaithful daughter, was at the firſt brunt aſtonned, but defirous that the Page ſhould not marke his altered Countenance, ſaid vnto him: "In very deede meete it is, that the Gentlewoman ſhould make hir owne choice of huſband, ſith hir mother fo little careth to prouide for hir. And albeit that the Gentleman be not fo riche and Noble as hir eſtate deferueth, hir affection in that behalfe ought to ſuffiſe, and the honeſty of his perſon: for the reſt Gineura hath (thanks be to God) wherewith to intertaine the ſtate of them both." Theſe wordes he ſpake, farre from the thought of his hearte. For being alone by himſelf, thus he ſaid:

“O blessed God, how blinde is that loue, which is vnruled, and out of order: and what dispayre to recline to them, which (voide of reason) doe feede so foolishly of vayne thoughts and fond desires, in futch wife as two commodities, presented vnto them, by what ill lucke I know not, they forsake the beste, and make choise of the worst. Ah Gineura, the fairest Lady in all this Countrey, and the moste vnfaithfull Woman of oure time, where be thine eyes and iudgement? Whither is thy mynde straid and wandred, to acquite thyselfe from a great Lord, faire, rich, noble, and vertuous, to be giuen to one that is poore, whose parents be vnknowne, his prowesse obscure, and birth of no aparant reputation. Behold, what maketh me beleue, that loue (so wel as Fortune) is not onely bynd, but also dazeleth the sight of them that hee imbraceth and captiuateth vnder his power and bondage. But I make a vowe (false woman) that it shal neuer come to passe and that this Biskaye gentleman shal neuer enioy the spoyle whych iustly bee due vnto the Trauaile and faithfull seruice of the valyaunt and vertuous knyght Dom Diego. It shal be hee, or else I wil dye for it, whych shal haue the recompense of his troubles, and shall feele the caulme of that tempest, whych presently holdeth hym at Anker, amynd the most daungerous rockes that euer were.” By this meanes Roderico knew the way how to keepe promise wyth his friende, which liued in expectation of the same. The two dayes past, whereof the Page had spoken, the beloued of Gineura, fayled not to come, and with him two Gallants of Biskaye, valiaunt Gentlemen, and well exercysed in Armes. That Nighte Roderico wente to see the olde Wydowe Lady, the Mother of the Mayden, and fyndyng oportunity to speak to the Page, hee said vnto hym: “I see my Friend, accordingly as thou diddest tell mee, that ye are vppon departing, the steward of the house beeing now retourned. I pray the tel mee, if thou haue neade of mee, or of any thyng that I am able doe for thee, assuring thee that thou shalt obtaine and haue what so euer thou requirest. And therewithall I haue thought good to tel thee, and giue the warning (for thine owne sake specially) that thou keepe all thynges close and secrete, that no flaunder or dishonour do followe, to blot and deface the Same and prayse of thy Mistresse. And for my selfe I had rather dye,

than once to open my mouth, to discover the least intent of this enterpryse. But tell mee, I praye thee, when do ye depart?" "Sir" (quod the Page) "as my Mistresse saieth, to morow about ten or eleuen of the Clocke in the Euening, when the Lady hir Mother shall bee in the sound of hir first sleepe." The knight hearyng that, and desirous of no better time, tooke hys leaue of the Page, and went home, where he caused to bee sente for tenne or twelue Gentlemen, his Neighbours and Tenaunts, whom he made priuy of his secretes, and partakers of that he went about, to deliuer out of Captiuitie and miserie the chiefeft of all his Friends. The Nighte of those two Louers departure being come, Dom Roderico, which knewe the way where they should passe, bestowed him selfe and his Company in Ambush, in a little Groue, almost three Miles of the Lodging of this fugitiue Gentlewoman: where they hadde not long tarried but they hearde the tramplinge of Horffe, and a certaine whispring noise of People riding before them. Nowe the Nighte was somewhat cleare, which was the cause, that the Knighte amonges the thronge, knew the Gentlewoman, besides whome rode the Miserable Wretche that hadde stolne hir away. Whome so soone as Roderico perceyued full of despyte, moued wyth extreme passion, welding his launce into his rest, brake in the nearest way vpon the infortunate loue, with sutch vehemency, as neither coate of Maile or Placard was able to saue his lyfe, or warraunt him to keepe company wyth that troupe which banded vnder loue's Enseigne, was miserably slayne, by the guide of a blynd, naked, and thienish litle boy. And when he saw he had done that he came for, he sayd to the rest of the Company: "My Friends, thys man was carelesse to make inuasion vpon other mens ground." These poore Biskayes surpryed vpon the fodayne, and seeyng the ambushment to multiply, put spurres to theyr horffe to the best aduantage they could for expedition, leauing their Conduct or guid gaping for breath and geuing a signe that he was dead. Whiles the other were making themselves ready to runne away, two of Roderico his men, couered with Skarfes, armed, and vnknowne, came to seafe vppon forrowfull Gineura, who beholdyng her fryende deade, began to weepe and crye so straungely, as it was maruell that hir breath fayled

not. "Ah trayterous Theeues," (said she) "and bloody Murderers, why do ye not addresse your felues to execute cruelty vpon the rest, sith you haue done to death hym, that is of greater value than you all? Ah my deare Fryend, what crooked and grieuous Fortune haue I, to see thee grouelyng dead on ground and I abyding in life, to be the pray of murderous Theeues and thou so cowardly beryued of lyfe." Roderico wyth his face couered, drew neare vnto her, and sayde: "I beseech you Gentlewoman, to forget these straunge fashions of complaynt, sith by them ye bee not able to reuiue the dead, ne yet make your ende of gryefes." The maiden knowing the voyce of hym, that had slayne hir fryende, began to cry out more fiercely than before. For whych cause one of the gentlemen in company with Roderico, hauing a blacke counterfait beard with two lunets, in manner of spectacles, very large and great, that couered the moste part of his Face, approched neare the bashful maiden, and with bigge voice and terrible talk, holding his dagger vpon hir white and delicate breast, said vnto hir: "I sweare by the Almighty God, if I heare thee speake one word more, I wil sacrifice thee vnto the ghost of that varlet, for whome thou makest thy mone, who deserued to end his daies vpon a gallow tree rather than by the hands of a gentleman. Holde thy peace therefore thou foolyfh girle, for greater honour and more ample Benefite is meant to thee, than thou hast deserued. Ingratitude onely hath so ouerwhelmed thy good Nature, as thou art not able to iudge who be thy friends." The gentlewoman fearing death, whych as she thought was present, held hir peace, downe alonges whose Eyes a ryuer of Teares dyd run, and the passion of whose heart appeared by affiduell sighes, and neuer ceassing sobbes, whych in end so quallified hir cheare, that the exteriour sadnesse was wholly inclosed wythin the mynd and thought of the afflicted Gentlewoman. Then Roderico caused the body of the dead to be buried in a lyttle Countrey Chappell, not farre out of theyr way. Thus they trauayled two dayes before Gineura knew any of them, that had taken hir away from hir louer: who permytted none to speake vnto hir nor she to any of hir company, beyng but a waiting maid, and the page that hadde dyfcovered al the secretes to Dom Roderico. A notable example

fully for stolne and secrete mariages, whereby the honour of the contracted partes, is most commonly blemished, and the Commandement of GOD violated, whose word enioyneth obedience to Parents in all ryghtfull causes, who if for any lyght offence, they haue power to take from vs the inheritance whych otherwyfe naturall law would giue vs, what ought they of duety to doe, where rebellyous Chyldren abusing theyr goodnesse, do consume without feare of Liberty, the thyng that is in theyr free wyll and gouernement. In like maner diuers vndifcrete and folysh mothers are to be accused, which suffer their daughters of tender and chyldysh age to be enamored of theyr seruants, not remembryng how weake the flesh is, how prone and ready men be to do euyl, and how the seducyng spirite wayting stil vpon us, is proclieue and prone to surpryse and catch vs wythin his Snares, to the intent he may reioyce in the ruine of foules washed and redeemed wyth the bloud of the Son of God. This troupe drawing neare to the caue of Dom Diego, Roderico sent one of his men to aduertise him of their comming, who in the absence of his fryende, fylled and susteined with hope, shortely to see the onely Lady of hys hearte, accompanied wyth a merry and ioyfull Trayne, so soone as hee had somewhat chaunged his wilde maner of Lyfe, he also by lyttle and lyttle gayned a good part of hys lusty and fresh coloure, and almost had recouered that beauty, which he had when he firste became a Citizen of those desertes. Now hauing vnderstanded the message sent vnto him by Roderico, God knoweth if with that pleasaunt tydings he felt a motion of Bloud, such as made all his members to leape and daunce, whych rendred hys Mynde astonned, for the onely memorye of the thyng that poyssed hys mynd vp and downe, not able to be wayed in equall Balauce whereof rather he ought to haue made reioyse than complayne, being assured to see hir, of whome he demaunded onely grace and pardon, but for recouery of hir, he durst not repose any certayne Iudgement. In the Ende hoystyng vp hys head lyke one ryfen from a long and found sleepe, hee sayd: "Praise be to God, who yet before I dye, hath done me great pleasure, to suffer me to haue a syght of hir, that by causing my Matirdome, continueth hir stubburne maner of Lyfe, whych shall procure in like fort myne

vtter ruine and decay. Vpon the approach of whom I shall goe more ioyfull, charged with incomparable loue, to vyfit the ghofts beneath, in the prefence of that cruel fwete, that now tormenteth me with the ticklysh tentation, and who sometimes hath made me tast a kind of Hony sugred with bytter Gal, more daungerous than the suck of Poyson and vnder the vermyllion rudde of a new sprouted Rose diuiuely blowen forth, hath hydden secrete Thornes the pryckes whereof hath me so lyuely touched, as my Wound cannot well bee cured, by any Baulme that may be thereunto applyed, without enioying of that myne owne missehappe, moſte happy or wythout that remedy, whych almost I feele reſtyng in death, that ſo long and oftentymes I haue deſired as the true remedy of all my paynes and gryefe." In the meane whyle Dom Roderico, whych tyll that tyme was not knowen vnto Gineura, drew neare vnto hir by the way as he rode, and talked wyth hir in this forte: "I doubt not (Gentlewoman) but that you think your ſelf not wel contented to ſe me in this place, in ſutch company and for occaſion ſo vnſeemely for my degre, and ſtate, and moreouer knowing what iniury I ſeeme to do vnto you, that euer was, and am ſo affectionate and friendly to the whole ſtocke of your race and Lynage, and am not ignoraunte that vpon the firſte brunte you may iudge my cauſe vniuſt to carry you away from the handes of your fryend, to bring you into theſe deſertes, wyld, and ſolitary places. But if ye conſidered the force of that true amity, which by vertue ſheweth the common Bondes of hearts and myndes of Men, and ſhall meaſure to what end this acte is done, without to mutch ſtaying vpon the lyght apprehenſion of Choler, for a beginnyng ſomewhat troubleſom, I am affured then (that if you be not wholly depryued of reaſon) you ſhall perceiue that I am not altogether worthy blame nor your ſelfe vtterly voyde of fault. And bycauſe we draw neare vnto the place, whether (by the help of God) I meane to condu&t you, I beſeech you to conſider, that the true Seruaunt whych by all ſeruice and duety ſtudieth to execute the commaundementes of him that hath puiſſance ouer him, doth not deſerue to bee beaten or driuen away from the houſe of his maiſter, but to be fauored and cheriſhed, and ought to receyue equal recompenſe for

his seruice. I ſpeake not this for my ſelfe, my deuotion beinge vowed elſewhere, but for that honeſt affection which I beare to all vertuous and chaſte perſons. The effect whereof I will not deny to tell you in tyme and place, where I ſhall uſe futch modeſty towards you, as is meete for a maiden of your age and ſtate. For the greatneſſe of Noble Men and puiſant, doth moſt appeare and ſhew forth it ſelf, when they uſe Mildeneſſe and Gentleneſſe vnto thoſe, to whom by reaſon of their Authority they mighte execute cruelty and malice. Now to the end that I do not make you doubtfull long, al that which I haue done and yet meane to doe, is for none other purpoſe but to eaſe the grieuous paines of that moſte faithful louer that loueth at thys Daye vnder the Circle of the Moone. It is for the good Knighte Dom Diego, that loueth you ſo dearely and ſtill worſhippeth your Noble fame, who bicauſe he wil not ſhew himſelf diſobedient, liueth miſerably amonge brute beaſts, amid the craggy rocks and mountaines, and in the deepe ſolitudes of comfortleſſe dales and valleis. It is to him I ſay that I do bryng you, proteſting vnto you by othe (Gentlewoman) that the miſery wherein I ſaw him, little more than vi. Wekes paſt, toucheth me ſo neare the heart, as if the Sacrifice of my lyfe ſufficed alone, (and without letting you to feele this painfull voyage) for the ſolace of his martirdome I would ſpare it no more, than I do mine owne endeour and honor, beſides the hazarding of the loſſe of your good grace and fauour. And albeit I wel perceiue, that I do grieue you, by cauſing you to enter this painfull iourney, yet I beſech you that the whole diſpleaſure of this fact may bee imputed vnto my charge, and that it would pleaſe you louingly to deale with him, who for your ſake vſeth ſo great violence againſt himſelf.” Gineura as a woman half in deſpayre for the death of hir friend, behaued hir ſelfe like a mad woman void of wit and ſenſe, and the ſimple remembraunce of Dom Diego his name ſo aſtonned her, (which name ſhe hated far more than the pangs of death) that ſhe ſtaied a long time, hir mouth not able to ſhape one word to ſpeake. In the ende vanquiſhed with impacience, burning with choler, and trembling for ſorrow, loked vpon Dom Roderico with an Eye no leſſe furious, than a Tigreſſe caught within the Net, and ſeeth before hir face hir young



Fawnes murdered, wringing hir hands and beating hir delicate brest, she vsed these or sutch like woordes: "Ah bloody traitor and no more Knight, is it of thee that I oughte to looke for so detestable a villany and treason? How darest thou be so hardy to entreat me for an other, that hast in myne owne prefence killed him, whose death I will pursue vpon thee, so longe as I haue life within this body? Is it to thee false theefe and murderer, that I ought to render accompte of that which I meant to doe? Who hath appointed thee to be arbitrator, or who gaue thee commision to capitulate the Articles of my mariage? Is it by force then, that thou wouldest I should loue that vnfaithfull Knighte, for whom thou hast committed and done this acte, that so longe as thou liuest shal blot and blemish thy renoume, and shal be so wel fixed in my mind, and the wounds shal cleaue so neare my heart, vntill at my pleasure I be reuenged of this wrong? No, no, I assure thee no force done vnto mee, shall neuer make mee otherwyse dysposed, than a mortall Enimy both to thee which art a Theefe and rauisher of an other man's wife, and also to thy desperate friend Dom Diego, which is the cause of this my losse: and now not satisfied with the former wrong done vnto me, thou goest about to deceiue me vnder the Colour of good and pure Friendship. But sith wicked Fortune hath made me thy Prysoner, doe with me what thou wylt, and yet before I suffer and endure that that Traytor Dom Diego doe enjoy my Virginity, I will offer vp my lyfe to the shadowes and Ghostes of my faythful fryend and husband, whome thou hast so trayterously murdred. And therefore (if honestlye I may or ought entreate mine Enimy) I pray thee that by doynge thy duety, thou suffer vs in peace, and gyue lycence to mee, thys Page, and my two pore Maydens to depart whether we lyst." "God forbid" (quod Roderico) "that I should doe a Trespasse so shamefull, as to depyue my dearest fryend of his ioy and contentation, and by falsifying my faith be an occasion of hys death, and of your losse, by leauing you without company, wandring amidst this wilder nesse." And thus he continued his former discourse and talk, to reclaime thys cruell Damofell to haue pity vpon hir poore penytent, but he gained as much thereby, as if he had gone aboute to number the Sands alongs the Sea Coastes of

the maine Ocean. Thus deuifing from one talke to an other, they arryued neare the Caue, which was the ftately houfe of Dom Diego: where Gineura lyghted, and faw the pore amorous Knight, humbly falling downe at hir feete, all forworne, pale, and diffigured, who weeping with warme teares, faid vnto hir: "Alas, my deare Lady, the alone and onely miftrefse of my heart, do you not thinke that my penaunce is long inoughe for the finne which ignorauntly I haue committed, if euer I haue don any fault at al? Behold [I befeech you (good ladie deare) what ioy] I haue conceiued in your abfence, what pleafures haue nurfed mine hope, and what confolation hath entertained my life: which truly had it not bene for the continual remembraunce of your diuine Beauty, I had of long time abreuiated the pains which do renew in me fo many times the pangs of death: as oftentimes I think vpon the vnkindnes fhewed vnto me by making fo litle accompt of my fidelity: whych can nor fhall receiue the fame in good part, wer it fo perfect as any affuraunce were able to make it." Gineura fwelling with forrow and full of feminine rage, blufhing with fury, hir eyes fparcklinge forth hir chollerick conceypts, vouchsafed not fo mutch as to giue him one word for aunfwere, and bicaufe fhe would not looke vppon him, fhe turned hir face on the other fide. The poore and afflicted Louer, feeing the great cruelty of his felonous Myftrefse, ftill kneeling vpon his knees, redoubling his armes, fetching Sighes with a voyce that feemed to bee drawne by force from the bottome of his heart, proceeded in thefe wordes: "Syth the fincerity of my fayth, and my long feruice madame Gineura, cannot perfuade you that I haue bene moft Obedient, Faythfull, and very Loyall feruaunt towards you, as euer any that hath ferued Lady or Gentlewoman, and that without your fauour and grace it is vnpoſſible for mee any longer to liue, yet I doe very humbly befeech you, for that all other comfort is denied me, if there bee any gentleneſſe and curteſie in you, that I may receyue this onely grace at your hands for the laſt that euer I hope to craue: which is, that you being thus greuously offended with me, would do iuſtice vpon that vnfortunate man, that vpon his Knees doth instantly craue the fame. Graunt (cruell miftrefse) this my request, doe vengeance

at your pleasure vpon him, which willingly yeldeth himfelfe to death with the effusion of his poore innocent bloud to fatiffy you, and verily farre more expedient it is for him thus to die, by appeasing your wrath, than to rest or liue to your discontentment or anoiaunce. Alas, shal I be so vnfortunate, that both life and death should bee denied me by one person of the world, whom I hoped to content and please by any fort or meanes what so euer resting in mine humble obedience? Alas gentlewoman rid mee from this Torment, and dispatch your selfe from the griefe you haue to see this vnhappy Knight, who would say and esteeme himfelfe most happy (his life being lothsome vnto you) if he may content you, by death done by your owne handes, sith other fauour he cannot expect or hope for." The Mayden hardned in hir Opinion, stode still immouable mutch like vnto a Rocke in the midt of the Sea, disquieted with a tempest of billowes, and fomy Waues in futch wise as one word could not be procured from hir mouth. Which vn lucky Dom Diego perceyuing, attached with the feare of present death, and faylinge his Naturall force fell downe to the Grounde, and faintyng saied: "Ah, what a recompence doe I receiue for this so faythfull Loue?" Roderico beholding that ruffull fight, whilest the others went about to relieue Dom Diego, repaired to Gineura, and full of heauinesse mingled with fury, saied vnto hir: "By God (false fiendish woman) if so be that I doe change my mind, I will make thee feele the smarte, no lesse than thou shewest thy selfe dishonourable to them that doe thee honour: Art thou so carelesse of so greate a Lord as this is, that humbleth himfelfe so lowe to futch a strumpet as thou art: who without regarde either to hys renoume, or the honour of his House, is content to bee abandoned from his noble state, to become a fugitiue and straunger? What cruelty is this for thee to mispryse the greatest humility that man can Imagin? What greater amends canst thou wysh to haue, yea though the offence which thou presuppofest had ben true? Now (if thou be wyfe) change thy Opinion, except thou wouldest haue mee doe into so many pieces, thy cruel corpe and vnfaithful heart, as once this poore Knight did in parts the vnhappy hauke, which through thy folly did breede vnto him this distresse, and to thy self the

name of the most cruell and disloyall Woman that euer lyued. But what greater benefite can happen vnto thee, than to see thys Gentleman vtterly to forget the fault, to conceiue no finifter suspicion of thy running away, crauing pardon at thy Hands, and is contented to sacrifice him self vnto thine Anger, to appease and mytigate thy rage? Now to speake no more hereof, but to proceede in that which I began to say, I offer vnto thee then both death and Loue, choose whether thou lyst. For I sweare againe by hym that seeth and heareth all thinges, that if thou play the foole, that thou shalt feele and proue me to be the cruellest Ennimy that euer thou hadst: and futch a one as shall not feare to imbrue his hands wyth the blood of hir that is the death of the greatest friend I haue, and truest knight that euer bare armes." Gineura hearing that resolute aunswere, shewed hir selfe to be nothing afrayde nor declared any token of feare, but rather seemed to haue encouraged Roderico, in braue and mannish fort, farre diuers from the simplicity of a young and tender Mayden, as a Man would say, futch a one as had neuer felt the assaults and troubles of aduerse fortune. Wherefore frouncyng her Browes, and grating hir Teeth wyth closed fists, and Countenance very bold, she made him answere: "Ah thou Knight, whych once gauest assault to commit a villany and Treason thinkest thou now without remorse of conscyence to continue thy mischyeffe: I speak it to thee Villayne, whych hauing shed the Bloud of an honeste Man than thou art, fearest not now to make me a Companion of hys Death. Which thyng spare not hardily to accomplysh, to the intent that I liuinge, may not be futch a one as thou falsly iudgest me to be: for neuer Man hitherto vaunted, and never shall, that hath had the spoyle of my dearest Iewell: from the Fruict whereof, like an arrant Thiefe, thou hast depryued my loyall Spoufe. Now doe what you lyst: for I am farre better content to suffer death, be it as cruel as thou art mischieuous, and borne for the disquieting and vexation of honest Maidens then yelde vnto thy furies: notwithstanding I humbly beseech Almyghty God, to gyue thee so much pleasure, contentation and ioy in thy loue, as thou hast done to me, by hastening the death of my deare Husband. O GOD, if thou be a iust GOD, futch a one, as from whom we thy

poore Creatures do beleue al iustice to proceede, thou I say which art the Rampire and refuge of al iustice, poure downe thy vengeance and plague vpon these pestiferous Thieues and murderers, which prepared a worldely plague vpon me thine innocent damsel. Ah wycked Roderico, think not that death can be so fearful vnto me, but that with good heart, I am able to accept the same, trusting verily that one day it shal be the cause of thy ruine, and the ouerthrowe of him for whom thou takest al these paines." Dom Roderico maruelously rapt in sense imagined the Woman to be fully bente against hym, who then had puissance (as he thought,) ouer hir own heart: and thinking, that he sawe hir moued with like rage against him, as she was against Dom Diego, stode stil so perplexed and voyde of ryghte minde, as he was constrained to fitte downe, so feeble he felt him self for the onely remembraunce of hir euyl demeanor. And whilest this Pageant was a doing, the handmayd of Gineura, and hir page, inforced to persuade their mystresse to haue compaffion vpon the Knight that had suffred so much for hir sake, and that she would consent to the honest requests and good counsell of Roderico. But she which was stubbornely bent in hir fonde persuasions, made them aunfere: "What fooles? are you so much bewitched, eyther with the fayned teares of this disloyall Knight, whych colorably thus doth torment himselfe, or els are yee inchaunted with the venomous honny and tirannicall branery of the Theefe which murdered my husbande, and your mayster? Ah vnhappy caytife mayden, is it my chauce to endure the assault of futch Fortune, when I thought to liue at my best ease, and thus cruelly to tomble into the handes of him, whom I hate so much as he fayneth loue vnto me? And moreouer my vnlucky fate is not herewith content, but redoubleth my sorrowe, euen by those that be of my trayne, who ought rather to incourage mee to dy, than consent to so vnreasonable requests. Ah loue, loue, how euill be they recompenced which faythfully doe Homage vnto thee? And why should not I forget all Affection, neuer hereafter to haue mynde on man to proue beginning of a pleasure, which tasted and felt bringeth more displeasure than euer ioy engendreth delight. Alas, I neuer knewe what was the fruiete of that which so straungely did attach me,

and thou O trayterous and theeuifhe Loue, hafte ordayned a banquet ferued with futch bitter difhes, as forced I am perforce to tafte of their egre fweetes : Auauant fweete folly, auauant, I doe henceforth for euer let thee flip, to imbrace the death, wherein I hope to find my greateft reft, for in thee I finde noughte elfe but heapes of frayninge Paffions. Auoyde from me all mishap, flee from me ye furious ghoftes and Fayries moft vnkinde, whose gaudes and toyes dame loue hath wrought to keepe occupied my louing minde, and fuffer me to take ende in thee, that I may liue in an other life without thee, being now charged with cup of grieffe, which I fhall quaffe in venomous drinke foaked in the Sops of bitterneffe. Sharpen thou thy felfe, (O death vnkinde) prepare thy Darte, to ftrike the Corpfe of hir, that ſhe may voyde the Quarrelles ſhotte agaynft hir by hir Aduerfary. Ah poore hearte, ftrip thy felfe from hope, and qualifie thy defires. Ceafe henceforth to wifhe thy Lyfe, feeing, and feelinge the appoynded fight of loue and Life, combattying within my minde, els where to feeke my peace in an other world, with him to ioy, whych for my fake was facrificed to the treafon of varlets handes, who for the perfite hoorde of his defires, noughte elfe dyd feeke but to foile his bloody fifts with the pureft bloude of my loyall friend. And I this floud of Teares do ſhead to faciate his felonous moode that is the iuft ſhortening of my dolefull Dayes.” When ſhe had thus complayned, ſhe began horribly to torment hir felfe that the cruellest of the company were moued with compaffion, to fee hir thus ftrangely ftraught of hir wits : neuertheles they did not difcontinue by duety to folicite hir to haue regard to that which poore fayntyng Dom Diego dyd endure : who fo foone as wyth freſhe Fountayn water hee was reuiued, feeing ſtill the heauineffe of his Lady, and hir increafed difdaine and choler againſte hym vaniſhed in diuers foundings : which moued Roderico from ſtudyee deepe, wherein he was, to ryſe, whereunto the rage of Gineura had caſt him downe, bicaufe forgetting all imaginarie affection of his Lady, and propoſing his duety before his eyes, whych ech Gentleman oweth to Gentle Damfels [and womenkind], ſtyll beholding with honorable aſpect the gryefe of the martyred wylderneffe Knyght, fighting yet in former gryefes, he fayd vnto Gineura, “ Alas, is it poſſyble,

that in the heart of so young and delicate a maiden, there may bee harboured so strange fury and vnrreasonable rage? O God, the effect of the cruelty resting in this Woman, painting it selfe in the imaginatiue force of my mind, hath made me feare the like myffehappe to come to the cruell state of this difaduenturous gentleman? Notwythstanding (O thou cruell beast) thinke not that thys thy fury shall stay me from doing thee to death, to rid thee from follye and disdayne, and this vnfortunate louer from despayre and trouble, verily beleuing, that in tyme it shall be knowne what profit the World shall gayne by purgyng the same of such an infected plague as is an vnkynd and arrogante hearte: and it shall feele what vtility ryseth by thyne ouerthrowe. And I doe hope beydes in tyme to come, that Men shall prayse this deede of myne, who for preferuynge the Honoure of one House, hath chosen rather to doe to death two offenders, than to leaue one of them aliue, to obfcure the glory and brightnesse of the other. And therefore" (sayd he, turning his face to those of his traine,) "cut the throte of this stubborne and froward beast, and doe the like to them that be come with hir, shewe no more fauor vnto them all, than that cursed strumpet doth mercy to the life of that miserable Gentleman, who lieth a dying there for loue of hir." The Mayden hearing the cruel sentence of hir death, cryed out so loud as she coulde, thinking reskue woulde haue come, but the poore Wench was deceiued: for the desert knew none other, but those that were abiding in that troupe. The Page and the woman seruauant exclamed vpon Roderico for mercy, but he made as though he heard them not, and rather made signe to his men to do what he commaunded. When Gineura sawe that their deathe was purposed in deede, confirmed in opinion rather to dy, than to obey, she said vnto the executioners: "My friends, I beseech you let not these innocentes abide the penaunce of that which they neuer committed. And you, Dom Roderico, be reuenged on me, by whome the fault, (if a woman's faith to hir husband may be termed a faulte) is don. And let these infortunate depart, that bee God knoweth guiltles of any cryme. And thou my friend, which liuest amonges the shadowes of faythfull louers, if thou haue any feelinge, as in deede thou prouest being in another world,

behold the pureneffe of mine heart and fidelity of my loue: who to keep the fame inuiolable, do offer my self voluntarily to the death, which this cruell tyrant prepareth for me. And thou hangman the executioner of my ioyes, and murderer of the immortall pleafures of my loue (fayd ſhe to Roderico) glut thy vnfaciabie defire of bloud, make dronke thy mind with murder, and boaft of thy litle triumph, which for all thy threates or perfuafible words, thou canſt not get from the heart of a ſimple maiden, ne cary away the victory for all the battred breach made into the rampare of hir honour." When ſhe had ſo ſaid, a Man would haue thought that the memory of death had cooled hir heate, but the fame ſerued hir as an affured ſolace of hir paynes. Dom Diego being come to himſelf and ſeing the diſcourſe of that tragedy, being now addreſſed to the laſt act and end of that life and ſtage of faire and golden locked Gineura, making a vertue of neceſſity, recouered a lyttle corage to ſaue, (if it were poſſible) the life of hir, that had put hys owne in hazard miſerably to end. Hauing ſtayed them that held the maiden, he repayed to Dom Roderico, to whom he ſpake in this wiſe: "I ſee wel my good Lord and great Friende, that the good will you beare me, cauſeth you to vſe this honeſt order for my behalf, whereof I doubt if I ſhould lyue a whole hundred yeares, I ſhall not be able to ſatiffy the leaſt of the bondes wherein I am bound, the ſame ſurpaſſing all mine ability and power. Yet for al that (deare friend) ſith you ſee the fault of this miſſehap to ariſe of my predeſtinate ill lucke, and that man cannot auoyde things once ordained, I beſeech you do me yet this good pleaſure (for all the benefits that euer I haue receiued) to ſend back again this gentlewoman with hir trayne, to the place from whence you toke hir, wyth like affurance and conduct, as if ſhee were your ſiſter. For I am pleaſed with your endeour, and contented with my miſfortune, affuring you fir beſides, that the trouble which ſhe endureth, doth far more gryeue my heart than al the paine which for hir ſake I ſuffer. That hir ſorrow then may decreaſe and mine may renue againe, that ſhe may lyue in peace, and I in Warre for hir cruel beauty ſake, I wyll wayt vpon Clotho, the Spynner of the threden life of man vntil ſhe breake the twyſted lace that holdeth the fatall courſe of



my dolefull yeares. And you Gentlewoman lyue in rest, as your poore suppliant, wretched Dom Diego, shalbe citizen of wyld places, and vaunt you hardely that yee were the best beloued maiden that euer liued." Maruellous truly be the forces of loue, when they discouer their perfection, for by their meanes thinges otherwise impossible be reduced to futch facility, as a man would iudge that they had neuer bene so hard to obtaine, and so painefull to pursue: As appeared by this damfel, in whome the wrath of fortune, the pynche of ievalosie, the intollerable rage of hir fryendes losse, had ingendred a contempte of Dom Diego, an extreame desire to be reuenged on Dom Roderico, and a tediousnesse of longer Lyfe. And now putting of the vaile of blynde appetite, for the esclarishing of hir vnderstandyng Eyes, and breaking the Adamant Rocke planted in the middes of hir breast, she beheld in open fight the stedfastnesse, pacience and perfeueration of hir great fryend. For that supplication of the Knight had greater force in Gineura, than all hys former feruyces. And full wel she shewed the same, when throwyng hir selfe vppon the Necke of the desperate Gentleman, and imbracyng hym very louyngly she sayd vnto him: "Ah fir, that your felicity is the begynnynge of my great ioy of Mynd, whych fauoreth now of sweetnes in the very same, in whom I imagyned to be the welsprynge of bytternesse. The diminutyon of one gryefe is, and shall bee the increase of a bonde, futch as for euer I wyll call my selfe the moste humble slaue of your honor, lowly beseechyng you neuerthelesse to pardon my follyes, wherewyth full fondely I haue abused youre pacience. Consider a whyle fir, I beseech you, the Nature and secrecy of loue. For those that be blinded in that passion, thynke them selues to be perfecte Seers, and yet be the first that commit most filthy faultes. I doe not denie any committed wrong and trespassse, and doe not refuse therefore the honest and gentlé Correction that you shall appointe mee, for expiation of myne offence." "Ah my Noble Lady," (answered the knight, all rapt wyth pleasure, and halfeway out of his wyts for ioy) "I humbly beseech you inflyct vppon my poore wretched body no further panges of Death, by remembryng the glory of my thought, fith the recitall bryngeth with it a tast of the trauailes which you

haue fuffred for my ioy and contentation." "It is therefore," (quod ſhe) "that I think my ſelf happy: for by that meanes I haue knowne the perfe&ct qualyties that be in you, and haue proued two extremities of vertue. One conſiſting in your conſtancy and loyalty wherby you may vaunt yourſelf aboue hym that ſacrificed his Lyfe vpon the bloody body of his Ladye who for dying ſo, finiſhed his Trauailles. Where you haue choſen a life worſe than death, no leſſe paynefull a hundred times a Day, than very death it ſelf. The other in the clemency wherwyth you calme and appeaſe the rage of your greateſt aduerſaries. As my ſelf which before hated you to death, vanquiſhed by your courteſie do confeſſe that I am double bound vnto you, both for my lyfe and honor: and hearty thankes do I render to the Lord Roderico for the violence he dyd vnto me, by which meanes I was induced to acknowledge my wrong, and the right whych you had to complayne of my beaſtly reſiſtance." "Al is wel," ſayd Roderico, "ſith without peril of honor we may returne home to our houſes: I intend therefore (ſayd he) to ſend word before to the Ladies your mothers of your returne, for I know how ſo wel to couer and excuſe this our enterpryſe and ſecrete iorneis, as by God's aſſiſtance no blame or diſpleaſure ſhall enſue thereof. And like as (ſaid he ſmiling) I haue builded the fortrefſe whych ſhot into your campe, and made you flie, euen ſo I hope (Gentlewoman) that I ſhalbe the occaſion of your victorie, when you combat in cloſe campe, with your ſweete cruel Ennemy." Thus they paſſed the iorney in pleaſaunt talk, recompenſing the 2 Louers with al honeſt and vertuous intertainment for their griefs and troubles paſt. In the meane while they ſent one of their Seruaunts to the two widow Ladies, which were in greate care for their Children, to aduertife them that Gineura was gone to viſit Dom Diego, then being in one of the caſtles of Roderico, where they were determined if it were their good pleaſure, to conſumate their mariage, hauing giuen faith and affiance one to the other. The mother of Gineura could not heare tel of more pleaſant newes: for ſhe had vnderſtanded of the foolyſh flyght and eſcape of hir daughter, with the ſteward of hir houſe, wherof ſhe was very ſorrowful, and for grief was like to die, but affured and recomforted with thoſe newes

she failed not to mete the mother of Dom Diego, at the appointed place whether the 2 louers were arriued two daies before. Ther the mariage of that fair couple (so long desired) was solempnified with futch magnificence as was requisite for the state of those two noble houses. Thus the torment indured, made the ioye to fauour of some other taste than they do feele, which without paine in the exercife of loue's pursute, attaine the top of theyr desires: and truly their pleasure was altogether like to him that nourished in superfluous delicacy of meates cannot aptly so wel iudge of pleasure as he which sometimes lacketh the abundance. And verily loue wythout bitternesse, is almost a cause without effects, for he that shall take away gryefs and troubled fancies from Louers, depriueth them of the prayse of their stedfastnesse, and maketh vayne the glory of their perseuerence: Forhee is vnworthy to beare away the price and Garland of triumph in the Conflict, that behaueth himselfe like a coward, and doth not obserue the lawes of armes and manlike dueties incident to a combat. This History then is a Mirrour for Loyall Louers and Chaste Suters, and maketh them detest the vnshamefastnesse of those, which vpon the first view do followe with might and mayne, the Gentlewoman or Lady that gieueth them good Face, or Countenance whereof any gentle heart, or mynde, nourfed in the Schoolehouse of vertuous education, will not bee squeymishe to those that shall by chaste salutation or other incountry, doe their curteous reuerence. This History also yeldeth contempt of them, which in their affection forget themselues abasing the Generosity of their Courages to be reputed of fooles the true champions of loue, whose like are they that desire such regarde. For the perfection of a true Louer consisteth in passions, in sorrows, griefes, martirdomes, or cares, and mutch lesse arriueth he to his desire, by sighes, exclamations, Weapings, and childishe playnts: For so mutch as vertue ought to be the bande of that indissoluble amity, which maketh the vnion of the two feuered bodies of that Woman man, which Plato describeth, and causeth man to trauell for hys whole accomplishment in the true pursute of chaste loue. In which labour truly, fondly walked Dom Diego, thinking to finde the same by his dispayre amiddest the sharpe solitary Deferts of those Pyrene

Mountaynes. And truly the duty of his perfect friende, did more liuely disclose the same (what fault so euer he did) than all his Countenaunces, eloquent letters or amorous Messages. In like manner a man doth not know what a treasure a true Friende is, vntill hee hath proued his excellency, specially where necessity maketh him to taste the swetenes of such delicate meate. For a friend being a seconde himselfe, agreeth by a certayne naturall Sympathie and attonement to th'affections of him whom he loueth both to participate his ioyes and pleasures, and to forrowe his aduersity, where Fortune shall vse by some misaduentures, to shewe hir accustomed mobility.

## THE THIRTIETH NOUELL.

*A Gentleman of Siena, called Anselmo Salimbene, curteously and gently deliuereth his enemy from death. The condemned party seeing the kinde parte of Salimbene, rendreth into his hands his syster Angelica, with whom he was in loue, which gratitude and curtesie, Salimbene well markinge, moued in Conscience, woulde not abuse hir, but for recompence tooke hir to his wyfe.*

WE do not meane here to discouer the Sumptuosity and Magnificence of Palaces, stately, and wonderfully to the view of men, ne yet to reduce to memory the maruellous effectes of man's Industry to builde and lay Foundations in the deepest Chanel of the mayne sea, ne to describe their ingenious Induftry, in breaking the Craggy Mountaynes, and hardest Rocks, to ease the crooked Passages of weary waies, for Armies to marche through in accessible places. Onely now do we pretend to shewe the effects of loue, which surmount all Opinion of common thinges, and appeare so miraculous as the founding, and erecting of the Colliffæi, Colloffæi, Theatres, Amphitheatres, Pyramides, and other workes wonderfull to the world, for that the hard indured path of hatred and displeasure long time begoon, and obstinately purfued wyth straunge cruelty, was conuerted into loue, by th'effect of concord, sutch as I know none, but is so much astonned, as hee maye haue good cause to wonder, confyderyng the stately foundations vpon which Kinges and greate Monarches haue employed the chyefest reuenues of their prouinces. Now lyke as ingratitude is a vice of greatest blame and discommendation amongs men, euen so Gentleness and Kindnesse ought to beare the title of a most commendable vertue. And as the Thebans were accused of that crime, for their great Captaynes Epaminondas and Pelopidas. So the Plateens (contrarywise) are praised for their solempne obseruation of the Grekes benefits, which deliuered them oute of the Perfians bondage. And the Sicyonians beare away the pryfe of eternall prayse, for acknowledging the good turnes receiued of Aratus, that deliuered them from the cruelty of the tyrants. And

if Philippo Maria, duke of Milan, deserued eternal reproch for his ingratitude to his wife Beatrix, for the secrete killing of hir, he being enryched with hir goodes and treafures: a barbarous Turke borne in Arabia, shal carry the praise, who being vanquished in Arabia, by Baldouine, kyng of Hierufalem, and he and his Wife taken pryfoners, and his treafures fallen into the hands of that good king, issued of the Loraine bloud, who neuerthelesse seeing that the Chrystian had deliuered him, and restored againe his wife would not be vanquished in magnificence and liberalitey, and mutch lesse beare the name of an vnkind prince, but rather when Baldouine was ouercome of the infidels, and being retyred within a certaine city, the Admiral of Arabie, came to him in the night, and tellyng him the deuice of his companions, conueyed hym out of the City, and was hys guide vntill he sawe hym free from peril. I haue alleaged the premysses, bycause the History which I purpose to recyte, aduoucheth two examples not Vulgare or Common, the one of very great Loue, and the other of sutch acceptation and knowledgyng thereof, as I thought it pity the same should lurk from the Acquayntaunce of vs Englysh Men. And that they alone should haue the Benefite thereof which vnderstand the Italian tongue, supposing that it shall bryng some fruyct and commodity to this our Englishe Soyle, that ech Wyghte may frame their lyfe on those which in straung Countries far from vs, haue lyued ver-tuously wythout reproch that might soyle or spotte theyr name. In Siena then (an auncient, and very noble Citty of Toscane, which no longe time past was gouerned by hir Magistrates, and liued in hir own lawes and liberties, as the Lucquois, Pifans, and Florentines do) were two families very rich, noble, and the chiefe of the Citty called the Salimbenes, and Montanines, of the Race and Stock whereof, excellent men in their Common wealth haue descended, very good and expert Souldiers for conducte of Armies. Those two houses in the beginning were so great freendes, and frequented sutch loue and familiarity, as it seemed they had bene but one house and bloude, dayly vsinge eche others company, and banketting one another. But Italy in all times being as it were a Store house of troubles, and a very marte of sedition, bandes, and parcialities, specially of ciuill warres in euery Citty, it coulede

not be that Siena shoulde alone enioy hir liberty in peace, and accorde of Cittizens, and vaunt hir selfe to bee free from knowledge of particular debate. For of warres fhee had good experience against the Florentines, who by long remembraunce haue don what they coulde to make hir subiect vnto them. Nowe the cause of that discorde rose euen by them which kept the Cittizens in vnity and concord, and was occasioned by those 2 houses the noblest, and most puissant of their common wealth. It is not vnknowne to any man, that antiquity ordayned it to be peculiar for nobility, to trayne vp there children in huntinge, aswell to bolden and Nosell them in daungers, as to make them stronge, and accustomed in trauayle, and to force them shun the delicate lyfe and great Idlenes which accompany honorable houses, and those of gentle blood, forsomutch as by the pursuite of Beastes, sleights of warre bee obserued: the Hounds be the square battell, the Greyhoundes be the flankarts and Wynges to follow the enemy, the horsfeman serueth to gieue the Chace, when the Game speedeth to couert, the Hornes be the Trumpets to founde the Chase and Retire, and for encouragement of the Dogges to run. To be short, it seemeth a very Campe in battayle, ordayned for the pleasure and passetyme of noble youth. Neuerthelesse, by hunting diuers missefortunes doe arise, and sundry daungers haue happened by the fame. Meleager lost his Lyfe for the victory of the wyld Bore of Callydonia, Cephalus was slaine for kylling his deare beloued Pocris, and Acastus was accursed for murdering the King's sonne of whome he was the Tutour. William Rufus, one of our Englysh Kings, the son of the Conquerour, was killed with an Arrow in the New Forrest by a French Gentleman called Walter Tyrel, as he was pursuing the Harte. Other histories reporte dyuers peryls chaunced in hunting, but yet the same worthy to be cheryshed, frequented and vsed by good aduise and moderate pastyme. So the huntinge of the wyld Bore defyled the City of Siena, with the blood of hir owne Cittizens, when the Salimbene and Montanines vppon a daye in an assembled company, incountring vpon a greate and fierce Bore, toke hym by force of men and Beastes. When they had don, as they were banketting and communing of the nimblenesse of their dogs, ech man praising his owne, as hauing done beste, there

rose greate debate amongs them [vpon that matter], and proceeded so farre, as fondly they began to reuile one another with words, and from taunting termes to earnest blowes, wherewith diuers in that skirmish were hurt on both sides: In the end the Salimbene had the worffe, and one of the principall slayne in the place, which appalled the rest, not that they were discouraged, but attending time and season of reuenge. This hatred so strangely kindled betwene both partes, that by lyttle and lyttle, after many combats and ouerthrowes of eyther side, the losse lyghted vpon the Montanines, who with their wealth and rycheffe were almost brought to nothing, and thereby the rygour and Choler of the Salimbene appeased, none being able to resist them, and in space of time forgot all iniuries. The Montanines also that remayned at Siena, liued in quyet, wythoute chalenge or quarell of their aduerfaries, howbeit mutuall talke and haunt of others company vtterly furceased. And to say the truth, there were almost none to quarell wythall, for the whole Bloude and Name of the Montanines rested in one alone, called Charles the Sonne of Thomas Montanine, a young man so honest and well brought vp as any then in Siena, who had a syster, that for beauty, grace, curtesy and honesty, was comparable with the best in all Thoscane. This poore young Gentleman had no great reueneue, for that the patri- monie of his predeceffors was waisted in charges for entertaine- ment of Souldiers in the time of the hurly burly and debates afore- said. A good parte also was confiscate to the Chamber of Siena for trespasses and forfeitures committed: with the remayne he sustained his family, and indifferently maintained hys porte soberly within his owne house, keping his syster in decent and moderate order. The Maiden was called Angelica, a Name of trouth, with- out offence to other, due to hir. For in very deede in hir were harbored the vertue of Curtesy and Gentleneffe, and was so wel instructed and nobly brought vp, as they which loued not the Name or race of hir, could not forbear to commend hir, and wyshe theyr owne daughters to be hir lyke. In sutch wise as one of hir chiefest foes was so sharply beset with hir vertue and beauty, as he lost his quiet sleepe, and lust to eate and drinke. His name was Anselmo Salimbene, who woulde wyllingly haue made sute



to marry hir, but the discord past, quite mortified his desire, so soone as he had deuised the plot wythin his brayne and fanfie. Notwithstanding it was impossible that the louer so lyuely grauen and roted in his mind, could easly be defaced. For if once in a day he had not seene hir, his heart did fele the torments of toasting flames, and wished that the hunting of the Bore, had neuer decaied a family so excellent, to the intent he myght haue matched himself with hir, whome none other could displace out of his remembrance, that was one of the rycheft Gentlemen and of greatest power in Siena. Now for that he durst not discouer his amorous grieffe to any person, was the chiefest cause that martired most his hearte, and for the auncient festred malice of those two families, he depayred for euer, to gather either floure or fruit of that affection, presupposing that Angelica would neuer fixe hir Loue on him, for that his Parents were the cause of the defaite and ouerthrow of the Montanine house. But what? There is nothing durable vnder the heauens. Both good and euyl haue theyr reuolution in the government of humane affayres. The amities and hatredes of Kynges and Prynces, be they so hardened, as commonly in a Moment hee is not seene to be a hearty Friende, that lately was a cruell Foe, and spyred naught else but the ruine of his Aduersary? Wee see the variety of Humayne chaunces, and then doe iudge at eye what great simplicity it is to stay and settle certayne, and infallible iudgement vppon man's vnstayed doings. He that erst gouerned a king, and made all things to tremble at his word, is sodaynely throwne downe, and dyeth a shamefull death. In like forte, another whych looketh for his owne vndoinge, seeth himselfe aduanced to hys estate agayne, by reuenge ouer his Enimies. Calir Bassa gouerned whilom the great Mahomet, that wan the Empire of Constantinople, who attempted nothing without the aduice of that Bassa. But vpon the sodayne he saw him selfe reiected, and the next day strangled by commaundement of him, which so greatly honoured him, and without iust cause did him to a death so cruell. Contrarywise Aragon the Tartarian entring Armes against his Vncle Tangodor Caui, when hee was vpon the Poynt to lose his Lyfe for his rebellion, and was conueyed into Armenia to be executed there, was rescued by certayne Tar-

tarians the household seruants of his dead vncle, and afterwards Proclaymed King of Tartary about the year 1285. The example of the Empreffe Adaleda is of no lesse credit than the former, who being fallen into the hands of Beranger the Vfurper of the Empyre escaped his fury and cruelty by flight, and in the ende married to Otho the firste, sawe hir wrong reuenged vpon Beranger and all his Race by hir Sonne Otho the second. I aduouch these Hyftories to proue the mobility of fortune, and the change of worldly chaunces, to th'ende you may see that the very same misery which followed Charles Montanine hoysted him aloft agayne, and when he looked for least succour, he saw deliuerance at hand. Now to profecute our Hyftory: know yee that while Salimbene by little and little pined for loue of Angelica, whereof shee was ignoraunt and carelesse, and albeit shee curteously rendred health to him, when sometymes in his amorous fit he beheld hir at a Window, yet for al that shee neuer so much as guesfed the thoughts of hir louing enemy. During these haps it chaunced that a rich Cittizen of Siena, hauing a ferme adioyning to the Lands of Montanine, desirous to encrease his Patrimony, and annexe the same vnto his owne, and knowing that the yong Gentleman wanted many things, moued him to sel his inheritaunce, offering hym for it in ready money, a m. Ducates, Charles which of al the wealth and substaunce left him by his auncester, had no more remaynyng but that countrey Ferme, and a Palace in the City (so the rich Italians of ech City, terme their houses,) and with that lytle lyued honestly, and maintained his sifter so wel as he could, refused flatly to dispossesse himselfe of the portion, that renewed vnto him the happy memory of those that had ben the chiefe of all the Common Wealth. The couetous wretch seeing himselfe frustrate of his pray, conceiued sutch rancor against Montanine, as he purposed by right or wrong to make him not only to forfeit the same, but also to lose his lyfe, following the wicked desire of tyrannous Iefabell, that made Naboth to be stonned to death to extort and wrongfully get his vineyard. About that time for the quarels and common dyscordes raigning throughout Italy, the Nobility were not assured of safety in their Countreis, but rather the common fort and rascall number, were the chief rulers and

gouerners of the common wealth, whereby the greatest part of the Nobility or those of best authority being banished, the villanous band, and grossest kind of common people made a law (like to the Athenians in the time of Solon) that all persons of what degree and condition so euer they were, which practized by himselfe or other meanes the restablyshing or reuocation of sutch as were banished out of their Citye, should lose and forfeite the summe of m. Florens, and hauing not wherewith to pay the condempnation, their head should remaine for gage. A law no doubt very iust and righteous, scenting rather of the barbarous cruelty of the Gothes and Vandales, than of true christians, stopping the retire of innocents exiled for particular quarels of Citizens incited one against another, and rigorously rewarding mercy and curtesy, with execution of cruelty incomparable. This Citizen then purposed to accuse Montanine for offending against the law, because otherwise he could not purchase his entent, and the same was easy enough for him to compassse, by reason of his authority and estimation in the Citye: for the Endytemente and plea was no sooner red and giuen, but a number of post knightes appeared to depose against the poore Gentleman, to beare witnesse that he had trespassed the Lawes of the Countrey, and had sought meanes to introduce the banished, with intent to kyll the gouerners, and to place in state those factious, that were the cause of the Italian troubles. The myserable Gentleman knewe not what to do, ne how to defend himself. There were against him the Moone and the vii. starres, the state of the City, the Proctor and Iudge of the Courte, the wytnesses that gaue euidence, and the law which condempned him. He was sent to Pryson, sentence was pronounced against him with sutch expedition, as he had no leysure to consider his affayres. There was no man, for feare to incurre the displeasures of the Magistrates, that durst open hys mouth to speake or make sute for hys delyueraunce. Like as the most part of fryendes in these dayes resembling the crow, that flyeth not but after carrian to gorge his rauenous Crop, and sutch friends doe visite the house of the fryend but for profit, reuerencyng him so long as he is in prosperitye, accordyng to the Poet's complaynt.

Like as the purest gold in fieri flames is tried,  
 Euen so is fayth of fryends in hard estate descried.  
 If hard missehap doth thee affray,  
 Ech of thy friends do flie away,  
 And he which erst full friendly semde to thee,  
 A friend no more to thy poor state is hee.

And simple Wyghtes ought not to bee afrayde, and thynke amyfs if Fryendes doe flee away, sith Prynces and great Lords incurre futch hap and Fortune. The great leader of the Romaine Armies, Pompeius, the honor of the people and Senate of Rome, what companion had he to flee with hym? Whych of his auncient friends toke paine to rescue and delyuer him from his Enimyss hands which did pursue him? A king of Ægipt which had known and found this good Romane Prynce a kind and gentle fryend, was he that killed him, and sent his head to his Viçtor and unfastible greedy gutte Iulius Cæsar, falsifying his promised fayth, and forgetting his receiued pleasures. Amongst all the comforts which this pore Siena Gentleman found, although but a curffed Traitor, was thys vnfaithfull and pestiferous Camæleon, who came and offred him al the pleasure and kindnesse he was able to do. But the varlet attended conuenient tyme to make him taste his poyson, and to let him see by effect, how dangerous a thing it is to be il neighbored, hoping after the condemnation of Montanine he should at pleasure purchase the Lordshippe, after whych with so open mouth he gaped. Ouer whom he had hys wyll: for two or three dayes after the recitall of the endytement, and giuing of the euydence, Charles was condempned, and his fine fessed at M. Florins to be payed within xv. dayes, vntyl whych time to remaine in Pryson. And for default of futch payment to loose his heade, bicause he had infringed the Lawes, and broken the Statutes of the Senate. This sentence was very difficult for poor Montanine to digest, who saw all his goodes like to be dispoyled and confiscate, complayning specially the fortune of fayre Angelica his sifter, whych all the tyme of the imprysonment of hir deare brother, neuer went out of the house, ne ceased to weepe and lamente the hard fortune whereinto their family was lyke to fall by that new

mischaunce: "Alas," said the fayre curteous damsel, "will the heauens never be appeased but continually extend their wrathe vpon our deplored family, and shal our missehaps neuer cease? Had it not bene more tollerable for our consumed bloude, that the diffentions past, had been tried by dent of fword, than to see the present innocency of the young Gentleman my brother in daunger to be innocently accused and put to death, through the vniustice of those, which beare mortal malice to noble blood, and glory in depryuation of the whole remembrance of the same? O dampnable state that muste hale the guiltlesse to the gibet and irreuocable sentence of those iudges remaining in a city, which men cal free, albeit a confused multitude hath the vpper hande, and may so bee, that Nature hath produced them to treade vnder foote noble Wightes for their Offences. Ah dear Brother, I see well what is the cause. If thou hadst not that lytle lordshyp in the Countrey, and Pryncely House in the City, no man would haue enuid thine estate, or could haue charged thee with any Crime, which I would to God, thou hadst not onely enterpryfed, but also broughte to passe, to the intent thou mightest haue ben reuenged of the wrong which these cankred Carles ordinarily do vnto my Noble blood. But what reason is it that marchants and artificers, or the sonnes of villaines should rule a common Wealth? O happy Countreis where kings giue Lawes, and Princes see by proued fight, those persons which resemble them, and in their places beare the sway. And O unhappy wee, that be the slaues of a waiwarde state, peruerted by corruption. Why dyd our predeceffors minde to stablysh any lyberty at al, to thrust the same into the confused gouernment of the commons of our Countrey? We haue stil the Frenchman at our tayle, or the people of our highest Bishop, or else those crafty Florentines, we be the common pray of al those that list to follow the haunt, and that which is our extreamest misery, we make oure felues the very slaues of them that of right ought to be reputed the vilest amongs us al. Ah deare Brother, that thy wretched tyme is come, the onely hope of our decayed family. Thou hadest neuer bene committed to Warde, had not thy false assured foes bene assure of witnesse to condempne thee. Ah that my life mighte raunfome thine, and re-

deme agayn thyne estate and succor, thou shouldest be sure that forthwith Angelica would prepare hirself to bee the pray of those hungry rauenyng Wolues, which bleat and bellow after thy Lands and Lyfe." Whyle this fayre Damfell of Siena in this sort dyd torment hir self, poore Montanine, seeinge that he was brought to the last extremity of his desired hope, as eche man naturally doth feke meanes to prolong his lyfe, knowing that all other help fayled for hys delyueraunce except he sold his land, aswel to satisfie the fine, as to preuayle in the rest of his Affaires, sent one of the gailers to that worshipfull ufurer the cause of hys Calamity, to offer him his Land for the pryce and sum of a m. Ducates. The pernicious and trayterous villain, seeinge that Montanine was at his mercy, and stode in the water up to the very throte, and knew no more what to do, as if already he had tryumphed of hys life and Land so greatly coueted, answered him in this manner: "My friend thou shalt fay to Charles Montanine, that not long ago I would willingly haue giuen him a good Summe of Money for his Ferme, but sithens that tyme I haue imployed my Money to some better profit: and albeit I was in minde to buy it, I would be loth to give aboute 7. c. Florins, being assured that it cannot be so commodious, as my Money is able to bring yearely Gayne into my Purse." See how Auarice is the Pickpurse of secret and hidden gayne, and the very Whirlepoole of Honesty, and Conscience, couetinge nought els but by vnrighteous Pray of other mens goods, to accumulate and heape together. The aboundance whereof bringeth no greater good hap vnto the gluttonous Owner, but rather the minde of futch is more miserable, and carryeth therewithall more decrease of quiet, than increase of filthy muck. The couetous man beareth no loue but to his Treasure, nor exerciseth charity but vpon his Coafers, who, than he would be dispossessed thereof, had rather sell the life of his naturall Father. This detestable Villayne hauing sometimes offered m. Ducates to Charles for his Enherytaunce, will now doe so no more, aspiring the totall Ruine of the Montanine Family. Charles aduertised of his minde, and amazed for the Counsels decree, well saw that all thinges contraried hys hope and expectation, and that he must needes dye to satisfie the exceffue and couetous Lust of the Cormerant, whose malice hee

knew to bee so vehement, as none durft offer him Money, by reason of the vnhappy desire of this neuer contented Varlet: For which confideration throughly refolved to dye, rather than to leaue hys poore Sifter helpeffe, and without reliefe, and rather than he would agree to the bargayne tending to his so great losse and difadvantage, and to the Tirannous dealing of the wicked Tormentor of hys Lyfe, seeing also that all meanes to purge and auerre his innocency, was taken from him, the finall decree of the Iudges being already passed, he began to dispose himselfe to repentaunce and saluation of his Soule, making complaynte of his Mishaps in thys manner.

To what hath not the heauens hatefull bin,  
 Since for the ease of man they weaue futch woe?  
 By diuers toyles they lap our croffes in  
 With cares and griefes, whereon our mischiefes groe:  
 The bloody hands and Sword of mortall foe,  
 Doe searce mine euill, and would deftroy me quite,  
 Through heynous hate and hatefull heaped spite.

Wherefore come not the fatall sifters three,  
 That draw the line of life and death by right?  
 Com furies all, and make an ende of mee,  
 For from the world, my sprite would take his flight.  
 Why comes not nowe fowle Gorgon full in sight,  
 And Typhon's head, that deepe in hell remaynes,  
 For to torment the filly soules in paynes?

It better were for mee to feele your force,  
 Than this missehap of murdring enuy'es rage,  
 By curffed meanes and fall vpon my corfe,  
 And worke my ruine amid my flouring age:  
 For if I were dispatch'de in this desire,  
 The feare were gone, of blacke infernall fire.

O Gods of Seas, and cause of bluftring winde,  
 Thou Æolus and Neptune to I say,  
 Why did you let my Barke futch fortune finde,

That safe to shore I came by any way?  
 Why brake yee not, agaynst some Rocke or Bay,  
 The keele, the sterne, or els blew downe the Mast,  
 By whose large sayles through furing seas I pass?

Had these things hapt, I had not seene this houre,  
 The house of dole where wofull sprites complayne,  
 Nor vsurers on me had vñde futch power,  
 Nor I had seene depaynted in disdayne,  
 The God of care, with whom dead Ghosts remayne.  
 Who howles and Skrekes in hollow trees and holes,  
 Where Charon raynes among condemned soules.

Ah, ah, since hap will worke my wretched end,  
 And that my ruine by iudgement is decreed:  
 Why doth not happe futch happy fortune fend,  
 That I may lead with me the man in deede,  
 That staynd his fayth, and faylde me at my neede,  
 For gayne of golde, as vsurers do God knowes,  
 Who cannot spare the dropping of their nose?

I should haue slayne the slaue that seru'd me so,  
 O God forbid my hands were brued in blood,  
 Should I desire the harme of friend or foe?  
 Nay better were to wishe mine en'my good:  
 For if my death I thoroughly vnderstood,  
 I should make short the course I haue to run;  
 Since rest is got when worldly toyle is done.

Alas, alas, my chieftest way is this,  
 A guiltlesse death to suffer as I can,  
 So shall my soule be sure of heauen's blisse,  
 And good renoume shall rest behinde me than,  
 And body shall take end where it began,  
 And fame shall fly before me, ere I flit  
 Vnto the Gods, where Ioue in throne doth sit.



O God conuert, from vyce to vertue now,  
 The heart of him that falseth fayth wyth me,  
 And chaunge his minde and mend his maners throw,  
 That he his fault and fowle offence may see,  
 For death shall make my fame immortall bee :  
 And whiles the Sunne which in the heauens doth shine,  
 The shame is his, and honor shall be mine.

Alas, I mourne not for my selfe alone,  
 Nor for the fame of my Forefathers olde,  
 'Tys Angelike, that caufeth me to mone,  
 'Tys she that fillés my brest with fanfies colde,  
 'Tys shee more worth, than was the fliece of golde,  
 That moues my minde and breedes futch passions straunge,  
 As in my selfe I feele a wonderous chaunge.

Haue pittty Lord of hir and mee this day,  
 Since destny thus hath fundred vs in spite,  
 O suffer not hir vertues to decay,  
 But let hir take in friendship futch delite,  
 That from hir brest all vice be banisht quite :  
 And let hir like as did hir noble race,  
 When I poore man am deade, and out of place.

Alas my hand would write these wofull lines,  
 That feeble sprite denyes for want of might,  
 Wherefore my heart in brest consumes and pines,  
 With deepe defires, that far is from man's fight,  
 But God he sees myne innocencie and right,  
 And knowes the caufe of myne Accufer still,  
 Who seekes my bloud to haue on mee his will.

When Charles thus complayned himself, and throughly was  
 determined to dy, great pittty it was to see how fayre Angelica  
 did rent hir Face, and teare hir golden Locks, when she saw how  
 impossible it was to saue hir obstinate brother from the cruel

lentence pronounced vpon him, for whom she had employed all hir wits and fayre speach, to perfwade the neereft of hir Kin to make fute. Thus refted she alone ful of futch heauineffe and vexation as they can think which fee themfelues deprived of things that they esteeme moft dere. But of one thing I can wel assure you, that if ill fortune had permitted that Charles should haue bin put to death, the gentle damfel also had breathed forth the final gasp of hir forowful life, yeldinge therewithall the last end of the Montanine race and family. What booteth it to hold proceffe of long discourfe? Beholde the last day is come deferred by the Iudges, whereupon he must eyther satisfie the fine, or dye the next day after like a rebel and Traytor against the state, without any of his kin making fute or meane for his deliuerance: albeit they visited the fayre mayden, and comforted hir in that hir wretched state, instructing hir how shee should gouerne hir selfe patiently to suffer things remedileffe. Angelica accompanied with hir kin, and the maidens dwelling by, that were hir companions, made the ayre to sound with outcries and waymentings, and she hir selfe exclaymed like a woman deftraught of Wits, whose plaints the multitude affited with like eiulations and outcries, wayling the fortune of the yong gentleman, and forowfull to see the mayden in daunger to fal into some mishap. As these things were thus bewayled, it chaunced about nine of the clocke at night, that Anselmo Salimbene, he whom we haue sayd to be surprised with the loue of Angelica, returning out of the Countrey, where he had remayned for a certayne time, and passing before the house of his Lady, according to his custome, heard the voyce of women and maydens which mourned for Montanine, and therewithall stayd: the chiefeft cause of his stay was, for that he saw go forth out of the Pallace of hys Angelica, diuers Women making Moane, and Lamentation: wherefore he demanded of the neyghbors what noyse that was, and whether any in those Quarters were dead or no. To whom they declared at length, al that which yee haue heard before. Salimbene hearing this story, went home to his house, and being secretly entred into his chamber, began discourfe with himselfe vpon that accident, and fantasying a thousand things in his heade, in the ende thought that Charles

should not so be cast away, were he iustly or innocently condemned, and for the only respect of his sifter, that she might not bee left destitute of the Goods, and Inheritance. Thus discourfing diuers things, at length he sayd: "I were a very simple person nowe to rest in doubt, sith Fortune is more curious of my felicity than I could wishe, and seeketh the effect of my desires, when least of all I though vpon them. For behold, Montanine alone is left of all the mortall enimies of our house, whych to morrow openly shall lose his head like a rebell and seditious person, vpon whose Auncesters, in him shall I be reneued, and the quarell betweene our two Families, shall take ende, hauinge no more cause to feare rening of discorde, by any that can descend from him. And who shall let mee then from inioying hir, whom I doe loue, hir brother being dead, and his goods confiscate to the Seigniory, and she without all Maynetenance, and Reliefe, except the ayde of hir onely beauty and curtesie? What maynetenance shall she haue, if not by the loue of some honest Gentleman, that for hys pleasure may support hir, and haue pittie vpon the losse of so excellent beauty? Ah Salimbene, what hast thou sayd? Hast thou already forgotten that a Gentleman for that only cause is esteemed aboue al other, whose glorious facts ought to shine before the brightnesse of those that force theymselues to followe vertue? Art not thou a Gentleman borne, and Bred in noble house, Issued from the Loyns of gentle and noble Parentes? Is it ignorant vnto thee, that it pertayneth vnto a noble and gentle heart, to reuenge receyued Injuries himfelfe, without seeking ayde of other or else to pardon them by vsing clemency and princely curtesie, burying all desire of vengeaunce vnder the Toumbe of eternall obliuion? And what greater glory can man acquire, than by vanquishing himfelfe, and chastising his affections and rage, to bynde him which neuer thought to receyue pleasure or benefit at his hand? It is a thing which exceedeth the common order of nature, and so is it meete and requisite, that the most excellent doe make the effects of their excellency appeare, and seeke meanes for the immortality of their remembraunce. The great Dictator Cæsar was more prayfed for pardoning hys enimies, and for shewing himfelfe curteous and easie to be spoken to, than for subdu-

inge the braue and valiaunt Galles and Britons, or vanquishing the mighty Pompee. Dom Roderico Viuario, the Spaniard, although he might haue bene reuenged vpon Dom Pietro, king of Aragon, for his infidelity, bicaufe he went about to hinder his voyage agaynst the Saracens at Grenado, yet woulde not Punishe or Raunfome him, but taking him Pryfoner in the Warres, suffred him to goe without any Tribute, or any exa<sup>c</sup>tion of him and his Realme. The more I folowe the example of mighty Perf<sup>o</sup>nages in things that be good, the more notorious and wonderful shall I make my felfe in their rare and noble deedes. And not willing to forget a wrong done vnto me, whereof may I complayne of Montanine? What thinge hath hee euer done agaynst me or mine? And albeit his Predeceffors were enimies to our Family, they haue therefore borne the penaunce, more harde than the sinne deserued. And truly I should be afrayde, that God would suffer me to tumble into some mishap, if seeing one afflicted, I should reioyce in his affliction, and take by his decay an argument of ioy and pleasure. No, no, Salimbene is not of minde that futch fond Imagination should Bereue good will to make hymselfe a Freende, and to gayne by liberality and curtesie hir, which for hir only vertue deserueth a greater lord than I. Being assured, that there is no man (except he were dispoyled of all good nature and humanity) specially bearing the loue to Angelica, that I do, but he would be fory to see hir in futch heauineff<sup>e</sup> and despayre, and would attempt to deliuer hir from futch dolorous grieffe. For if I loue hir as I do in deede, must not I likewise loue all that which she earnestly loueth, as him that is nowe in daunger of death for a simple fine of a thousand Florens? That my heart doe make appeere what the loue is, which maketh me Tributary and Subiect to fayre Angelica, and that eche man may knowe, that furious loue hath vanquisht kings and great monarches, it behoueth not me to be abashed, if I which am a man and subiect to passions, so well as other, doe submit my felfe to the seruice of hir, who I am assured is so vertuous as euen very necessity cannot force hir to forget the house, whereof she tooke hir originall. Vaunt thy felfe then O Angelica, to haue forced a heart of it felfe impregnable, and giuen him a wound which the stoutest Lads might

fooner haue deprived of lyfe, than put him out of the way of his gentle kinde: and thou, Montaninè, thinke, that if thou wilt thy selfe, thou winnest to day so hearty a frende, as only death shall separate the vnion of vs twayne, and of all our posterity. It is I, nay it is I my selfe, that shall excell thee in duety, poynting the way for the wifest, to get honor, and violently compel the mooued myndes of those that be our aduersaries, desiring rather vainely to forgo myne own life, than to giue ouer the vertuous conceipts, which be already grifted in my minde." After this long discourse seeing the tyme required dilligence, hee tooke a thousand Ducats, and went to the Treasurer of the fines, deputed by the state, whom he founde in his office, and sayde vnto him: "I haue brought you fir, the Thousande Ducates, which Charles Montanine is bounde to pay for his deliuerance. Tell them, and giue him an acquittance, that presently hee may come forth." The Treafurer woulde haue giuen him the rest, that exceeded the Summe of a Thousand Florens: but Salimbene refused the same, and receyuing a letter for his discharge, he sent one of his Seruaunts therewithal to the chiefe Gayler, who seeing that the Summe of his condemnation was payd, immediately deliuered Montanine out of the Prifon where he was fast shut, and fettered with great, and weyglty Giues. Charles thinckinge that some Frier had bin come to confesse him, and that they had shewed him some mercy to doe hym to death in Prifon, that abroade in open shame of the world he might not deface the Noble house whereof he came, was at the first sight astonned, but hauing prepared himselfe to die, prayfed God, and besought him to vouchsafe not to forget him in the sorrowful passage, wherein the stoutest and coragious many times be faynt and inconstaunt. He recommended his Soule, he prayed forgieuenesse of his finnes: and aboue all, he humbly besought the goodnesse of God, that it would please him to haue pittie vpon his Sister, and to deliuer hir from all Infamy and dishonor. When he was caried out of Pryson, and brought before the Chiefe Gayler, sodaynely his Giues were discharged from his Legges, and euery of the standers by looked merily vpon hym, without speakinge any Woordes that might affray hym. That Curtesie vnlooked for, made hym attende some better thyng, and assured hym of that whych

before by any meanes hee durste not thyncke. And hys expectation was not deceived. For the Gayler sayde vnto hym: "Bee of good Cheare Sir, for beholde the letters of your discharge, wherefore you may goe at liberty whether you list." In saying so, he opened the Pryson, and licenced Montanine to departe, praying him not to take in ill part his intreaty and hard imprysonment, for that hee durst doe none other, the State of the City hauing fo enioyned hym. May not ech Wyght now behold how that the euent of loue be diuers from other passions of the mind? How could Salimbene haue so charitably deliuered Montanine, the hatred beyng so long tyme rooted between the two houfes, if some greate occasion whych hath no name in Loue, had not altred his Nature, and extinguished hys affection? It is meritorious to succour them whome we neuer saw before, fith nature moueth vs to doe well to them that be lyke our felues. But faith surmounteth there, where the very naturall inclynation feeleth it self constrayned and seeth that to be broken, whych obstynately was purposed to be kept in mynde. The graces, gentlenessse, Beauty, mild behauior and allurement of Angelica, had greater force ouer Salimbene, than the humility of hir Brother, although he had kneeled a hundred tymes before him. But what heart is so brute, but may be made tractable and Mylde, by the Contemplation of a thyng so rare, as the excellent Beauty of that Siena Mayden, and woulde not humble it selfe to acqyre the good graces of so perfect a Damsel? I wyll neuer accuse man for beyng in Loue wyth a fayre and vertuous Woman, nor esteeme hym a slaue, whych painefully ferueth a sobre Mayden, whose heart is fraught wyth honeste affections, and Mynd wyth desyre tending to good ende. Well worthy of blame is he to be deemed whych is in loue wyth the outward hew, and prayseth the Tree onely layden with floures, without regard to the fruit, whych maketh it worthye of commendation. The young maiden must needes resemble the floure of the Spryng time, vntill by hir constancy, modesty, and chastity she hath vanquished the concupiscence of the flesh, and brought forth the hoped fruit of a Vertue and Chastity not Common. Otherwyse, shee shall bee lyke the inrolled Souldyer, whose valiance hys only mind doth wytnes, and the offer whych he maketh

to hym that doth register his name in the muster bookes. But when the effect of seruyce is ioyned wyth his attempt, and prooffe belyeth not hys promyse, then the Captain imbraceth him, and aduanceth him, as a glasse for his affaires from that time forth. The lyke of Dames hauing passed the assaults and resisted the attempts of theyr assaylants which be honest, not by force being not requyred, but inclyned by ther owne nature, and the dyligence of theyr chaste and inuincible heart. But turne we againe vnto our purpose, Montanine, when he was delyuered, forthwyth wente home to hys house, to comfort hir, whom he was more than sure to be in great distresse and heauinesse for his sake, and whych had so much neede of comfort as he had, to take his rest. He came to the gate of his Pallace (where beyng knowne that it was Montanine) his sifter by any meanes coulde not bee made to beleue the same: so impossible seeme thynges vnto vs, which we most desyre. They were all in doubt, lyke as wee reade that they were when S. Peter escaped Herod's Pryson by the Angel's meanes. When Angelica was assured that it was hir Brother, fobbes wer layde asyde, sighes were cast away, and heauy weepings conuerted into teares of ioy, she went to embrace and kisse hir Brother, praising God for hys delyuerance, and making accompt that he had ben raised from death to lyfe, considering his stoutnes of minde rather bent to dye than to forgo his Land, for so smal a pryce. The Dames that wer kin vnto hym, and tarried there in Company of the maiden half in dispayre, leaft by dispayre and fury shee might fall into outrage therby to put hir lyfe in peril, with all expedition aduertified their husbands of Montanine's Lyberty, not looked for, who repayed thither, as wel to reioyce with him in his ioy and good fortune, as to make their excuse, for that they had not trauallyed to ryd him from that misery. Charles whych cared nothing at al for those mouth blessings, dissembled what he thought, thanking them neuertheless for their visitation and good remembrance they had of hym, for visiting and comforting his sifter which honor, he esteemed no lesse than if they had imployed the same vpon his owne person. Their friends and kinsfolk being departed, and assured that none of them had payde his ransome, hee was wonderfully astonned

and the greater was his gryef for that he could not tell what hee was, whych withoute requefte, had made fo gentle a prooffe of his lyberality: if he knew nothing, farre more ignoraunte was his fifter, forfomutch as fhe dyd thinke, that he had changed his mind, and that the horroure of death had made him fel his countrey inheritance, to hym whych made the firft offer to buy the fame: but either of them deceyed of their thought went to bed. Montanine refted not all the Nyght, hauyng ftill before his eyes, the vnknowne image of hym that had delyuered him. His bed ferued his turne to none other purpofe, but as a large field or fome long alley within a Wood, for walkes to make difcourfe of hys mynde's conceipts, fometimes remembryng one, fometimes another, without hitting the blanke and namyng of him that was his deliuerer, vnto whome he confefsed him felfe to owe hys feruice and duety fo long as hee lyued. And when hee faw the day begyn to appeare and that the Mornyng, the Vauntcurroure of the day, fummone Apollo to harneffe hys Horffe to begynne his courfe in our Hemisphere, he rofe and went to the Chamberlaine or Treasurer, futch as was deputed for receypt of the Fines, feffed by the State, whom he faluted, and receyuing lyke falutation, he prayed hym to shewe hym fo much pleafure as to tell hym the parties name, that was fo Lyberall to fatisfie his fine due in the Efchequer of the State. To whome the other aunfwered: "None other hath caufed thy delyueraunce (O Montanine) but a certain perfon of the World, whofe Name thou mayft eafily geffe, to whome I gaue an acquittance of thyne impryfonmente, but not of the iufte fumme, bycaufe hee gaue me a Thoufand Ducates for a Thoufand Florens, and woulde not receyue the ouerplus of the debte, whych I am readye to delyuere thee wyth thyne acquyttaunce." "I haue not to doe wyth the Money" (fayd Charles) "onely I pray you to tell me the name of him that hath don me thys great curtefy, that hereafter I may acknowledge him to be my Friend." "It is" (fayd the Chamberlayne) "Anfelmo Salimbene, who is to bee commended and prayfed aboue all thy parents and kinne, and came hither very late to bryng the Money, the furplufage whereof, beholde here it is." "God forbid" (fayd Montaine) "that I fhould take awaye that, whych fo happily was brought hither to rid me out of payne."



And so went away wyth his acquittance, his mind charged with a nombre of fanfies for the fact don by Salimbene. Being at home at his house, he was long time staid in a deepe consideration, desirous to know the cause of that gentle parte, proceeding from him whose Parents and Auncesters were the capitall Enimies of his race. In the end lyke one rifyng from a sound sleepe, he called to mynd, that very many times he had seene Anselmo with attentive eye and fixed looke to behold Angelica, and in eying hir very louyngly, he passed every day (before they gate) not shewing other countenance, but of good wyll, and wyth fryndly gesture, rather than any Enimies Face, saluting Angelica at all tymes when he met hir. Wherefore Montanine was assured, that the onely loue of Salimbene towards his syster caused that delyuerance, concluding that when the passion doth proceede of good loue, seized in gentle heart and of noble enterpryse, it is impossible but it muste bryng forth the marvellous effects of vertue's gallantize, of honesty and curtesy, and that the spyrite wel borne, can not so much hide hys gentle nourture, but the fyre must flame abroade, and that whych seemeth dyfficult to be brought to passe, is facilitye, and made possible by the conceiptes and induors so wel employed: wherefore in the Ende not to be furmounted in Honesty, ne yet to beare the marke of one, that vnthankfully accepteth good turnes, he determyned to vse a great prodigality vpon him, that vnder the name of foe, had shewed himselfe a more faythful friend, then those that bare good face, and at neede wer furthest off from afflicted Montanine, who not knowing what present to make to Salimbene, but of himselfe and hys syster, purposed to impart his minde to Angelica, and then vpon knowledge of hir wil to performe his intent. For which cause vnderstanding that his gracious enemy was gone into the Countrey, he thoughte well to confyder of his determynatyon, and to breake wyth hir in hys absence, the better to Execute the same, vpon his nexte retourne to the Citye. He called Angelica asyde, and beyng bothe alone together, hee vsed these or sutch lyke Woordes: "You knowe, deare Syster, that the higher the fall is, the more dangerous and greater gryefe he feeleth that doth fall from highe than hee that tumbleth downe from place more low

and of leffer steepeues. I speake this, because I call to mind the condition, nobility, and excellency of our ancestors, the glorie of our race, and riches of all our house, which constraineth me many tymes to sigh, and sheade a streame of teares, when I see the sumptuous palaces that were the homes and resting places of our Fathers, and grand fathers, when I see on all parts of this City, the Armes, and Scutcheons painted and imbossed, bearyng the mark of the Antiquity of our house, and when I beholde the stately marble tombes and brasen Monuments, in dyuers our Temples erected for perpetuall Memorye of many knyghtes and generalles of warres, that forted forth of the Montanine race: and chyeffly I neuer enter thys great Palace, the remnant of our inheritaunce and patrimony, but the remembraunce of our auncesters, so glaunceth ouer mine Hearte, as an hundred hundred tymes, I wysh for death, to thynke that I am the Post alone of the mysery and decay fallen vppon the name and famous familye of the Montanines, whych maketh me thinke our life to be vnhappy, being downe fallen from futch felicity, to feele a mysery most extream. But one thing alone ought to content vs, that amid so great pouerty, y<sup>e</sup> luck, ruine and abasement, none is able to lay vnto our charge any thing vnworthy of the nobility and the house, whereof we be descended, our lyfe being conformable to the generositie of our predecessors: whereby it chanceth, that although our poore estate be generally knowne, yet none can affirme, that we haue forligned the vertue of them, which vertuously haue lyued before vs. If so bee wee haue receiued pleasure or benefit of any man, neuer disdained I with all duety to acknowledge a good turne, stil shunning the vyce of ingratitude, to soyle the reputation wherein hitherto I haue passed my lyfe. Is there anye blot which more spotteth the renoume of man, than not confessing receiued benefites and pleasures performed in our necessity? You know in what peril of death I was, these few daies past, through their false surmise which neuer loued me, and how almost miraculously I was redemed out of the hangman's hands, and the cruel sentence of the vnryghteous Magistrate, not one of our kin offrynge themselves in deede or word for my defense, which forceth mee to say, that I haue felt of my Kin, which I neuer thought, and haue tasted

futch commodity at his hands, of whome I neuer durst expect or hope for pleasure, relief, aide or any comfort. I attended my delyueraunce by fute of those whome I counted for Kin and fryends, but the same so soon vanished, as the Necessity and peryll were present. So pressed with woe, and forsaken of fryends, I was affrayde that our aduerfaries (to remoue all feare and suspection in tyme to come) would haue purchafed my totall ruine, and procured the ouerthrowe of the Montanines name, by my Death, and approached end. But good God, from the place whereof I feared the danger, the calme arose, which hath brought my Barke to the hauen of health, and at his hands where I attended ruine, I haue tasted affiance and sustentation of myne honor and lyfe. And playnely to procede, it is Anfelmo Salimbene, the son of our auncient and capital enimies, that hath shewed himself the very loyall and faithfull fryend of our family, and hath deliuered your brother by payment to the State, the summe of a Thousand Ducats to raunfome the life of him, who thought him to be his moste cruel aduerfary. O Gentleman's heart in dede and gentle mind, whose rare vertues do surpasse all humaine vnderstanding. Friends vnited together in band of Amitye, amaze the World by the effects not vulgar in things whych they do one for an other. But thys surmounteth all, a mortall Ennimy, not reconcyled or requyred, without demaund of affuraunce for the pleasure which he doth, payeth the debts of his aduerfarye: which facte exceedeth all confideration in them, that discover the factes of men. I can not tel what name to attribute to the deede of Salimbene, and what I ought to call that his curtesy, but this must I needes protest, that the example of his honestie and gentlenes is of futch force, and so much hath vanquished me, as whether I shal dye in payne or lyue at ease, neuer am I able to exceede his lyberality. Now my life being ingaged for that which he hath don to mee, and hee hauynge delyuered the same from infamous Death, it is in your handes (deare sifter) to practize the deuyse imagined in my mind, to the intente that I may be onely bound to you for satisfying the iberalitye of Salimbene, by meanes whereof, you which wepte the death and wayled the lost liberty of your Brother, doe see me free and in safety hauyng none other care but to be acquitted of

hym, to whome both you and I be dearely bound." Angelica hearyng hir brother speak those words, and knowing that Salimbene was he, that had furpassed all their kinne in amity and comforte of theyr familye, answered her brother, sayinge: "I woulde neuer haue thought (good Brother) that your deliuerance had come to passe by him whose name euen now you tolde, and that our Ennimy es breaking al remembraunce of auncient quarels, had care of the health and conseruation of the Montanines. Wherefore if it were in my power I would satiffy the curtesy and gentleneffe of Anselmo, but I know not which way to begin the same. I being a maid that knoweth not how to recompense a good turne, but by acknowledging the same in heart: and to go to render thanks, it is neither lawfull or comely for me, and mutch lesse to offer him any thynge for the lyttle acceffe I haue to his house, and the small familiarity I haue with the Gentlewomen of his kinne. Notwythstanding, Brother, consider you wherein my power resteth to ayde and helpe you, and be assured (myne honor faued) I wyll spare nothynge for your contentment." "Sister" (sayd Montanine) "I haue of long time debated with my self what is to be done, and deuised what myghte be the occasion that moued this young Gentleman to vse so greate kindnesse toward mee, and hauing diligently pondred and waied what I haue seene and knowne, at length I founde that it was the onely force of Loue, which constrained his affection, and altered the auncient hatred that he bare vs, into new loue, that by no meanes can be quenched. It is the couert fire which Loue hathe kindled in his intrailles, it is loue whych hath rayfed the true effects of gentleneffe, and hath consumed the conceipts of displeased mind. O the great force of that amorous alteration, which vppon the sodain exchaung, seemeth impossible to receiue any more chaung or mutation. The onely Beauty and good grace of you Syfter, hath induced our gracious Enemy, the seruauent of your perfections, to delyuer the poore Gentleman forlorn of all good fortune. It is the honest lyfe and commendable behauiour of Angelica Montanine, that hath incyted Anselmo to doe an acte so praiseworthy, and a deede so kinde, to procure the deliuerance of one, which looked not for a chance of so great consequence. Ah gentle younge gentleman:

Ah princely minde, and heart noble and magnanimous. Alas how shall it be possible that euer I can approche the honest liberalitie wherwyth thou hast bound me for euer? My lyfe is thine, myne honour dependeth of thee, my goodes be tyed to thee. What resteth then, if not that you (sister) voyde of cruelty do vse no vnkyndnesse to hym that loueth you, and who for love of you hath prodigally offred hys owne goodes to ryd me from payne and dishonor? If so be, my lyfe and sauegarde haue ben acceptable vnto thee, and the sight of me dyscharged from Prison was ioyful vnto thee, if thou gauest thy willing consent that I should sel my patrimony, graunt presently that I may wyth a great, rare, and precious present, requyte the Goodnesse, Pleasure and curtesye that Salimbene hath done for your sake: And fyth I am not able with goodes of Fortune to satiffie his bountye, it is your person which may supply that default, to the intent that you and I may be quytted of the oblygation, wherein we stand bound vnto him. It behoueth that for the offer and reward of Money whych he hath imployed, we make present of your Beautye, not selling the pryce of your chastity, but delyueryng the same in exchange of curtesye, beyng assured for hys gentleness and good Nourture sake, hee wyll vse you none otherwyse, or vsurpe any greater authority ouer you, than Vertue permitteth in ech gentle and Noble hearte. I haue none other means of satisfaction, ne larger raumfome to render free my head from the Tribute whych Salimbene hath gyuen for my Lyfe and Liberty. Thynke (deare Sister) what determinate aunswere you wyll make me, and consider if my request be meete to be denied. It is in your choise and pleasure to deny or consent to my demaund. If so be that I be denied and loose the meanes by your refuse to be acquitted of my defender, I had rather forsake my Citye and Countrey, than to lyue heere wyth the title of ingratitude, for not acknowledging so greate a pleasure. But alas, with what Eye, shall I dare behold the Nobility of Siena, if by greate vnkyndnesse I passe vnder silence the rarest friendship that euer was deuised? What heartes sorrow shall I conceyue to bee pointed at wyth the finger, like one that hath forgotten in acknowledging by effecte, the receiued pleasure of my delyueraunce? No (sister) eyther you must bee the

quyet of my Minde, and the acquittance of vs bothe, or else must I dye, or wander lyke a vagabond into straunge Countries, and neuer put foote agayne into Italy." At those words Angelica stode so astonned and confused, and so besides hir selfe, like as wee see one distraught of sence that feeleth himself attached with some amaze of the Palsey. In the end recouering hir sprytes, and bee blubbered al with teares, hir stomacke panting like the Bel- lowes of a forge, she answered hir brother in thys manner: " I knowe not louyng Brother by reason of my troubled minde howe to aunswere your demaund, which seemeth to be both ryght, and wronge, right for respect of the bond, not so, in consideration of the request. But how I proue the same, and what reason I can alleadge and discouer for that prooffe, hearken me so patiently, as I haue reason to complayne and dispute vpon this chaunce more hard and difficulte to auoyde, than by reply able to be defended, fith that Lyfe and the hazarding thereof is nothing, in regarde of that which you wyll haue me to present with too exceeding pro- digall Liberality, and I would to God that Life mighte satisfie the same, than be sure it should so soone be employed, as the promise made thereof. Alas, good God, I thought that when I fawe my brother out of Pryson, the neare distresse of death, whereunto vniustly he was thrown, I thought (I say) and firmly did beleue, that fortune the Enemy of our ioy, had vomitted al hir poison, and being despoyled of hir fury and crabbed Nature had broken the bloody and Venemous Arrowes, wherewyth so longe tyme she hath plagued our family, and that by resting of hir selfe, shee had gyuen some rest to the Montanine house of al theyr troubles and misaduentures. But I (O miserable wight) do see and feele how far I am deuided from my hope, and deceiued of mine opinion, fith the furious stepdame, appeareth before me with a face more fierce and threatning, then euer she did, sharpening hir selfe against my youth in other fort, then euer against any of our race. If euer she persecuted our auncesters, if she brought them to ruine and decay, she now doth purpose wholly to subuerte the same, and throw vs headlong into the bottomlesse pit of all misery, exter- minating for all together, the remnaunte of our consumed house. Be it either by losse of thee (good brother) or the vyolent death

of me which cannot hazarde my Chastity for the pryce of myne vnhappy life: Ah, good God, into what anguish is my mynde exponed, and how doe I feele the force and Vyolence of froward Fortune? But what speak I of fortune? How doth hard lucke infue, that is predestinated by the heauens vppon our family? Must I at so tender yeares, and of so feeble kinde make choyse of a thing, which would put the wyfest vpon Earth into their shifts? My heart doth fayle me, reason wanteth and Iudgement hangeth in ballaunce by continuall agitations, to see how I am dryuen to the extremity of two daungerous straits, and enuironned with fearefull ieopardies, forcibly compelled either to bee deuided and seperated from thee (my Brother,) whome I loue about mine owne life, and in whome next after God I haue fyxed and put my hope and trust, hauing none other solace, Comfort and helpe, but thee, or else by keeping thee, am forced to giue vnto an other, and know not how, the precious treasure which beyng once lost, cannot be recouered by any meanes, and for the gard and conferuation whereof, euery woman of good iudgement that loueth vertue, ought a thousand times to offer hir selfe to death (if so many wayes she could) rather than to blot or soyle that inestimable Jewell of chastity, wherewith our lyfe is a true lyfe: contrarywyse shee which fondly suffreth hir selfe to be disseazed and spoyled of the same, and loofeth it without honest title, albeit she be a lyue, yet is she buried in the most obscure caue of death, hauing lost the honour which maketh Maydens march with head vpryght. But what goodnesse hath a Ladye, Gentlewoman, Maiden, or Wyfe, wherein she can glory, hir honour being in doubt, and reputayon darkened with infamie? Whereto serued the imperyall house of Augustus, in those Ladyes that were intituled the Emperour's Daughters, when for their villany, theyr were vnworthy of the title of chaste and vertuous? What profited Faustina the Emperiall Crowne vpon hir head, hir chastity through hir abhominable Life, being rapt and despoyled? What wronge hath bene done to many fymple Women, for being buried in the Tombe of dark obliuion, which for their vertue and pudique Lyfe, meryted Eternall prayse? Ah Charles, my Brother deare, where hast thou bestowrd the Eye of thy foreseeing mynde, that without prouidence and care of the

fame due to honest Dames, and chaste Damofels of our Family, hauyng lost the goodes and Fathers inheritance, wilt haue me in like sort forgoe my Chastity, whych hytherto I haue kept with heedful dilygence. Wilte thou deare Brother, by the pryce of my virginity, that Anfelmo shall haue greater victorye ouer vs, than he hath gotten by fight of Sword vpon the allied remnaunt of our house? Art thou ignorant that the woundes and diseases of the Mynd, be more vehement than those which affliēt the Body? Ah I vnhappy mayden, and what ill lucke is referued for me, what destiny hath kept me till this day to be presented for Venus' Sacrifice, to satisfy a young manne's lust, which coueteth (peraduenture) but the spoile of mine honor? O happy the Romain maide, slayne by the proper hands of hir woeful Father Virginius, that she myght notbe soyled with infamy, by the Lecherous embracements of rauenous Appius, which desired hir acquaintaunce. Alas, that my brother doe not so, rather I woulde to God of his owne accord he be the infamous minister of my life ready to be violated, if God by his grace take not my cause in hand? Alas death, why dost thou not throwe against my hearte thy most pearcing dart, that I may goe waite vpon the shadowes of my thryce happy Parents, who knowing this my gryefe, wyl not be voide of passion to helpe me wayle my woefull state. O God; why was not I choaked and frangled, so soone as I was taken forth the secret imbracements of my mother's Wombe, rather than to arriue into this mishap, that either must I lose the thing I deeme moste deare, or die with the violence of my proper hands? Come death, come and cut the vnhappy threede of my woefull Lyfe: stope the pace of teares with thy trenchant Darte that streame outragiously downe my face, and close the breathing wind of sighes, which hynder thee from doing thine office vpon my heart, by suffocation of my lyfe and it." When she had ended those Words, hir speache dyd faile, and waxing pale and faint, (fitting vpon hir stoole) she fared as though that very death had sitten in hir place. Charles thynking that his sifter had bene deade, mated with sorrowe, and desirous to lyue no longer after hir, seeing he was the cause of that sownyng, fell downe dead vpon the Ground, mouing neither hand nor foote, as though the soule had ben departed from the bodye. At the noyse



which Montanine made by reason of hys fall, Angelica reuiued out of hir fowne, and seeinge hir Brother in so pytifull plyght, and supposing he had bene dead for care of hys request, for beyng berieued of hir Brother, was so moued, as a lyttle thyng would haue made hir do, as Thisbe dyd, when she viewed Pyramus to be slayne. But conceyuing hope, she threw hir selfe vpon hir Brother, cursing hir Fortune, bannyng the Starres of cruelty, and hir lauish speach, and hir self for hir little loue to hir brother, who made no refusall to dye to saue his Lande for reliefe of hir: wher she denyed to yeld hir selfe to him that loued hir with so good affection. In the end she applied so many remedies vnto hir brother, sometymes casting cold water vpon his face, sometymes pinching and rubbing the temples and pulses of his armes and his mouth with vineger, that she made hym to come agayne: and seeing that his eyes were open, beholding hir intentiuely with the countenance of a man half in despayre, she saied vnto him: "For so much brother as I see fortune to be so froward, that by no meanes thou canst auoide the cruel lot, which launceth me into the bottome of mortall misery, and that I must aduenture to folowe the indeuors of thy minde, and obey thy will, which is more gentle and Noble, than fraught with reason, I am content to satisfy the fame and the loue which hitherto thou hast born me. Be of good cheere, and doe wyth mee and my body what thou list, giue and presente the same to whom thou pleasest. Wel be thou sure, that so sone as I shal bee out of thy hands and power, I wyl be called or esteemed thine no more, and thou shalt haue lesse authority to stay me from doing the deuises of my fantasie, swearing and protesting by the Almighty GOD, that neuer man shall touch Angelica, except it be in mariage, and that if he assay to passe any further, I haue a heart that shall incourage my hands to sacrifice my Life to the Chastitye of Noble Dames which had rather dye than liue in slaunder of dyshonesty. I wyll die a body without defame, and the Mynde voyde of consent, shall receiue no shame or filth that can soyle or spot the same." In saying so, she began againe to weepe in futch abundance, as the humour of hir brayne ranne downe by the issue of bothe hir Eyes. Montanine albeit forrowful beyond measure to see his gentle and chaste sister

in futch vexation and heauineffe, reioyfed yet in his mind, that ſhe had agreed to his request, which preſaged the good lucke that afterwarde chaunced vnto him, for hys Lyberal offer. “Wherefore” (ſaid he to Angelica,) “I was neuer in my Lyfe ſo defirous to liue, but that I rather chooſe to dye, than procure a thinge that ſhould turne thee to diſpleaſure and grieſe, or to hazarde thine honor and reputation in daunger or peryll of damage, which thou haſt euer knowne, and ſhouldeſt haue ſtill perceyued by effect, or more properly to ſpeak, touched with thy finger if that incomparable and rare curteſy and Lyberality of Salimbene had not pro- uoked me to requyre that, which honeſtly thou canſt not gyue, nor I demaunde without wronge to thee, and preiudice to mine owne eſtimation and honoure. But what? the feare I haue to be deemed ingrate, hath made me forget thee, and the great honeſty of Anſelmo maketh me hope, yea and ſtedfaſtly beleue, that thou ſhalt receiue none other diſpleaſure, but to be preſented vnto him whome at other times we haue thought to be our mortal enemy. And I thinke it impoſſible that he wil vſe any villany to hir whome he ſo feruently loueth, for whoſe ſake he feareth not the hatred of his friends, and diſdained not to ſaue him whome he hated, and on whome he myght haue bene reuenged. And forſo- much ſiſter, as the face commonly ſheweth the ſigne and token of the heartes affection, I pray thee by any meanes declare no ſad countenance in the preſence of Salimbene, but rather cheere vp thy face, dry vp the aboundance of thy teares, that he by ſeeing thee Ioyfull and mery, may be moued to continue his curteſy and uſe thee honeſtly, being ſatiſfied with thy liberality, and the offer that I ſhall make of our ſeruiſe.” Here may be ſeene the extremitie of two dyuers thinges, duety combatting with ſhame, reaſon being in contention with himſelf. Angelica knew and confeſſed that hir brother did but his duetye, and that ſhe was bound by the ſame very bond. On the other ſide, hir eſtate and virginal chafity, brake the endeuours of hir duety, and denyed to doe that which ſhe eſteemed ryght. Neuertheleſſe ſhee prepared hir ſelf to follow both the one and the other: and by acquitting the duety to hir brother, ſhe ordayned the meane, to diſcharge him of that which he was bound to his benefactor, determinynge neuer-

theleffe rather to dye, than shamefully to fuffer hir selfe to be abused, or to make hir lose the floure, which made hir glyfter amongs the maidens of the city, and to deface hir good fame by an acte so vyllanous. But that speciall rare vertue was more singular in hir, than was that continency of Cyrus the Persian King, who fearing to be forced by the allurements of the excellent beauty of chaste Panthea, would not suffer hir to be brought into his presence, for feare that hee being surmounted with folysh lustes, should force hir, that by other meanes could not be persuaded to breake the holy lawes of Mariage, and promised faith to hir husband. For Salimbene hauing in his presence, and at his commaundement hir whome about al thyngs he loued would by no meanes abuse his power, but declared his gentle nature to bee of other force and effect, than that of the aforefaid king as by reading the successe of this historie you shal perceiue. After that Montanine and his sifter had vttered many other words vpon their determination, and that the fayre maiden was appeased of hir sorrow, attending the issue of that which they went about to begin: Anselmo was come home out of the Countrey, whereof Charles hauing intelligence, about the second houre of the night, he caused his sifter to make hir ready, and in company of one of their seruants that caried light before them, they came to the lodgings of Salimbene, whose seruant seeing Montanine so accompanied to knocke at the Gate, if hee did maruel I leaue for you to think, by reason of the displeasure and hatred which he knew to bee betweene the two families, not knowing that which had already passed for the beginning of a final peace of so many controuersies: for which cause so astonned as he was, he went to tel his maister that Montanine was at the gate, desirous secretly to talk vnto him. Salimbene knowing what company Charles had with him, was not vnwilling to goe downe, and causing two Torchets to be lighted, came to his gate to entertaine them, and to welcome the brother and the sifter, wyth so great curtesie and friendship as he was surprysed with loue, seeing before his eyes the sight of hir that burned hys heart incessantly, not discoueryng as yet the secrets of his thought by making hir to vnderstand the good wyl he bare hir, and how much he was hir seruant.

He could not tel wel whether he was incharmed or his eyes dafelled, or not wel wakened from sleepe when he saw Angelica, so amazed was he with the straungenesse of the fact, and arriuall of the maiden to his house. Charles seeing hym so confused, and knowing that the great affection he bare vnto his sifter, made him so perplexed and besides himself, said vnto him: "Sir, we would gladly speake with you in one of your Chambers, that there myght be none other witnesse of our dyscourse, but we three together." Salimbene which was wrapt wyth ioy, was able to make none other aunfweare, but: "Goe we whether you please." So taking his Angelica by the hand, they went into the Hall, and from thence into his chamber, whych was furnyshed accordinge to the state and riches of a Lord, he being one of the welthiest and chiefe of the City of Siena. When they were set downe, and al the seruants gone forth, Charles began to say to Salimbene, these words: "You may not thinke it straunge (fir Salimbene) if against the Lawes and customes of our Common Wealthe, I at thys tyme of the Nyght doe call you vp, for knowyng the Bande wherewyth I am bound vnto you, I must for euer confesse and count my selfe to be your slaue and bondman, you hauing don a thing in my behalf that deserueth the name of Lord and maister. But what vngrateful man is he that wil forget so greate a benefit, as that which I haue receyued of you, holding of you, life, goods, honor, and this mine own sifter that enioyeth by your meanes the prefence of hir brother and hir rest of mind, not losing our noble reputation by the losse prepared for me through vnrighteous iudgement, you hauing staid the ruine both of hir and me, and the rest of our house and kin. I am ryghte glad fir, that this my duety and seruice is bounden to so vertuous a Gentleman as you be, but exceeding sorry, that fortune is so froward and contrary vnto me, that I am not able to accomplishe my good will, and if ingratitude may lodge in mind of a neady Gentleman, who hath no helpe but of himselfe, and in the wyll of hys chaste sifter, and minde vnited in two persons onely faued by you, duety doeth requyre to present the rest, and to submit al that is left to be disposed at your good pleasure. And bicause that I am well assured, that it is Angelica alone which hath kindled the flame of desire, and hath caused you

to loue that which your predeceffours haue deadly hated, that fame sparke of knowledge, whych our misery could not quench with all his force, hath made the way and shewed the path whereby we shall auoide the name of ingrate and forgetfull persons, and that fame which hath made you lyberall towards me, shalbe bountifully bestowed vpon you. It is Angelica fir, which you see present heere, who to discharge my band, hath willingly rendred to be your owne, submitinge hir selfe to your good wyll, for euer to be yours. And I which am hir brother, and haue receiued that great good wyll of hir, as in my power to haue hir wyl, do present the fame, and leaue hir in your hands, to vse as you would your owne, praying you to accept the fame, and to consider whose is the gift, and from whence it commeth, and how it ought to be regarded." When he had sayd so, Montanine rose vp, and without further talke, went home vnto his house. If Anselmo were abashed at the Montanines arriual, and astonned at the Oration of Charles, his sodain departure was more to be maruelled at, and therewithal to see the effect of a thing which he neuer hoped, nor thought vpon. He was exceding glad and ioyfull to see himself in the company of hir, whome he desired aboue al things of the world, but sory to see hir heauy and sorrowful for futch chauce. He supposed hir being ther, to procede rather of the yong man's good and gentle Nature, than of the Maiden's will and lykyng. For whych cause taking hir by the hand, and holding hir betwene hys armes, he vsed these or futch lyke words: "Gentlewoman, if euer I had felt and knowne with what Wing the variety and lyghtnesse of worldly thynges do flye, and the gaynes of instant fortune, at this present I haue seen one of the most manifest profes which seemeth to me so straunge, as almost I dare not beleeue that I see before myne Eyes. I know well that it is for you, and for the seruice that I beare you, that I haue broken the effect of that hatred, whych by inheritaunce I haue receiued against your House, and for that deuotion haue deliuered your Brother. But I see that Fortune wyll not let mee to haue the vpper hand, to bee the Conquerer of hir sodaine pangs. But you your self shall see, and euery man shall know that my heart is none other than noble, and my deuises tend, but to the exploit of

all vertue and Gentleneffe : wherefore I pray you (sayd he, kissing hir louingly) be not fad, and doubt not that your seruauant is any other now, hauing you in his power, than he was when he durst not dyscouer the ardent Loue that vexed him, and held him in feeble state, ful of desyre and thought : you also may bee sure, that he hath not had the better hande ouer me, ne yet for his curtesy hath obtained victory, nor you for obeying him. For sith that you be myne, and for sutch yelded and giuen to me, I wyl keepe you, as hir whome I loue and esteeme aboue al things of the World, makyng you my Companion and the onely mistresse of my goodes heart, and wyll. Thinke not that I am the Fryend of Fortune, and practise pleasure alone without vertue. It is modesty which commaundeth me, and honesty is the guide of my conceits. Assure you then, and repose your comfort on mee : for none other than Angelica Montanine shall be the wyfe of Anselmo Salimbene : and during my life, I wyll bee the Fryend, the defender and supporter of your house." At these good Newes, the drouisie and wandryng Spirite of the fayre Siena mayd awaked, who endyng hir teares and appeasing hir sorrow, rose vp, and made a very lowe reuerence vnto hir courteous fryend, thanking hym for hys greate and incomparable liberalitey, promysing all seruice, duetie, and Amitye, that a Gentlewoman ought to beare vnto him, whom God hath referued for hir Spouse and husband. After an infinite number of honest imbracements and pleasaunte kisses giuen and receiued on both partes, Anselmo called vnto him one of his Auntes that dwelled within him, to whome he deliuered his new Conquest to keepe, and spedily without delay he sent for the next of his Kinne and dearest friends : and being come, he intreated them to kepe him company, in a very vrgent and weighty businesse he had to do, wherein if they shewed themselues dilygent in his request, doubtful it is not, but he addresssed speede for accomplishment of his Enterpryse. Then causyng hys Aunte and welbeloued Angelica to come forth, he carryed them (not without their great admiration) to the pallace of Montanine, whither being arryued : he and hys Companie were well intertayned of the sayd Montanine, the Brother of fayre Angelica. When they were in the Hall, Salimbene sayd to hys Brother in law that should be : "Senio

Montanine, it is not long sithens, that you in company of my faire Gentlewoman heere, came home to speake wyth mee, desirous to haue no man priuy to the effect of your conference. But I am come to you with this troupe to disclose my minde before you al, and to manifeste what I purpose to doe, to the intente the whole World may know your good and honest Nature, and vnderstand how I can be requited on them, which indeuor to gratifie me in any thing." Hauing said so, and euery man being set down he turned his talk to the rest of the company in thys wise: "I doubt not my friends and Noble Dames, but that ye much muse and maruell to see me in this house so late, and in your company, and am sure, that a great desire moueth your minds to know for what purpose, the cause, and why I haue gathered this assemblie in a time vnlooked for, and in place where none of our race and kinne of long time did enter, and lesse did meane to make hither their repaire. But when you doe consider what vertue and goodnesse resteth in the heartes of those men, that shunne and auoide the brutishnesse of Minde, to followe the reasonable part, and which properly is called Spirituall, you shall thereby perceiue, that when Gentle kynde and Noble Heart, by the great mistresse dame Nature be gryfted in the myndes of Men, they cease not to make appeare the effect of their doings, sometyme producing one vertue, sometimes another, which cease not to cause the fruite of futch industry both to blome and beare: In futch wyse, as the more those vertuous actes and commendable workes, do appeare abroade, the greater dyligence is employed to searche the matter wherein she can cause to appeare the force of vertue and excellency, conceiuing singular delyghte in that hir good and holy delyuery, which bryngeth forth a fruite worthy of futch a stocke. And that force of mind and Generosity of Noble Heart is so firme and sure in operation, as although humane things be vnstable and subiect to chaung, yet they cannot be seuered or disparclod. And although it be the Butte and white, whereat fortune dischargeth al hir dartes and shaftes, threatning shooting and assayling the same round, yet it continueth stable and firme like a Rocke and Clyffe beaten wyth the vyolent fury of waues rising by wind or tempest. Whereby it chaunceth, that riches and dignity can no more ad-

uauunce the heart of a flauē and villaine, than pouerty make vile and abase the greatneſſe of courage in them that be procreated of other ſtuffe than of common forte, whych daily keepe the maieſty of their oryginall, and lyve after the inſtincte of good and Noble Bloude, wherewith their aunceſters were made Noble, and ſucked the ſame vertue oute of the Teates of Nourſſes Breaffes, who in the myddes of troubleſome trauayles of Fortune that doe aſſayle them, and depreſſe theyr modeſty, their face and Countenaunce, and theyr factes full well declare theyr condition, and to doe to vnderſtande, that vnder ſutch a Miſery, a Mynde is hidde which deſerueth greater Guerdon than the eigre taſte of Calamitye. In that dyd glowe and ſhyne the Youthe of the Perſian and Median Monarch, beyngē nourſſed amonges the ſtalles and Stables of hys Grandfather, and the gentle kind of the founder of ſtately Rome ſockeled in the Shepecoates of Prynces ſheepehierds. Thus mutch haue I ſayd, my good lords and dames, in conſideration of the noble corage and gentle minde of Charles Montanine, and of his fiſter, who without preiudice to any other I dare to ſay, is the paragon and mirrour of all chaſt and curteous maidens, well trayned vp, amonges the whole Troupe of thoſe that lyue thys day in Siena, who beeyng brought to the ende and laſt poynt of their ruine, as euery of you doth knowe, and theyr race ſo fore decayed as there remayneth but the onely Name of Montanine: notwythſtanding they neuer loſt the heart, deſire, ne yet the effect of the curteſy, and naturall bounty, whych euer doth accompany the mynd of thoſe that be Noble in deede. Whych is the cauſe that I am conſtrayned to accuſe our Aunceſters, of to mutch cruelty, and of the lyttle reſpecte whych for a controuerſye occured by chaunce, haue purſued them with ſutch mortall reuenge, as without ceaſing, with all their force, they haue aſſayed to rinate, abolyſhe, and for euer adnichilate that a ryghte Noble and illuſtre race of the Montanines, amongs whome if neuer any goodneſſe appeared to the Worlde, but the Honeſty, Gentleneſſe, Curteſy and vertuous maners of theſe twayne here preſente, the Brother and fiſter, yet they ought to be accompted amonges the ranke of the Nobleſt and chiefeſt of our City, to the intent in time to come it may not be reported, that wee haue eſteemed and chearyſhed



Riches and droffie mucke, more than vertue and modesty. But imitating those excellent gouerners of Italy, whych held the Romane Empire, let vs rather reuerence the Vertuous Poore, than prayse or pryse the Rich, gyuen to vice and wickednesse. And for so much as I do see you all to be desirous to knowe the cause and argument, whych maketh me to vse this talke, and forceth mee to prayse the curtesy and goodnesse of the Montanines, pleafeth you to stay a lyttle with pacience, and not think the tyme tedyous, I meane to declare the same. Playnely to confesse vnto you (for that it is no cryme of Death, or heinous offence) the gyfts of nature, the Beauty and comelynesse of fayre Angelica heere present, haue so captiuat my Mind, and depriued my heart of Lyberty, as Night and Day trauailing how I might discouer vnto hir my martirdom, I did consume in futch wyfe, as losing lust of slepe and meate, I feared ere long to be either dead of sorrow or estranged of my right wits, feing no meanes how I might auoide the same, bicause our two houses and Families were at contynuall debate: and albeit conflicts were ceafed, and quarelles forgotten, yet there rested (as I thought) a certaine desire both in the one and the other of offence, when time and occasion did serue. And yet mine affection for all that was not decreased, but rather more tormented, and my gryefe increased, hopelesse of help, which now is chaunced to me as you shall heare. You do know, and so do all men, howe wythin these fewe dayes past, the Lord Montanine here present, was accused before the Seniorie, for trespasses against the statutes and Edicts of the same, and being Prysoner, hauing not wherewith to satisfie the condempnation, the Law affirmed that his life should recompence and supply default of Money. I not able to suffer the want of hym, which is the brother of the dearest thing I esteeme in the Worlde, and hauing not hir in possession, nor lyke without him to attayne hir, payed that Summe, and delyuered hym. He, by what meanes I know not, or how he coniectured the beneuolence of my deede, thynking that it proceeded of the honest Loue and affection which I bare to gracious and amiable Angelica, wel confideryng of my curtesy, hath ouercome me in prodigalitye, he this Nyght came vnto mee, with his sifter my mistresse, yelding hir my slaue and Bondwoman, leauyng

hir with me, to doe with hir as I would with any thing I had. Behold my good Lordes, and yce Noble Ladies and cofins, and confider how I may recompence this Benefit, and be able to fatiffie a present fo precious, and of futch Value and regard as both of them be, futch as a right puiffant prince and Lord may be contented wyth, a duety fo Liberall and Iewell ineftymable of two offered thynges." The affiftants that were there, could not tell what to fay, the difcourfe had fo much drawne their myndes into dyuers fantasies and contrary opinions, feing that the fame requyred by deliberation to be confidered, before lightly they vttered their mindes. But they knew not the intent of him, which had called them thither, more to testify his fact, than to iudge of the thing he went about, or able to hinder and let the fame. True it is, that the ladies viewing and marking the amiable countenance of the Montanine Damsell, woulde haue iudged for hir, if they feared not to bee refused of hym, whome the thing did touche most neere. Who without longer ftaye, opened to them al, what he was purposed to do, faying: "Sith ye do fpende time fo long vpon a matter already meant and determyned, I wyll ye to knowe, that hauing regard of mine honour, and defirous to fatiffie the honesty of the Brother and fifter, I mynde to take Angelica to my wyfe and lawfull fpoufe, vniting that whych fo long tyme hath bene deuyded, and making into two bodyes, whilom not well accorded and agreed, one like and vniforme wyll, praying you ech one, ioyfully to ioy with me, and your felues to reioyse in that alliaunce, whych seemeth rather a worke from Heauen, than a deede concluded by the Counsell and industrie of Men. So lykewyfe all wedded feeres in holy Wedlocke (by reafon of the effect and the Author of the fame, euen God himfelfe, whych dyd ordayne it firfte) bee wrytten in the infallible booke of hys owne prefciencie, to the intent that nothing may decay, whych is fustayned wyth the mighty hand of that Almyghty God, the God of wonders, which verily hee hath difplayed ouer thee (deare Brother) by makynge thee to fall into diftreffe and daunger of death, that myne Angelica, beeing the meane of thy delyueraunce, myght alfo bee caufe of the attonement which I doe hope henceforth fhall bee, betwene fo Noble houfes as ours be." Thys finall de-

cree reueled in open audience, as it was, againſt their expectation, and the ende that the kindred of Anfelmo looked for, ſo was the fame no leſſe ſtraunge and baſhfull, as ioyful and pleaſaunt, feeling a ſodain ioy, not accuſtomed in theyr mynde, for that vnion and allyaunce. And albeit that their ryches was vnequall, and the dowry of Angelica nothyng neare the great wealth of Salimbene, yet all Men dyd deeme him happy, that hee had chaunced vpon ſo vertuous a maiden, the onely Modeſtie and Integritie of whome, deſerued to bee coupled wyth the moſt honourable. For when a man hath reſpecte onely to the beauty or Riches of hir, whome he meaneth to take to Wyfe, hee moſte commonly doth incurre the Miſchiefe, that the Spyrite of dyſſention intermeddleth amyd theyr houſehold, whereby Pleaſuere vaniſhing wyth Age, maketh the riuieled Face (befet wyth a Thouſand wrynkeled furrowes) to growe pale and drye. The Wyfe lykewyfe when ſhe feeth her goodes to furmount the ſubſtance of hir wedded Huſband, ſhe aduanceth hir hearte, ſhe ſwelleth wyth pryde, indeuor- yng the vpper hand and fouerainty in all thyngs, whereupon it riſeth, that of two frayle and tranſitorie things, the building which hath ſo fyckle foundation, can not indure, man being borne to commaund, and can not abyde a mayſter ouer hym, beyng the chyefe and Lord of hys Wyfe. Now Salimbene, to perfourme the effect of hys curteſie, gaue his fayre Wife the moytie of his Lands and goods, in fauoure of the Mariage, adopting by that meanes, Montanine to bee his Brother, appointing hym to be heyre of all hys goodes in caſe he deceaſed wythout heyres of his Body. And if GOD did ſend hym Children, he inſtituted him to bee the heyre of the other halfe, which reſted by hys donation to Angelica his new epoſe: Whom he married ſolempnely the Sunday folowing, to the great contentation and maruell of the whole City, which long time was afflicted by the ciuile diſſentions of thoſe two houſes. But what? Sutch be the varieties of worldly ſucceſſe, and ſutch is the miſchiefe amongs men, that the ſame which honeſty hath no power to winne, is furmounted by the diſgrace and miſfortune of wretched time. I neede not to alleage here thoſe amongs the Romanes, which from great hatred and malice were reconciled with the indiffoluble knot of Amity; forſomutch as the dignities

and Honoures of theyr Citty prouoked one to flatter and fawne vpon an other for particular profit, and not one of them attained to futch excellencie and renoume, as the foresayd did, one of whome was vanquyshed with the fire of an amorous passion, whych forcyng nature hir selfe, brought that to passe, which could neuer haue bene thoughte or imagyned. And yet Men wyll accuse loue, and painte hir in the Colours of foolysh Furye and raging Madnesse. No, no, Loue in a gentle heart is the true subiect and substance of Vertue, Curtesy, and Modest Manners, expellynge all Cruelty and Vengeance, and nourishyng peace amongs men. But if any do violate and prophane the holy Lawes of Loue, and peruert that which is Vertuous, the faulte is not in that holye Saincte but in hym whych foloweth it wythout skyll, and knoweth not the perfection. As hapneth in euery operation, that of it selfe is honest, although defamed by thofe, who thinking to vse it, doe filthily abuse the fame, and cause the grosse and ignoraunte to condempne that is good, for the folye of futch inconstant fooles: In the other is painted a heart so voyde of the bloody and abhominable sinne of Ingratitude, as if death had ben the true remedy and meane to satiffie his band and duety, he would haue made no conscience to offer himselfe frankly and freely to the dreadful passage of the fame. You see what is the force of a gentle heart wel trained vp, that would not be vanquished in curtesye and Lyberality. I make you to be iudges, (I meane you) that be conuerfant in loue's causes, and that with a Iudgement passionlesse, voide of parciality doe dyscourse vpon the factes and occurrentes that chaunce to men. I make you (I faye) iudges to gyue sentence, whether of three caried away the pryfe, and most bound his companion by lyberall acte, and curtesie not forced. You see a mortall enemy forrow for the misery of his aduersary, but solycited therunto by the ineuitable force of Loue. The other marcheth with the glory of a present so rare and exquisite, as a great Monarch would haue accompted it for singuler fauor and prodigality. The maiden steppeth forth to make the third in ranke, wyth a loue so stayed and charity wonderfull towards hir brother, as being nothyng affured whether he to whome she offered hir selfe were so Moderate, as Curteous, she yeldeth hir selfe to the

loffe of hir chafity. The firft affayeth to make himfelfe a conquerour by marriage, but ſhe diminifhyng no iote of hir Noble mind, he muſt ſeeke elfe where hys pryfe of victory. To hir a defyre to kyl hir ſelfe (if thinges ſucceeded contrary to hir minde) myght haue ſtopped the way to hir great glory, had ſhe not regarded hir virginity, more than hir own Lyfe. The ſecond ſeemeth to go half conſtrained, and by maner of acquittall, and had hys affectyon bene to render hymfelfe Slaue to hys Foe, hys Patron and preferuer, it would haue diminifhed his prayfe. But ſithens inough wee haue hereof dyſcourſed, and bene large in treatie of Tragicomicall matters, intermyxed and ſuaged (in ſome parte) wyth the Enteruiewes of dolor, modeſty, and indifferente good hap, and in ſome wholly imparted the dreadful endes like to terrible beginnings, I meane for a reliefe, and after ſutch ſweete bankets, to interlarde a licorous reſection for ſweeting the mouthes of the delicate: And do purpoſe in this Nouell inſuing, to manifeſt a pleaſaunt diſport betweene a Wydow and a Scholler, a paſſing Practiſe of a crafty Dame, not well ſchooled in the diſcipline of Academicall rules, a ſurmouninge ſcience to trade the nouices of that forme, by ware foreſight, to incoultre thoſe that by laborſome trauayle and nightly watch, haue ſtudied the rare knowledge of Mathematicalles, and other hidden and ſecrete Artes. Wiſhing them ſo well to beware, as I am defirous to let them know by this rudiment, the ſucceſſe of ſutch attemptes.

## THE THIRTY-FIRST NOUELL.

*A Wydow called Mistresse Helena, wyth whom a Scholler was in loue, (shee louing an other) made the same Scholler to stande a whole Wynter's night in the Snow to wayte for hir, who afterwarde by a sleight and pollicie, caused hir in Iuly, to stand vppon a Tower starke naked amongs Flies and Gnats, and in the Sunne.*

DIUERT we now a little from these fundry haps, to folace our felues wyth a merry deuice, and pleasaunt circumstaunce of a Scholler's loue, and of the wily guily Subtilties of an amorous Wydow of Florence. A Scholler returned from Paris to practife hys knowledge at home in his owne Countrey, learneth a more cunning Lecture of Mistresse Helena, than he did of the subtillest Sorbone Doctor, or other Mathematicall from whence he came. The Scholler as playnely hee had applied his booke, and earnestly harkned his readings, so he simply meant to be a faythfull Louer and deuout requirant to this Iolly dame, that had vowed his Deuotion and promised Pilgrimage to an other Saynct. The Scholler vpon the first view of the Wydowe's wandring Lookes, forgetting Ouide's Lessons of Loue's guiles, pursued his conceipt to the vttermost. The Scholler neuer remembered how many valiaunt, wise and learned men, wanton Women had seduced and deceyed. Hee had forgot how Catullus was beguiled by Lesbia, Tibullus by Delia, Propertius by Cynthia, Nafso by Corinna, Demetrius by Lamia, Timotheus by Phryne, Philip by a Greeke mayden, Alexander by Thays, Hanniball by Campania, Cæsar by Cleopatra, Pompeius by Flora, Pericles by Aspaga, Pfammiticus the king of Ægypt by Rhodope, and diuers other very famous by Women of that stampe. Hee had not ben wel trayned in holy writ, or heard of Samfon's Dalida, or of Salomon's Concubins, but like a playne dealinge man, beleued what she promised, followed what she bad him, waited whiles she mocked him, attended till shee laughed him to scorn. And yet for all these Iolly pastimes inuented by this Widdow, to deceyue the poore Scholler, she scaped not free from his Logike rules, not faife from his Philosophy. He was forced

to turne ouer Aristotle, to reuolue his Porphyrie, and to gather his Wits about hym to requite this louing Peate, that had so charitably delt with him. He willingly ferched ouer Ptolome, perused Albumazar, made haste to Haly, yea and for a shift besturred him in Erra Pater, for matching two contrary Elements. For colde in Christmaffe holy dayes, and Frost at Twelvtide, shewed no more force on this poore learned Scholler, than the Sunne's heate in the Feries of Iuly, Gnats, Flyes, and Waspes, at Noone dayes in Sommer vpon the naked tender Corpse of this fayre Wyddow. The Scholler stode belowe in a Court, benoommed for colde, the Wyddowe preached a losfe in the top of a Tower, and fayne would haue had water to coole hir extreme heate. The Scholler in his Shyrt be-decked wyth his demiffaries. The Wyddow so Naked as hir Graund-mother Eue, wythout vesture to shroud hir. The Wyddow by magike arte what so euer it cost, would fayne haue recouered hir lost Louer. The Scholler well espying his aduantage when hee was asked councell, so Incharmed hir with his Sillogifmes, as he made hir to mount a Tower, to curre the time that euer she knew him or hir Louer. So the Wyddow not well beaten in causes of Schoole, was whipt with the Rod, wherewith shee scoured other. Alas good Woman, had she known that olde malice had not bene forgotten, she woulde not haue trusted, and lesse committed hir selfe to the Circle of his Enchantments. If women wist what dealings are wyth men of great reading, they would amongs one hundred other, not deale wyth one of thee meanest of those that be Bookish. One Girolamo Rufcelli, a learned Italian making prety notes for the better elucidation of the Italian Decamerone of Boccaccio, iudgeth Boccaccio himselfe to be this scholler, whom by an other name he termeth to be Rinieri. But whatsoeuer that Scholler was, he was truely to extreme in reueng, and therein could vse no meane. For hee neuer left the poore feeble soule, for all hir curteous Words and gentle Supplication, vntill the Skin of hir flesh was Parched with the scalding Sunne beames. And not contented with that, delt his Almofe also to hir Mayde, by sending hir to help hir Mistresse, where also she brake hir Legge. Yet Phileno was more pityfull ouer the 3 nymphes and fayre Goddes of Bologna, whose Hyftory you may reade in the

49 Nouell of my former Tome. He fared not so roughly with those, as Rinieri did with thys, that fought but to gayne what she had lost. Well, how so euer it was, and what differency betweene eyther of theym, this Hystory ensuinge, more aptly shall gieue to vnderstande. Not long sithens, there was in Florence, a young Gentlewoman of worshipfull parentage, fayre and comely of personage, of courage stout, and abounding in goods of Fortune (called Helena,) who being a widow, determined not to mary agayne, bicause she was in loue with a yong man that was not voyde of Nature's good gifts, whom for hir owne Tooth, aboue other shee had specially chofen. In whom (setting aside all other care) many tymes (by meanes of one of hir maydes which she trusted best) she had great pleasure and delight. It chaunced about the same time that a yong Gentleman of that Citty called Rinieri, hauinge a great time studied at Paris, returned to Florence, not to sell his Science by retayle, as many doe, but to knowe the reasons of things, and the causes thereof, which is a speciall good exercise for a Gentleman. And being there honoured and greatly esteemed of all men, aswell for his curteous behauiour, as also for his knowledge, he liued like a good Cittizen. But it is commonly seene, they which haue best vnderstandinge and knowledge, are soonest tangled in Loue: euen so it hapned with this Rinieri, who repayringe one day for his paffetime to a Feaste, this Madame Helena clothed al in blacke, (after the manner of Widowes) was there also, and seemed in his eyes so beautifull and well faouored, as any woman euer he saw, and thought that hee might bee accounted happy, to whom God did shewe so much faouore, as to suffer him to be cleped betweene hir Armes: and beholdinge her diuers tymes and knowing that the greatest and dearest things cannot be gotten with out labour, he determined to use all his endeouour and care in pleasing of hir, that thereby he might obtayne hir loue, and so enioy hir. The yong Gentlewoman not very bashfull, conceyuing greater opinion of hir selfe, than was needefull, not castinge hir Eyes towards the Ground, but rolling them artificially on euery side, and by and by perceyuing much gazing to be vpon hir, espied Rinieri earnestly beholding hir, and sayd, smiling to hir selfe: "I thinke that I haue not this day lost my



time in comming hither, for if I bee not deceyued, I shall catch a Pigeon by the Nose." And beginning certayne times stedfastly to looke vpon him, she forced hir selfe so much as she could, to feeme very earnestly to beholde him. And on the other part thinking, that the more pleasaunt and amorous she shewed hirselfe to be, the more hir beauty should be esteemed, chiefly of him whom specially shee was disposed to loue. The wife Scholler giuing ouer his Philofophy, bent all his endeouour here vnto, and thinking to be hir seruauant, learned where she dwelt, and began to passe before hir house under pretence of some other occasion: whereat the Gentlewoman reioysed for the causes before sayde, fayning an earnest desire to looke vpon him. Wherefore the Scholler hauing found a certayne meane to be acquainted wyth hir Mayde discovered his loue: Praying her to deale so with hir mistresse, as he might haue hir fauor. The maide promised him very louingly incontinently reporting the same to hir mistresse, who with the greatest Scoffes in the Worlde, gaue ear thereunto and sayd: "Seeft thou not from whence this Goodfellowe is come to lose al his knowledge and doctrine that he hath brought vs from Paris. Now let vs deuise therefore how he may bee handled for going about to seeke that, which he is not like to obtaine. Thou shalt fay vnto him, when he speaketh to thee agayne, that I loue him better than he loueth me, but it behooueth me to saue mine honoure, and to keepe my good name and estimation amongs other Women." Whych thinge, if he be so wise (as hee seemeth) hee ought to Esteeme and Regarde. "Ah, poore Wench, she knoweth not wel, what it is to mingle Hufwiery with learning, or to intermeddle distaues with bookes. Now the mayde when she had founde the Scholler, tolde him as hir mistresse had commaunded: whereof the Scholler was so glad, as he with greater endeour proceded in his enterprife, and began to write Letters to the Gentlewoman, which were not refused, although he could receyue no aunsweres that pleased him, but sutch as were done openly. And in this sorte the Gentlewoman long time fed him with delays. In the ende she discovered all this new loue vnto hir frend, who was attached with sutch an Aking Disease in his heade, as the same was Fraught with the Reume of Iealousie:

wherefore she to shewe hir selfe to be suspected without cause (very carefull for the Scholler) sent hir mayde to tell him, that she had no conuenient time to doe the thinge that should please him, fithens he was first assured of hir loue, but hoped the next Christ-masse holly dayes to be at his commaundement: wherefore if he would vouchsafe to come the night following the first holly day, into the Court of hir house, she would wayte there for his cominge. The Scholler the best contented man in the Worlde fayled not at the time appoynted, to go to the Gentlewoman's house: where being placed by the Mayde in a base Court, and shut fast within the same, he attended for hir, who Suppinge with hir friende that night, very pleasauntly recited vnto him all that she had determined then to doe, saying: "Thou mayst see now what loue I do beare vnto him, of whom thou hast foolishly conceyued thys Iealousie. To which woordes hir Freende gaue eare with great delectation, desiringe to see the effect of that, whereof she gaue him to vnderstand by wordes." Now as it chanced the day before the Snowe fell downe so thicke from aboue, as it couered the Earth, by which meanes the Scholler within a very little space after his arriual, began to be very colde: howbeit hopinge to receyue recompence, he suffred it patiently. The Gentlewoman a little while after, sayd vnto hir Freende: "I pray thee let vs goe into my chumbe, where at a little Window we may looke out, and see what he doth that maketh thee so Iealous, and herken what aunswere he will make to my Mayde, whom of purpose I wyll send forth to speake vnto him." When she had so sayde, they went to the Window, where they seeinge the Scholler (they not seene of hym,) heard the Mayde speake these wordes: "Rinieri, my Mystrisse is the angriest Woman in the World, for that as yet she cannot come vnto thee. But the cause is, that one of hir Brethren is come to visite hir this Euening, and hath made a long discourse of talke vnto hir, and afterwardes bad himselfe to Supper, and as yet is not departed, but I thinke hee will not tary longe, and then immediately she will come. In the meane tyme she prayeth thee to take a little payne." The Scholler beleeuing this to be true, sayde vnto hir: "Require your Mistresse to take no care for mee till hir leasure may serue: But yet entreat hir to make

fo much haft as ſhe can.” The Mayde returned and went to Bed, and the Dame of the houſe ſayd then vnto hir frend: “ Now fir, what ſay you to this? Doe you thincke that if I loued him, as you myſtruſt, that I would ſuffer him to tarry beneath in this greate colde to coole himſelfe?” And hauing ſayd ſo, ſhe went to Bed with hir frende, who then was partly ſatiſfied, and all the night they continued in greate pleaſure and ſolace, laughing, and mocking the miſerable Scholler that walked vp and downe the Court to chafe himſelfe, not knowing where to fit, or which way to auoyde the colde, and curſſed the long taryinge, of his miſtreſſe Brother, hoping at euery noyſe he heard, that ſhe had come to open the dore to let him in, but his hope was in vayne. Now ſhe hauinge ſported hir ſelfe almoſt till midnight, ſayd vnto hir frend: “ How think you (fir) by our Scholler, whether iudge you is greater, his Wyſedome, or the loue that I beare vnto him? The colde that I make him to ſuffer, will extinguiſh the heate of ſuſpition which yee conceyued of my wordes the other day.” “ Yee ſay true,” (ſayd hir frend,) “ and I do affure you, that like as you are my delight, my reſt, my comfort, and all my hope, euen ſo I am yours, and ſhalbe during life.” For the confirmation of which renewed amity, they ſpared no delights which the louing Goddeſſe doeth vſe to ſerue and imploy vpon her ſeruaunts and ſuters. And after they had talked a certayne time, ſhe ſayd vnto him: “ For God’s ſake (fir) let vs riſe a little, to ſee if the glowing fire which this my new louer hath dayly written vnto me, to burn in him, bee quenched or not.” And ryſing out of their Beds, they went to a little Window and looking downe into the Courte, they ſaw the Scholler dauncing vpon the Snow, whereunto his ſhiuering teeth were ſo good Inſtruments, as he ſeemed the trimmeſt Dauncer that euer trode a Cinquepace after futch Muſicke, being forced thereunto through the great colde which he ſuffered. And then ſhe ſayde vnto him: “ What ſay you to this my frende, do you not ſee how cunninge I am to make men daunce without Taber, or Pipe?” “ Yes in deede,” (ſayd hir Louer) “ yee be an excellent Muſitian.” “ Then ” (quod ſhee) “ let vs go downe to the dore, and I will ſpeake vnto him, but in any Wife ſay you nothing, and we ſhal heare what reaſons and arguments he will frame to mooue me to compaſſion, and

perchance shall haue no little pastime to behold him." Whereupon they went downe softly to the dore, and there without opening the same, shee with a soft voyce out at a little whole, called the Scholler vnto hir. Which hee hearinge, began to prayse God and thancke hym a thousande times, beleeuing verily that he should then be let in, and approching the dore, said: "I am heere mine (owne sweete heart) open the dore for God's sake, for I am like to die for Cold." Whom in mocking wise she answered: "Can you make me beleue (M. Scholler) that you are so tender, or that the colde is so great as you affirme, for a little Snow newly falne downe? There be at Paris farre greater Snowes than these be, but to tell you the troth, you cannot come in yet, for my Brother (the deuell take him) came yesternight to supper, and is not yet departed, but by and by hee will be gon, and then you shall obtayne the effect of your desire, assuring you, that with much a doe I haue stolne away from hym, to come hither for your comfort, praying you not to thincke it longe." "Madame" sayd the Scholler, "I beseech you for God's sake to open the dore, that I may stand in couert from the Snow, which within this houre hath fallen in great aboundaunce, and doth yet continue: and there I will attend your pleasure." "Alas sweet Friend" (sayd she) "the dore maketh futch a noyse when it is opened, that it will easily be heard of my brother, but I will pray him to depart, that I may quicklye returne agayne to open the same." "Goe your way then" (sayd the Scholler) "and I pray you cause a great fire to be made, that I may warme mee when I come in, for I can scarce feele my selfe for colde." "Why, it is not possible" (quod the Woman) "if it be true that you wholly burne in loue for me, as by your fundry Letters written, it appeareth, but now I perceyue that you mocke me, and therefore tary there still on God's name." Hir frende which heard all this, and tooke pleasure in those wordes, went agayne to Bed with hir, into whose eyes no slepe that night coulde enter for the pleasure and sport they had with the poore Scholler. The vnhappy wretched Scholler whose teeth chattered for colde, faring like a Storke in colde nights, perceyuing himselfe to be mocked, assayed to open the dore, or if he might goe out by some other way: and seeing it impossible, stalking vp and downe like a Lyon, cursed

the nature of the time, the wickednesse of the woman, the length of the Night, and the Folly and simplicitie of himselfe: and conceyuing great rage, and despight agaynst hir, turned sodaynely the long and feruent loue that he bare hir, into despight and cruell hatred, deuising many and diuers meanes to bee reuenged, whych he then farre more desired, than hee did in the beginninge to lye with his Widow. After that longe and tedious night, day approached, and the dawning thereof began to appeare: wherefore the mayde instructed by hir mistresse, went downe into the court, and seemyng to haue pity vpon the Scholler, sayd vnto hym: "The Diuell take hym that euer he came hyther this nyghte, for hee hath bothe let vs of sleepe, and hath made you to be frozen for colde, but take it paciently for this tyme, some other Nyght must be appointed. For I know well that neuer thyng coulde chaunce more displeasantly to my Mistresse than this." But the Scholler full of dydayne, lyke a wyfe man which knew well that threats and menacyng words, were weapons without hands to the threatned, retayned in hys Stomacke that whych intemperate wyll would haue broken forth, and wyth so quiet Woordes as hee coulde, not shewynge hymselfe to bee angry, sayd: "In deede I haue suffred the worste Nyghte that euer I dyd, but I knowe the same was not throughe your mistresse fault, bicause shee hauing pitye vpon me, and as you say, that which cannot be to Night, may be done another time, commend me then vnto hir, and farewell." And thus the poore Scholler stiffe for colde, so well as hec coulde, retourned home to his house, where for the extremitye of the tyme and lacke of sleepe beyng almost deade, he threwe hymselfe vpon his bed, and when he awaked, his Armes and Legges had no feeling. Wherefore he sent for Physitions and tolde them of the colde he had taken, who incontinently prouided for his health: and yet for al their best and spedy remedies, they could scarce recouer his Iointes and Sinewes, wherein they did what they could: and had it not bene that he was yong, and the Sommer approaching, it had ben to much for him to haue endured. But after he was come to Healthe, and grewe to be lusty, secrete Malyce still resting in his breaſte, hee thought vpon reuenge. And it chaunced in a lytle tyme after, that Fortune prepared a new accident to the

scholler to satisfie his desire, bycause the young man which was beloued of the Gentlewoman, not caring any longer for hir, fel in loue with an other, and gaue ouer the solace and pleasure he was wont to doe to mistresse Helena, for which despite she consumed herself in wepings and lamentations. But hir maid hauing pity vpon hir mistresse sorrowes, knowing no meanes to remoue the melancoly which she conceiued for the losse of hir friend, and feing the scholler daily passe by accordinge to his common Cuf-tome, conceiued a foolish beliefe that hir mistresse friend might be brought to loue hir agayne, and wholly recouered, by some charme or other sleight of Necromancy, to bee wrought and brought to passe by the Scholler. Which deuise she tolde vnto hir mistresse, and she vndiscretely (and without due consideration that if the scholler had any knowledge in that science, he would helpe himselfe) gaue credite to the words of hir mayde, and by and by sayd vnto hir, that shee was able to bring it to passe, if he would take it in hande, and therewithall promised assuredly, that for recompense he should vse hir at his pleasure. The mayde diligently tolde the Scholler hereof, who very ioyfull for those newes, sayd vnto himselfe: "O God, prayd he thy name, for now the time is come, that by thy helpe I shall requite the iniuries done vnto me by this wicked Woman, and be recompensed of the great loue that I bare vnto hir:" And aunswered the mayd: "Go tell thy mistresse that for this matter shee neede to take no care, for if hir frend were in India, I can presently force him to come hither, and aske hir forgiuenesse of the fault he hath committed agaynst hir. And the maner, and way how to vse hir selfe in this behalfe, I will gieue hir to vnderstand when it shal please hir to appoint me: and fayle not to tell hir what I say, comforting hir in my behalfe." The mayde caried the aunswere, and it was concluded, that they should talke more hereof at the Church of S. Lucie, whither being come, and reasoning together alone, not remembring that she had brought the Scholler almost to the poynct of death, she reueyled vnto him all the whole matter, and the thing which he desired, praying him instantly to helpe hir, to whome the scholler sayd: "True it is lady, that amongs other things which I learned at Paris, the arte of Necromancie, (whereof

I haue very great skill,) is one: But bycause it is much displea-  
 faunt to God, I haue made an othe neuer to vse it, eyther for my  
 selfe, or for any other: howbeit the loue which I beare you, is  
 of futch force, as I cannot deny you any request, yea and if I  
 should be damned amongs all the deuils in hell, I am ready to  
 performe your pleasure. But I tell you before, that it is a harder  
 matter to be done, than paraduventure you belieue, and specially  
 where a Woman shall prouoke a Man to loue, or a Man the Woman,  
 bycause it can not be done by the propre Person, whome it doth  
 touche, and therefore it is meete, whatfoeuer is done, in any wyfe  
 not to be affrayde, for that the coniuration must bee made in the  
 Nyght, and in a folytarie place wythout Companye: which thing  
 I know not how you shal bee disposed to doe." To whom the  
 Woman more amorous than wife, aunswered: "Loue prycketh  
 mee in futch wife, as there is nothyng but I dare attempt, to haue  
 him againe, that causelesse hath forsaken me. But tel me I be-  
 seech you wherein it behoueth that I be so bold and hardy." The  
 Scholer (subtil enough) said: "I muste of necessity make an image  
 of brasse, in the name of him that you desire to haue, which being  
 sent vnto you you must, when the Mone is at hir ful, bath your self  
 stark naked in a running riuier at the first houre of sleepe vii.  
 times with the same image: and afterwards beyng stil naked, you  
 must go vp into some tree or house vnhabited, and turning your  
 selfe towards the North side thereof wyth the image in your hand  
 you shal say vii. times certain words, that I wil giue you in writ-  
 ing, which when you haue done, two damfels shal come vnto you,  
 the fairest that euer you saw, and they shall salute you, humbly  
 demaundyng what your pleasure is to commaund them: to whome  
 you shal willingly declare in good order what you desire: and take  
 hede aboue al things, that you name not one for an other: and  
 when they begonne, you may descend downe to the place where  
 you left your Apparel, and array your selfe agayne, and afterwarde  
 retourne home vnto your house, and assure your self, that before  
 the mid of the nexte Nyghte folowing, your Fryend shall come vnto  
 you weepyng, and crying Mercye and forgyueneffe at youre  
 Handes. And know yee, that from that tyme forth, he wil neuer  
 forsake you for any other." The gentlewoman hearing those

words, gaue great credytc thervnto: and thought that already she helde hir fryend betweene hir Armes, and very ioyfull fayd: "Doubt not fir, but I wyll accomplyfh al that you haue inioyned me: and I haue the meetest place in the World to doe it: for vpon the valley of Arno, very neare the Ryuer syde I haue a Manor houfe, secretly to woorke any attempt that I list: and now it is the moneth of Iuly, in which tyme bathing is most pleasaunt. And also I remembre that not far from the Ryuer, there is a lyttle Toure vnhabited, into which one can scarce get vp, but by a certain Ladder made of chesnut tree, which is already there, where-uppon the shepherds do sometime ascende to the turrasse of the same Toure, to looke for their cattell when they be gone astray: and the place is very solitarie out of the way. Into that Toure wyll I goe vp, and trust to execute what you haue requyred me." The Scholler which knew very well both the village whereof she spake, and also the Toure, right glad for that he was assured of his purpose, sayde: "Madame, I was neuer there, ne yet do knowe the village, nor the Toure, but if it bee as you saye, it is not possible to finde anye better place in the Worlde: wherefore when the tyme is come, I wyll fend you the Image, and the prayer. But I heartily beseech you, when you haue obtained your desire, and do perceyue that I haue well serued your turne, to haue me in remembraunce, and to keepe your promyse." Which the Gentlewoman assured hym to doe withoute fayle, and taking hir leaue of him, she retired home to hir houfe. The Scholer ioyfull for that his deuise should in deede come to passe, caused an image to be made with certaine Characters, and wrote a tale of a Tubbe in stede of the prayer. And when hee sawe tyme he sent them to the Gentlewoman, aduertising hir that the Nyght folowyng, she must doe the thing he had appoynted hir. Then to procede in his enterprife, he and his man went secretly to one of his fryends houfes that dwelte harde by the towne. The Woman on the other side, and hir Mayde repaired to hir place: where when it was nyght, makyng as though she would go slepe, she sent hir Mayde to Bed: afterwards about ten of the Clocke she conueyed hirself very softly out of hir lodgyng, and repayed neare to the Towne vpon the riuer of Arno, and lookyng aboute hir, not seeing or perceiu-



ing any man, she vnclotted hir selfe, and hidde hir apparell vnder a bush of Thornes, and then bathed hir selfe vii. tymes with the Image, and afterwarde starke naked, holding the same in her hand, she went towards the Toure. The Scholler at the beginning of the Nyghte beyng hydden wyth hys seruauant amongs the willowes and other trees neere the Toure, saw all the aforesayde thinges, and hir also passing naked by him, (the whiteneffe of whose body surpaffed as he thought, the darkneffe of the night, so farre as blacke exceedeth white) who afterwarde behelde hir Stomack, and the other partes of hir body, which seemed unto him to be very delectable. And remembringe what would shortly come to passe, he had some pittie vpon hir, on the other side, the temptation of the Fleth sodaynely assayed hym, prouoking him to issue forth of the secret corner, to Surprize hir, and to take his pleasure vpon hir. But calling to hys remembraunce what shee was, and what great wrong hee had sustayned, his mallice began to kindle agayne, and did remoue his pittie, and lust, continuing still stedfast in his determination, suffring her to passe hir Iorney. The Wydow being vpon the Toure, and turning hir face towards the North, began to say the wordes which the Scholler had giuen hir. Within a while after the Scholler entred in very softly, and tooke away the ladder whereupon she got vp, and stood still to heare what she did say and doe. Who hauing vii. times recited hir prayer, attended the comming of the two damfels: for whom she wayted so long in vayne, and therewithall began to be extremely colde, and perceyued the dawning of the day appeare. Wherefore taking great displeasure that it came not to passe as the Scholler had tolde hir, she spake theese wordes to hir selfe: "I doubt much least this Scholler will rewarde mee with sutch another night, as wherein once I made him to wayte: but if he haue done it for that respect, he is not well reuenged, for the nights now want the third part of the length of those, then, besides the colde that he indured, which was of greater extremity." And that the day might not discouer hir, she woulde haue gone downe from the Toure, but she found the Ladder to be taken away. Then as thou the Worlde had molten vnder hir Feete, hir heart began to fayle, and Fayntinge, fell downe vpon the tarrasse of the toure,

and when hir force reuiued agayne, she began pitifully to weepe and complayne. And knowing well that the Scholler had done that deede for reuenge, she grew to be angry wyth hir selfe, for that shee hadde Offended another, and to mutch trusted hym whom she ought (by good reason) to haue accoumpted hir enemy. And after she had remayned a great while in this plight, then looking if there were any way for hir to goe downe, and perceyuinge none, she renued hir weeping, whose minde great care and forrow did pierce saying thus to hir selfe: "O vnhappy wretch, what will thy brethren say, thy Parents, thy Neyghbors, and generally all they of Florence, when they shall vnderstande that thou hast bene found heere naked? Thy honesty which hitherto hath bene neuer flayned, shall now bee blotted with the stayne of shame, yea, and if thou were able to finde (for reamedy hereof) any matter of excuse (such as might be founde) the wicked Scholler (who knoweth all thy doings) will not suffer thee to ly: ah miserable wretch, that in one houre's space, thou hast lost both thy freende and thyne honour. What shall become of thee? Who is able to couer thy shame?" When she had thus complayned hirselfe, hir sorrowe was not so great as shee was like to cast hirselfe headlong downe from the Toure: but the Sunne being already risen, she approached neare one of the corners of the Walle, espying if she coulde see any Boy keeping of cattell, that she might send him for hir Mayde. And it chaunced that the Scholler which lay and slept in couert, awaked, one espying the other, the Scholler saluted hir thus: "Good morow, Lady, be the Damfels yet come?" The Woman seeing, and hearing him, began agayne bitterly to weepe, and prayed him to come vp to the Toure, that she might speake with him. The Scholler was thereunto very agreable, and she lying on hir belly vpon the terrasse of the Touer, discouering nothing but hir head ouer the side of the same, sayd vnto him weeping: "Rinieri, truly, if euer I caused thee to endure an ill Night, thou art now well reuenged on me; for although it be the moneth of Iuly, I thought (because I was naked) that I should haue frozen to death this night for cold, besides my great, and continuall Teares for the offence which I haue done thee, and of my Folly for beleeuing thee,

that maruell it is mine eyes do remayne within my head: And therefore I pray thee, not for the loue of me, whom thou oughtest not to loue, but for thine owne sake which art a gentleman, that the shame and payne which I haue sustayned, may satisfie the offence and wrong I haue committed agaynst thee: and cause mine apparell I beseech thee to be brought vnto me, that I may goe downe from hence, and doe not robbe mee of that, which afterwards thou art not able to restore, which is, myne honor: for if I haue deceyued thee of one night, I can at all times when it shall please thee, render vnto thee for that one, many. Let it suffice thee then with this, and like an honest man content thy selfe by being a little reuenged on me, by making me to know now what it is to hurt another. Do not, I pray thee, practise thy power agaynst a woman: for the Egle hath no fame for conquering of the Doue. Then for the loue of God, and for thine honor sake, haue pittie and remorse vpon me." The Scholler with a cruel heart remembring the iniury that he hath receyued, and seeing hir so to weepe and pray, conceyued at one instant both pleasure and grieffe in his minde: pleasure of the reuenge which he aboue all things desired, and grieffe moued his manhoode to haue compassion vpon the myserable woman. Notwithstanding, pittie not able to ouercome the fury of his reuenge, he aunswered: "Mistresse Helena, if my praiers (which in dede I could not moysten with teares, ne yet sweeten them with sugred woordes, as you doe yours nowe) might haue obtained that night wherein I thought I should haue died for colde in the Court full of snowe, to haue bene conueyed by you into some couert place, an easie matter it had bene for mee at this instant to heare your suite. But if now more than in times past your honor do waxe warme, and that it greueth you to stand starke naked, make your prayers to him, betweene whose Armes you ware not offended to be naked that night, wherein you hearde me trot vp and downe your Courte, my Teeth chattering for cold and marching vpon the Snow: And at his handes seeke releefe, and pray him to bring your Clothes, and fetch a Ladder that you may come downe: Force your selfe to fet your honor's care on him for whom both then, and now besides many other times, you haue not feared to put the same in perill,

Why doe you not cal for him to come and help you? And to whom doth your help better appertayne than vnto him? You are his owne, and what things will he not prouyde in this distresse of yours? Or else what perfon will hee seeke to succour, if not to helpe and succour you? Call him (O foolish woman) and proue if the loue which thou bearest him, and thy wit together with his, be able to deliuer thee from my Folly, where (when both you were togethers) you tooke your Pleasure. And now thou haste Experience wheather my Folly or the Loue which thou diddest beare vnto him, is greatest. And be not now so Lyberall, and Curteous of that which I go not about to seeke: referue thy good Nights to thy beloued freende, if thou chaunce to escape from hence aliue: for from my selfe I cleerely discharge you both. And truly I haue had to much of one: and sufficient it is for mee to bee mocked once. Moreouer by thy crafty talke vttered by subtyll speache, and by thyne vntimely prayse, thou thinkest to force the getting of my good will, and thou callest me Gentleman, valiaunt man, thinkinge thereby to withdrawe my valyaunte minde from punishing of thy wretched body: but thy flatteries shall not yet bleare mine vnderstanding eyes, as once wyth thy vnfathyfull promises thou diddest beguile my ouerweeninge wit. I now to well do know, and thereof thee well assure, that all the time I was a Scholler in Paris, I neuer learned so much as thou in one night diddest teach mee. But put the Case that I were a valiaunt man, yet thou art none of them vpon whom valiaunce ought to shewe his effects: and for the end of sutch tormenting and passing cruell beafts, as thou art, only death is fittest rewarde: for if a Woman made but halfe these playnts, there is no man, but woulde affwage his reuenge. But yet as I am no Eagle,<sup>r</sup> and thou no Done, but a most venomous Serpent, I intend so well as I can to perfecute thee mine auncient enemy, wyth the greatest mallice I can deuise, which I cannot so properly<sup>r</sup> cal reuenge, as I may terme it Correction: for that the reuenge of a matter ought to furmout the Offence, and I will bestow no reuenge on thee: for if I were disposed to apply my mynde therevnto, for respect of thy displeasure done to me, thy Lyfe should not suffice, nor one hundred more like vnto thine: which if I tooke away, I should but rid the Worlde of a most vile,

and wicked woman. And to say the truth, what other art thou then a Deuill accept a little beauty in thy Face, which within few yeares will vanishe and confume: for thou tookest no care to kill, and destroy an honest man (as thou euen now diddest terme me) whose Life, may in tyme to come bee more profitable to the Worlde, than an hundred thousand futch as thyne, so long as the World indureth. I wil teach thee then by the paine thou fuffrest, what is it to mock futch Men as bee of skyll, and what maner of thyng it is to delude and Scorne poore schollers, gyuing thee warning hereby, that thou never fall into futch folly, if thou escapest this. But if thou haue so great a will to come downe as thou sayest thou hast, why doest thou not throwe downe thy selfe headlonge, that by breaking of thy Necke (if it please God) at one instante thou rid thy selfe of the payne, wherein thou sayest thou art, and make mee the best contented man of the Worlde. For this tyme I wyll say no more to thee, but that I haue done enough to make thee clime so high. Learne then now so wel how thou maist get down, as thou didst know how to mock and deceyue me." Whyle the Scholler had preached vnto hir these words, the wretched woman wepte continually, and the time stil did passe away, the Sunne increasing more and more: but when the Scholler held his peace, she replied: "O cruell man, if that curffed nyght was grieuous vnto thee, and my fault appeared great, cannot my youth and Beauty, my Teares and humble Prayers bee able to mitigate thy wrath and to moue thee to pittie: do at least that thou mayst be moued and thy cruell minde appeased for that onely act, let me once again be trusted of thee, and sith I haue manifested al my desire, pardon me for this tyme, sith thou hast sufficiently made me feele the penance of my sinne. For, if I had not reposed my trust in thee, thou hadst not now reuenged thy self on me, which with desire most spytefull thou doest full well declare. Gyue ouer then thine anger, and pardon me henceforth: for I am determined if thou wilt forgeue mee, and cause me to come downe out of this place, to forsake for ever that vnfaithfull Louer, and to receive thee for my only friend and Lord. Moreouer where thou greatly blamest my beauty, esteeming it to be short, and of smal accompt, futch as it is, and the like of other women I know, not

be regarded for other cause but for pastime and pleasure of youthly Men, and therefore not to be contemned: and thou thyself truly art not very old; and albeit that cruelly I am intreated of thee, yet can I not believe that thou wouldst have me so miserably to die, as to cast my selfe down headlong, like one desperate, before thine eyes, whome (except thou were a liar as thou seemest to be now) in time past I did well please and like. Have pitye then upon me, for God's sake, for the Sunne begins to grow exceeding hot, and as the extreame and bitter cold did hurt me the last Night euen so the heat beginneth to molest me." Whereunto the Scholler which kept hir there for the nonce, and for his pleasure, answered: "Mistresse you did not now commit your faith to me for any loue you bare, but to get that again which you had lost, wherfore that deserueth no good turne, but greater pain: and fondlye thou thinkest this to be the onely meanes, whereby I am able to take desired reuenge. For I haue a thousand other wayes and a thousand Trappes haue I layed to tangle thy feete, in makinge thee believe that I dyd loue thee: in such wyse as thou shouldest haue gone no where at any tyme, if thys had not chanced but thou shouldest haue fallen into one of them: and surely thou couldest haue falne into none of them, but would haue bred thee more annoyauce and shame than this (which I chose not for thy ease, but for my greater pleasure.) And besides if all these meanes had fayled me, the pen should not, wherewith I would haue displayed thee in such Colours, as when the simple brute thereof hadde come to thyne eares, thou wouldest haue desired a thousand times a Day, that thou hadst neuer bene born. For the forces of the pen be farre more vehement, than they can esteeme that haue not proued them by experience. I swear vnto thee by God, that I doe reioyse, and so wil to the ende, for this reuenge I take of thee, and so haue I done from the beginning: but if I had with pen painted thy maners to the Worlde, thou shouldest not haue ben so much ashamed of other, as of thy selfe, that rather than thou wouldest haue looked mee in the Face agayne, thou wouldest haue plucked thyne Eyes oute of thy head: and therefore reprove no more the Sea, for beeing increased wyth a litle Brooke. For thy loue, or for that thou wilt be mine own, I

care not, as I haue already told thee, and loue him again if thou canst, so much as thou wilt, to whome for the hatred that I haue borne, I presently bear so much good wyll agayne, and for the pleafure that he hath don thee now. You be amorous and couet the loue of young men, bicaufe you see theyr Colour fomewhat fresh, their beard more black, their bodies well shaped to daunce and runne at Tylt and Ryng, but al these qualities haue they had, that be growne to elder yeares, and they by good experience know what other are yet to learn. Moreouer you deeme them the better horffemen, bicaufe they can iourney more myles a day than those that be of farther yeares. Truely I confesse, that with great paynes they please futch Venerial Gentlewomen as you be, who doe not perceyue (like sauage Beastes) what heapes of euill doe lurke vnder the forme of fayre apparance. Younge men be not content with one Louer, but so many as they behold, they do desire, and of so many they think themselues worthy: wherefore their loue cannot be stable. And that this is true, thou mayest now be thine owne wytnesse. And yong men thynkyng themselues worthy, to be honoured and cherished of theyr Ladies, haue none other glory but to vaunt themselues of those whome they haue enioyed: which fault maketh many to yeld themselues to those that be discrete and wise, and to futch as be no blabbes or Teltales. And where thou sayest that thy loue is knowne to none, but to thy mayde and me, thou art deceiued, if thou beleue the same, for al the inhabitants of the streete wherein thy Louer dwelleth, and the streete also wherein thy house doth stand, talke of nothyng more than of your Loue. But many times in futch cafes, the party whome futch Brute doth touch, is the last that knoweth it. Moreouer, young men do robbe thee, where they of elder yeares do gyue thee. Thou then (which hast made futch choyse), remayne to him whome thou hast chosen, and me (whom thou floutest) gyue leaue to apply to an other: for I haue found a Woman to bee my fryend, which is of an other discretion than thou art, and knoweth me better than thou dost. And that thou mayst in an other world be more certaine of myne Eyes desire, than thou hitherto art, throwe thy selfe downe so soone as thou canst, that thy foule already (as I suppose) receiued betwene the armes of the diuel hym selfe may

fe if mine eyes be troubled or not, to view thee breake thy Necke. But bicaufe I think thou wilt not do me that good turne, I fay if the Sunne begin to warme thee, remember the cold thou madeft me fuffer, which if thou canft mingle with that heat, no doubt thou fhalt feele the fame more temperate." The comfortleffe Woman feeing that the Scholler's words tended but to cruell end, began to weepe and faid: "Now then fith nothing can moue thee to take pity for my fake, at left wife for the loue of hir, whom thou faieft to be of better difcretion than I, take fome compaffion: for hir fake (I fay) whom thou calleft thy friend, pardon mee and bryng hither my clothes that I may put them on, and caufe me if it please thee to come down from hence." Then the Scholler began to laugh, and feing that it was a good while paff III. of the clocke, he answered: "Well go to, for that woman's fake I cannot wel fay nay, or refufe thy request, tel me where thy garments be, and I wyll go feke them, and caufe thee to come downe." She beleuing hym, was fome what comforted, and told hym the place where ſhe had beftowed them. And the Scholler going out of the Toure, commaunded his feruaunt to tarry there, and to take heede that none went in vntil he came againe. Then he departed to one of hys friends houfes, where he wel refreshed himfelfe, and afterwards when he thought time, he layd him downe to flepe. Al that ſpace miſtreſſe Helena whych was ſtyll vpon the Toure, and recomforted with a lyttle fooliſh hope, forrowful beyonde meafure, began to fit downe, ſeeking ſome ſhadowed place to beſtow hir ſelfe, and with bitter thoughts and heauy cheare in good deuotion, wayted for his comming, now muſing, now wepyng, then hopyng, and fodaynely diſpayring the Scholler's retourne wyth hir Clothes: and chaunging from one thought to another, like one that was weary of trauel, and had taken no reſt al the Nyght, ſhe fel into a litle ſlumbre. But the Sun whych was paſſing hote, being aboute noone, glaunced his burning beames vpon hir tender body and bare head, with futch force, as not only it ſinged the fleſh in fight, but alſo did chip and parch the ſame with futch roſting heat, as ſhe which foundly ſlepte, was conſtrayned to wake: and feling that raging warmth, deſirous ſomewhat to remoue hir ſelf, ſhe thought in turning that all hir toſted fleſh had



opened and broken, like vnto a skyn of parchement holden against the fire: besides with payne extream, hir head began to ake, with futch vehemence, as it seemed to be knocked in pieces: and no maruel, for the pament of the Toure was so passing hotte, as neither vpon hir feete, or by other remedy, shee could find place of rest. Wherefore without power to abide in one place, she fil remoued to and fro wepying bitterly. And moreouer, for that no Wynd did blow, the Toure was haunted wyth futch a swarme of Flies, and Gnats, as they lighting vppon hir parched flesh, did so cruelly byte and stinge hir, that euery of them seemed worffe than the prycke of a Nedle, which made hir to bestirre hir hands, incessantly to beate them off cursing still hir selfe, hir Lyfe, hir friend and Scholler. And being thus and with futch pain bitten and afflicted with the vehement heat of the Sun, with the Flies and gnats, hungry, and much more thyrsty, assailed with a thousand grieuous thoughts, she arose vp, and began to loke about hir if she could heare or see any person, purposing whatfoeuer came of it to call for helpe. But hir ill fortune had taken way al this hoped meanes of hir reliefe: for the Husbandmen and other Laborers were al gone out of the fields to shrowd themselues from the heate of the day, sparing their trauail abrode, to thresh their corn and doe other things at home, by reason whereof she neither saw nor hearde any thing, except Butterflies, humble bees, crickets, and the riuer of Arno, which making hir lust to drink of the water quenched hir thirst nothing at al, but rather did augment the same. She sawe besides in many places, woodes, shadows and houses, which lyke-wyfe did breede hir double grief, for desire she had vnto the same. But what shal we speak any more of this vnhappy woman? The Sunne aboue, and the hot Toure paiment below, wyth the bitings of the flies and gnats, had on euery part so dressed hir tender corps, that where before the whiteneffe of hir body did passe the darkeneffe of the Night, the same was become red, al arayed and spotted wyth gore bloud, that to the beholder and viewer of hir state, she seemed the most yll faured thyng of the Worlde: and remayning in thys plyght without hope or councel, she loked rather for death than other comfort. The Scholler after the Clocke had founded three in the afternoon, awaked, and remem-

bring his lady, went to the Toure to see what was become of hir, and sent his man to dinner, that had eaten nothing all that day. The Gentlewoman hearing the Scholler, repayred so feeble and tormented as shee was, vnto the trap doore, and fitting vpon the same, pityfully weeping began to say: "Rinieri, thou art beyonde meafure reuenged on me, for if I made thee freefe all night in mine open Court, thou haste tosted me to day vpon this Toure, nay rather burnt with heate, consumed me: and besides that, to dye and sterue for hunger, and thirst. Wherefore I pray thee for God's sake to come vp, and sith my heart is faynt to kill my selfe, I pray thee heartely speedily to do it. For aboute all things I desire to dy, so great and bitter is the torment which I endure. And if thou wilt not shewe me that fauor, yet caufe a glasse of Water to be brought vnto me, that I may moysten my mouth, sith my teares bee not able to coole the same, so great is the drouth and heate I haue within." Wel knew the Scholler by hir voyce, hir weake estate, and sawe besides the most part of hir body all tosted with the Sunne: by the viewe whereof, and humble sute of hir, he conceiued a little pittie. Notwythstanding he aunswared hir in this wise: "Wicked woman thou shalt not dye with my hands, but of thine owne, if thou desire the same, and so mutch water shalt thou haue of me for coolinge of thine heate, as dampned Diues had in hell at Lazarus handes, when he lifted up his cry to Abraham, holdinge that saued wighte within his blessed bosome, or as I had fire of thee for easing of my colde. The greater is my grieffe that the vehemence of my colde must be cured with the heate of futch a stincking carion beast, and thy heate healed with the coldnesse of most Soote and sauerous Water distilled from the orient Rose. And where I was in daunger to loofe my Limmes, and life, thou wilt renew thy Beauty like the Serpent that casteth his Skin once a yeare." "Oh myserable wretch" (sayd the woman) "God gieue him futch Beauty gotten in this sorte, that wifeth me futch euill. But (thou more cruell than any other beast) what heart haste thou, thus like a Tyraunte to deale with me? What more grieuous payne coulde I endure of thee, or of any other, than I do, if I had killed, and done to death thy parents or whole race of thy stocke and kin with most cruel torments?"

Truely I know not what greater tyranny coulde be vsed agaynst a Trayter that had sacked or put a whole Citty to the sword, than that thou haste done to me, to make my flesh to bee the foode and rost meate of the Sunne, and the baite for licorous flies, not vouchsafing to reach hither a simple glasse of Water whych would haue bene graunted to the condempned Theefe, and Manqueller, when they be haled forth to hanging, yea wine most commonly, if they aske the same. Now for that I see thee still remayne in obstinate mind, and that my passion can nothinge mooue thee, I wyll prepare paciently to receiue my death, that God may haue mercy on my soule, whom I humbly beseech with his righteous eyes to beholde that cruell act of thyne." And with those wordes, she approched with payne to the middle of the terrasse, despayring to escape that burning heate, and not onely once, but a thousande times, (besides hir other sorowes) she thought to sowne for thirst, and bitterly wept without ceasing, complayning hir mishap. But being almost night, the Scholler thought hee had done inough, wherefore he tooke hir clothes, and wrapping the same within his seruauant's cloke, he went home to the Gentlewoman's house where he founde before the gate, hir mayde fitting al sad and heauy, of whom he asked where hir mistresse was. "Syr," (sayd she) "I cannot tell, I thought this morning to finde hir a Bed, where I left hir yester night, but I cannot finde hir there, nor in any other place, ne yet can tell wheather to goe seeke hir, which maketh my hearte to throb some misfortune chaunced vnto hir. But (sir quod she) cannot you tell where she is?" The Scholler answered: "I would thou haddest bene with hir in the place where I left hir, that I might haue bene reuenged on thee so well, as I am of hir. But beleue assuredly, that thou shalt not escape my handes vntill I pay thee thy desert, to the intent hereafter in mocking other, thou mayst haue cause to remember me." When hee had sayde so, hee willed his man to giue the mayde hir Mistresse Clothes, and then did bidde hir seeke hir out if shee would. The Seruauante did his Mayster's commaundment, and the Mayde hauinge receyued them, knewe them by and by, and markinge well the scholler's wordes, she doubted least hee had slayne hir Mistresse, and mutch adoe she had to refrayne from crying out. And the Scholler being gone,

she tooke hir Mistresse Garments, and ran vnto the Toure. That day by hap, one of the Gentlewoman's labouring Men had two of his hogges runne a stray, and as he went to seeke them (a little while after the Scholler's departure) he approached neare the Toure looking round about if he might see them. In the busie searche of whom hee heard the miserable playnt that the vnhappy Woman made, wherefore so loude as he coulde, he cried out: "Who weepeth there aboue?" The Woman knew the voice of hir man, and calling him by his name, shee sayde vnto him: "Goe home I pray thee to call my mayde and cause her to come vp hither vnto me." The fellow knowing his mistresse voice sayd vnto hir: "What Dame, who hath borne you vp so hygh? Your mayde hath sought you al this day, and who would haue thought to finde you there?" He then taking the staues of the Ladder, did set it vp against the Toure as it ought to be, and bounde the steppes that were wanting, with fastenings of Wyllowe twigges, and futch like pliant stuffe as he could finde. And at that instant the mayde came thither, who so soone as she was entred the Toure, not able to forbear hir voyce, beating hir hands, shee began to crye: "Alas sweete Mistresse where be you?" She hearing the voyce of hir Mayde aunswered so well as shee could: "Ah (sweete Wench) I am heere aboue, cry no more, but bring me hither my clothes." When the mayde heard hir speake, by and by for ioy, in haste she mounted vp the Ladder, which the Labourer had made ready, and with his helpe gat vp to the Terrasse of the Toure, and seeing hir Mystresse resembling not a humayne body but rather a wodden Faggot halfe consumed with fire, all weary and withered, lying a long starke naked vpon the Grounde, she began with hir Nayles to wreke the grieffe vpon hir Face, and wept ouer hir with futch vehemency as if she had beene deade. But hir Dame prayed hir for God's sake to holde hir peace, and to help hir to make hir ready: and vnderstanding by hir, that no man knewe where she was become, except they which caried home hir clothes, and the Labourer that was present there, shee was somewhat recomforted, and prayed them for God's sake to say nothing of that chauce to any person. The Laborer after mutch talke, and request to his Mistresse, to be of good cheere, when shee was ryfen vp, caried

hir downe vpon his Necke, for that she was not able to goe so farre, as out of the Toure. The poore Mayde which came behinde, in goinge downe the Ladder without takinge heede, hir foote fayled, and fallinge downe to the Grounde, shee brake hir Thigh, for grieffe whereof she roared, and cryed out lyke a Lyon. Wherefore the Labourer hauing placed his Dame vpon a greene banke, went to see what hurt the Mayde had taken, and perceyued that she had broken hir Thigh, he caried hir likewife vnto that banke, and placed hir besides hir mistresse, who seeinge one mischiefe vpon another to chaunce, and that she of whom she hoped for greater help, than of any other, had broken hir Thigh, sorrowfull beyonde measure, renewed hir cry so miserably, as not onely the Labourer was not able to comforte hir, but he himself began to weepe for company. The Sunne hauinge trauayled into hys Westerne course, and taking his farewell by fettling himselfe to rest, was at the poynt of goinge downe. And the poore desolate woman vnwilling to be benighted, went home to the Labourer's house, where taking two of his Brothers, and his Wyfe, returned to fetch the Mayde, and caried hir home in a Chayre. Then cheering vp hys Dame with a little fresh water, and many fayre Wordes, he caried hir vpon his Necke into a Chaumber, afterwarde his Wyfe made hir warm Drinks and Meates, and putting of hir clothes, layd hir in hir Bed, and tooke order that the mistresse and maide that night were caried to Florence, where the Mistresse full of lies, deuised a Tale all out of order of that which chaunced to hir, and hir Mayde, making hir Brethren, hir Sisters, and other hir neighbours beleue, that by flushe of lightning, and euill Sprites, hir face and body were Blistered, and the Mayde stroken vnder the Arse bone with a Thunderbolt. Then Phyfitians were sent for, who not without greate grieffe, and payne to the Woman (which many tymes left hir Skin sticking to the Sheets) cured hir cruell Feuer, and other hir diseases, and lykewife the mayde of hir Thigh: which caused the Gentlewoman to forget hir Louer, and from that time forth wifely did beware and take heede whom she did mocke, and where she did bestow hir loue. And the Scholler knowing that the Mayde had broken hir Thigh, thought himselfe sufficiently reuenged, ioyfully passing by them both many times in silence.

Beholde the reward of a foolish wanton widow for hir Mockes and Flouts, thinking that no greate care or more prouident heede ought to be taken in iesting with a Scholler, than with any other common perfon, nor well remembering how they doe know (not all, I say, but the greateft parte) where the Diuell holdeth his Tayle : and therefore take heede good Wyues, and Wydowes, how you giue your felues to mockes and daliaunce, fpecially of Schollers. But nowe turne we to another Wyddow that was no amorous Dame but a fober Matrone, a motherly Gentlewoman, that by pittie, and Money Redeemed, and Raunfomed a King's Sonne out of myferable Captiuity, that was vtterly abandoned of all his Friendes. The manner and meanes how the Nouell enfuing fhall  
fhewe.

## THE THIRTY-SECOND NOUELL.

*A Gentlewoman and Wydow called Camiola of hir owne minde Raunfomed Roland the Kyng's Sonne of Sicilia, of purpose to haue him to hir Husband, who when he was redeemed unkindly denied hir, agaynst whom very Eloquently she Inueyed, and although the Law proued him to be hir Husband, yet for his unkindnes, shee vtterly refused him.*

BVSA a Gentlewoman of Apulia, maynetayned ten Thoufande Romaine fouldiers within the walles of Cannas, that were the remaunte of the army after the ouerthrow there: and yet hir State of Rycheffe was faulfe and nothyng dimynished, and left therby a worthy Testimony of Lyberality as Valerius Maximus affirmeth. If this worthy woman Busa for Liberality is commended by aun-cient Authors: if she deserue a Monument amongs famous Wryters for that splendent vertue which so brightly blasoneth the Heroicall natures of Noble dames, then may I bee so bolde amonges these Nouels to bring in (as it were by the hand) a Wyddow of Meffina, that was a Gentlewoman borne, adorned with passing beauty and vertues. Amonges the rancke of which hir comely Qualities, the vertue of Liberality glistered lyke the morninge Starre after the Night hath cast of his darke and Cloudy Mantell. This Gentlewoman remayning in Wyddowes state, and hearing tell that one of the Sonnes of Federicke, and Brother to Peter that was then King of the sayd Ilande called Rolande, was caried Pryfoner to Naples, and there kept in miserable Captiuity, and not like to bee redeemed by his Brother for a displeasure conceyued, nor by any other, pitying the state of the young Gentleman, and moued by hir gentle, and couragious disposition, and specially with the vertue of liberality, raunfomed the sayd Rolande, and craued no other interest or vfury for the same, but him to husband, that ought upon his knees to haue made sute to be hir slaue and seruante for respect of his miserable state of Imprisonment. An affiaunce betweene them was concluded, and he redeemed, and when hee was returned, hee falsed his former fayth, and cared not for hir:

for which vnkinde part, she before his Friends inueyeth agaynst that ingratitude, and vtterly forfaketh him, when (fore ashamed) he would very fayne haue recouered hir good wil. But she like a wife gentlewoman well waying his inconstant mynde before mariage, lusted not to taste or put in prooffe the fruiçts and successe thereof. The intire Discourfe of whom you shall briefly and presently vnderftand. Camiola a widow of the City of Siena, the Daughter of a gentle Knight called Signor Lorenzo Toringo, was a Woman of great renoume and fame for hir beauty liberality and shamefastnesse, and led a life in Maffina, (an auncient City of Sicile) no lesse commendable than famous, in the company of hir parentes, contenting hirself wyth one only Hufbande, while she liued, which was in the tyme when Federick the thirde was Kyng of that Isle: And after their death she was an heyre of very great wealth and ritcheffe, which were alwayes by hir conserued and kept in maruellous honest fort. Nowe it chaunced that after the death of Federick, Peter succeedinge by his Commaundement, a great Army by Sea was equipped from Messina, vnder the conduct of Iohn Countee of Chiaramonte, (the most Renoumed in those dayes in Feats of Warre,) for to ayde the people of Lippary, which were so strongly and earnestly besieged, as they were almost all dead and consumed for hunger. In this Army, ouer and besides those that were in pay, many Barons and Gentlemen willingly went vpon their own proper costes, and charges, as well by Sea as Lande, onely for fame, and to be renoumed in armes. This Castell of Lippari was assaulted by Godefrey of Squilatio a valiaunt Man, and at that time Admiral to Robert Kyng of Ierusalem and Sicile: Which Godefrey by long siege and assault, had so famished the people within, as dayly he hoped they would furrender. But hauing aduertisement (by certayne Brigandens which he had sent abroade to scour the Seas) that the Enimies Army (which was farre greater than his) was at hand, after that he had assembled all his Nauy together in one sure place, he expected the euent of Fortune. The Enimies so soone as they were seased and possessed of the place, without any resistaunce of the places abandoned by Godefrey, caried into the Citty at their pleasure all their victualles, which they brought wyth them, for which good happe and



chance the sayde Countee Iohn being very much encouraged and puffed vp wyth pryde, offred Battell to Godefrey. Wherefore he not refusing the same, being a man of great corage, in the Night time fortified his Army with Boordes, Timber, and other Ram-piers, and hauing put his Nauy in good order, he encouraged his Men to fight, and to doe valiauntly the next day, which done, hee caused the Ankers to bee wayed, and gieuing the signe, tourned the prowes of hys Shyppes agaynst the Sicilians Army, but Countee Iohn who thought that Godefrey would not fight, and durst not once looke vpon the great army of the Sicilians, did not put his Fleete in order to fight, but rather in readinesse to pursue the enimies. But seeing the Courage, and the approach of theym that came agaynste him, began to feare, his heart almost fayling him, and repented him that he had required his Enemy to that which he thought neuer to haue obtayned. In sutch wise as mistrusting the Battayle with troubled minde, changing the order giuen, and notwithstanding not to seeme altogether fearefull, incontinently caused his Ships to be put into order after the best maner he could for so little tyme, himselfe gieuing the signe of battell. In the meane while their enimies being approached neere vnto them, and making a very great noyse with Cryes and Shoutes, furiously entred the Sicilians, which came slowly forth, and hauing first throwne their Hookes and Grapples to stay them, they began the fight with Dartes, Croffe-bowes, and other Shot, in sutch fort as the Sicilians being amazed for the fodayne mutation of Councell, and all enuironned with feare, and the Souldiers of Godefrey perceyuing the same, entred their enimies Ships, and comming to blowes, even in a moment all was filled with bloud, by reason whereof the Sicilians, then despayring of themselues, and they that feared turning the prowes fled away: But neuerthelesse the Victorye reclininge towardes Godefrey, many of their Ships were drowned, many taken, and diuers Pinnasses by force of their Oares escaped. In that fight died fewe people, but many were hurt, and Iohn the Captayne Generall taken Prysoner, and with him almost all the Barons, which of their own accordes repayed to those Warres, and besides a great number of Souldiers, many Ensignes as well of the field, as of the Galleyes, and specially the

mayne Standerd was taken. And in the ende, the Castell being rendred after long Voyages, and great Fortunes by Sea, they were al chayned, caried to Naples and there imprifoned. Amongst those Prifoners, there was a certayne Gentleman named Rowlande, the Naturall Sonne of King Federick deceased, a yong prince very comely and valyaunt. Who not being redeemed, taried alone in prifon very forrowfull to see all others discharged after they had payd their Raunfome and himfelfe not to have wherewith to furnish the fame. For king Pietro (to whom the care of him appertayned by reafon he was his Brother), for that his warres had no better fucceffe, and done contrary to his commaundement, conceyued difpleafure fo wel agaynst him, as all others which were at that battell. Nowe hee then being prifoner without hope of any liberty, by meanes of the dampifhe pryfon, and his feete clogged with yrons, grewe to bee ficke and feeble. It chaunced by fortune, that Camiola remembered him, and feeing him forfaken of his brethren, had compaffyon vppon his miffehappe in futch wife, as she purpofed (if honeftly she might doe the fame) to fet hym at liberty. For the accomplifhment whereof without preiudice of hir honour, she fawe none other wayes but take him to husband. Wherefore shee sent diuers vnto him fecretely, to conferre if he would come forth vpon that condition, whereunto he willingly agreed. And performing ech due ceremonie, vnder promifed faith, vpon the gift of a ring willingly by a deputy espoufed Camiola, who with fo mutch diligence as she could, payed two thousand Crownes for his ranfome, and by that meanes he was deliuerd. When he was retourned to Messina, he repayred not to his Wyfe, but fared as though there had neuer bene any futch talke beetwene theym: whereof at the begynninge Camiola very mutch maruelled, and afterwardes knowinge his vnkindeneffe was greatly offended in hir heart agaynst him. Notwithstanding to the intent she might not seeme to be griued without reafon, before she proceeded any further, caufed him louingly to be talked withal, and to be exhorted by folowing his promyse to consummate the mariage: and feeing that he denied euer any futch Contract to be made, she caufed him to be summoned before the Ecclesiasticall Iudge, by whome fentence was giuen that hee was

hir husband euidence of his owne letters, and by witnesse of certayne other personages of good reputation, which afterwards he himself confessed, his face blushyng for shame, for that he had forgotten futch a manifest benefit and good turne. When the kynde part of Camiola done vnto him was throughly known, he was by hys Brethren reprobued and checked for hys villany, whereupou by their instigation, and the perswasion of his frends, he was contented by humble requeft to desire Camiola to perform the Nuptials. But that gentlewoman which was of great corage in the presence of diuers that were wyth him, when he required hir thereunto, answered him in this maner: "Rowland I haue great cause to render thankes to almyghty God, for that it pleased him to declare vnto me the prooffe of thine vnfaithfulnesse, before thou didst by any meanes contaminate (vnder colour of mariage) the purity of my body, and that through his fauour, by whose most holy name thou wentest about to abuse me by false and periured Oth, I haue foreseene thy Trumpery and deceypt, wherein I beleue that I haue gayned more than I shoulde haue done by thee in mariage. I suppose that when thou were in pryson, thou didst meane no lesse, than now, by effect thou shewest, and diddest thinke that I, forgetting of what house I was, presumptuously desired a Husband of the Royal bloud, and therefore wholly inflamed with thy love, did purpose to beguile mee by denying the Trough, when thou haddest recouered lyberty thorough my Money, and thereby to referue thy selfe for some other of more famous Aliaunce, being restored to thy former degrec. And thereby thou hast giuen prooffe of thy will, and what minde thou haddest so to do if thyne ability had bene correspondent. But God, who from the lofty Skyes doth beholde the humble and low, and who forsaketh none that hopeth in him, knowing the sincerity of my Conscience, hath giuen mee the grace by little trauayle, to breake the bands of thy deceypts, to discouer thine ingratitude, and make manifest thine infidelity, which I haue not done only to display the wrong towards me, but that thy Brethren and other thy friends might from henceforth know what thou art, what affiaunce they ought to repose in thy fayth, and thereby what thy frends ought to looke for, and

what thine enimies ought to feare. I haue loft my Money, thou thy good name: I haue loft the hope which I had of thee, thou the fauour of the Kinge, and of thy brethren: I the expectation of my mariage, thou a true and constant Wife: I the fruits of charity, thou the gayne of amity: I an vnfaithful husband, thou a moft pure and loyall Wyfe. Now the Gentlewomen of Sicilia doe maruayle at my Magnificence, and Beauty, and by prayfes aduance the fame vp into the heauens: and contrary-wife euery of them doe mock thee, and deeme thee to be Infamous. The Renoumed Wryters of ech Countrey will place me amongs the ranke of the nobleft Dames, where thou fhalt be depressed, and throwne downe amonges the Heapes of moſte vnkynde. True it is, that I am fomewhat deceyued by deliuering out of Pryſon, a yong man of Royal, and noble race, in ſteede of whom I haue redeemed a Rafcall, a Lier, a Falſifier of his faith, and a cruell Beaſt: and take heede hardily how thou do greatly eſteme thyſelfe, and I wiſh thee not to think that I was moued to draw thee out of Pryſon, and take thee to Huſbande for the good qualities that were in thee, but for the memory of auncient benefits which my father receyued of thine (if Federick, a king of moſt ſacred remembraunce were thy father, for I can ſcarfly beleue, that a ſonne ſo diſhoneſt ſhould proceede from ſo noble a Gentleman as was that famous Prince.) I know well thou thinkeſt that it was an vnworthy thing, that a Widow not being of the Royal bloud ſhould haue to huſband, the ſonne of a Kinge, ſo ſtrong and of ſo goodly perſonage, which I willingly confeſſe: but I would haue thee a little to make me aunſwere (at the leaſt wiſe if thou canſt by reaſon) when I payd ſo great a ſum of money to deliuer thee from bondage and captiuity, where was then the nobility of thy Royall race? Where was thy force of Youth? And where thy Beauty? If not that they were cloſed up in a terrible Pryſon, where thou waſt detayned in bitter grieſe, and ſorrowe, and there with thoſe naturall qualities, couered alſo in obſcure darkneſſe, that compaſſed thee round about. The ill fauoured noyſe and iangling of thy chaines, the deformity of thy Face forced for lack of light, and the ſtench of the infected Priſon that prouoked ſickneſſe, and the forſaking of thy Friends, had quite de-

bafed al thefe perfections wherewith now thou feemeft to be fo lufty. Thou thoughteft me then to be worthy, not onely of a yong man of a royall bloud, but of a God, if it were poffible to haue him, and fofoon as thou (contrary to all hope) didft once vifite thy natural Countrey, like a moft peffilent perfon without any difficulty, hafte chaunged thy mynde, and neuer fince thou waft deliuered, once did call into thy remembraunce how I was that Camiola, that I was fhee (alone) that did remembre thee: that I was fhee (alone) that had compaffion on thy mishap, and that I was onely fhee, who for thy health did employ all the goods I had. I am, I am (I fay) that Camiola, who by hir Money raunfomed thee out of the hands of the Capitall enimies of thine Auncesters, from Fetters, from Pryfon: and finally deliuered thee from Mifery extreme, before thou were altogether fettled in difpayre. I reduced thee agayne to hope, I haue reuoked thee into thy Countrey, I haue brought thee into the Royal Pallace, and reftored thee into thy former Eftate, and of a Prifoner weake, and ill fauoured, haue made the a younge Prynce, ftrong, and of fayre afpect. But wherefore haue I remembred thefe things, whereof thou oughteft to bee very mindefull thy felfe, and which thou art not able to deny? Sith that for fo great benefits thou haft rendered me futch thanks, as being my husband in deede, thou haddeft the Face to deny me marriage, already contracted by the depofition of honeft Witneffes, and approued by Lettres, Signed with thine owne hand. Wherefore diddeft thou defpife me that hath delyuered thee? Yea and if thou couldeft haue stayned the Name of hir with Infamy, that was thine onely Refuge, and Defender, thou wouldeft gladly haue giuen caufe to the common people, to thinke leffe than Honefty of hir. Art thou afhamed (thou Man of little Iudgement) to haue to Wyfe a Wyddowe, the Daughter of a Knight? O how farre better had it ben for thee to haue bene afhamed to breake thy promifed fayth, to haue difpifed the holy and dreadfull name of God, and to haue declared by thy curffed vnkindnes, how full fraught thou art with Vice. I doe confefse in deede that I am not of the Royall bloud: notwithstanding from the Cradle, being Trayned, and brought vp in the Company of kings Wyues, and Daughters, no great maruayle it is, if I haue

indued and put on a Royall heart and manners, that is able to get, and purchase royall Nobility: but wherefore doe I multiply so many wordes? No, no, I will be very facile, and easie in that wherein thou haste ben to me so difficult and hard by resisting the same with all thy power. Thou haste refused heretofore to be mine, and hauing vanquished thee, to be futch, franckly of myne owne accorde, I doe graunt that thou art not. Abide (on God's name) with thy royall Nobility, neuerthelesse defiled with the spot of Infidelity. Make much of thy youthly lustinesse, and of thy transitory beauty, and I shal be contented with my Wyddow apparell, and shall leaue the riches which God hath geuen me to Heyres more honest than those that might haue come of thee. Anaunt thou wycked yong man, and sith thou art coumpted to be vnworthy of me, learne with thine own experience, by what subtilty and guiles thou maiest betray other dames, suffiseth it for me to be once deceyued. And I for my parte fully determine neuer to tary longer with thee, but rather chastyly to lyue without husband, which lyfe I deeme farre more excellent than with thy match continually to be coupled." After shee had spoken these words, shee departed from him, and from that time forth, it was impossible eyther by prayers, or Admonitions to cause hir change hir holy intent. But Rowland al confused, repenting himself to late of hys Ingratitude, blamed of ech man, his eyes fixed vpon the grounde, auoyding not onely the presence of his brethren, but of all sorts of people, dayly led from that time forth, a most miserable life, and neuer durst by reason to demaunde hir againe to Wife, whom he had by disloyalty refused. The King and the other Barons, marueyling of the noble heart of the Lady, singularly commended hir, and exalted hir prayfes vp into the Skyes, vncertayne neuerthelesse wherein shee was most worthy of prayfe, eyther for that (contrary to the couetous nature of Women) she had raunsomed a yong man with so great a Summe of Money, or else after she had deliuered him, and sentence gieuen that he was hir Hufbande, she so couragiously refused him, as an vnkinde man, vnworthy of hir company. But leaue we for a tyme, to talke of Wyddowes, and let vs see what the Captayne, and Lieute-

naunt of Nocera can alledge vpon the discourfe of his cruelties,  
which although an ouer cruell Hyftory, yet depaynteth the fuc-  
ceffe of thofe that apply their myndes to the Sportes of Loue, futch  
Loue I meane, as is wantonly placed, and directed to no good  
purpofe, but for glutting of the Bodye's delight, which  
both corrupteth nature, maketh feeble the body,  
lewdly fpendeth the time, and fpecially offend-  
eth him who maketh proclamation, that  
Whooremongers and aduiltrers fhall  
neuer Inherite his  
Kyngdome.

## THE THIRTY-THIRD NOUELL.

*Great cruelties chaunced to the Lords of Nocera, for adultry by one of them committed with the Captayne's wyfe of the forte of that Citty, with an enterprife moued by the Captaine to the Cittyzens of the same for Rebellion, and the good and dutyfull aunswere of them: with other pityfull euent's ryfing of that notable and outrageous vyce of whoredom.*

THE furious rage of a Husband offended for the chastity violated in his Wyfe, surpasseth all other, and ingendreth mallice agaynst the doer whatfoeuer he be. For if a Gentleman, or one of good nature, cannot abyde an other to doe him any kinde of displeasure, and much lesse to hurt him in hys Body, how is he able to endure to haue his honour touched, specially in that part which is so neere vnto him as his owne Soule? Man, and Wyfe being as it were one body and one will, wherein Men of good Judgement cannot well like the Opinion of those which say that the honour of a lusty and courageous person dependeth not vpon the fault of a foolish woman: for if that wer true which they so lightly vaunt, I would demaund why they be so animated and angry agaynst them which adorne their head with braunched Hornes, the Ensignes of a Cuckolde: and truly nature hath so well provided in that behalfe, as the very sauage Beastes doe fight, and suffer death for futch honest Jealousie. Yet will I not prayse, but rather accuse aboue al faulty men, those that be so fondly Jealous, as eche thing troubling their mindes, be afrayde of the Flyes very shadowe that buzze about their Faces. For by payning and molestinge theymselues with a thinge that so little doth please and content them, vntill manifest, and eident prooffe appeare, they display the folly of their minde's imperfection, and the weaknesse of their Fantasy. But where the fault is knowne, and the Vyce discovered, where the husbände seeth himselfe to receyue Damage in the soundest part of his moueable goods, reason it is that he therein be aduised by timely deliberation and sage foresight, rather than with headlong fury, and raging rashnesse



to hazard the losse of his honour, and the ruine of his life and goods. And lyke as the fayth and fidelity of the vndefiled Bed bath in all times worthely ben commended and rewarded: euen fo he that polluteth it by Infamy, beareth the penaunce of the same. Portia the Daughter of Cato, and wife of Brutus shall be prayed for euer, for the honest and inuiolable loue which she bare vnto hir beloued husband, almost like to lose hir life when she heard tell of his certayne death. The pudicity of Paulina the wife of Seneca appeared also, when she assayed to dy by the same kinde of death wherewith hir Husband violently was tormented by the vniust commaundement of the most cruel and horrible Emperoure Nero. But Whores and Harlottes, having honest Husbands, and well allied in Kin, and Ligneage by abandoning their bodies, doe prodigally consume their good Renoume: yea but if they escape the Magistrates, or auoyde the wrath of offended husbandes for the wrong done vnto them, yet they leaue an immortall slaunder of their wicked life, and youth thereby may take example aswell to shun futch shamelesse Women, as to followe those Dames that be Chaste, and Vertuous. Now of this contempt whych the Wyfe beareth to hir Husband, do rise very many times notorious slaunders, and futch as are accompanied with passinge cruelties: wherein the Husbände ought to moderate his heate, and calme his choler, and soberly to chastise the fault, for so much as excessiue wrath, and anger, doe Eclipse in man the light of reason, and futch rages doe make them to be semblable vnto Brute, and reasonlesse Beastes: meete it is to be angry for thinges done contrary to Right, and Equity, but Temperaunce, and Modesty is necessary in al occurrentes, bee they wyth vs, or against vs. But if to resist anger in those matters, it be hard and difficulte, yet the greater impossibility there is in the operation, and effect of any good thinge, the greater is the glory that vanquisheth the affection and mastereth the first motion of the minde which is not so impossible to gouerne, and subdue to reason, as many do esteeme. A wise man then cannot so farre forget his duty, as to exceede the Boundes, and Limits of reason, and to suffer his mynde to wander from the siege of Temperaunce, which if he doe after hee hath well mingled Water in his Wyne, hee may chance to

finde cause of Repentaunce, and by desire to repayre his Offense augment his fault, sinne being so prompt and ready in man, as the crime which might bee couered with certayne Iustice, and coloured by some lawe or righteous cause, maketh him many tymes to fall into detestable Vice and Synne, so contrary to mildnesse and modesty, as the very Tyraunts themselues woulde abhorre futch wickednesse. And to the ende that I do not trouble you with Allegation of infinite nombres of examples, seruing to this purpose, ne render occasion of tedioufnes for you to reuolue so many bookes, I am contented for this present, to bring in place an Hyftory so ouer cruell, as the cause was not mutch vnreasonable, if duty in the one had bene considered, and rage in the other bridled and foreseene, who madly murdered and offended those that were nothing guilty of the Facte, that touched him so neare. And although that these be matters of loue, yet the Reader ought not to bee griened nor take in evill parte, that we bee still in that Argument. For we doe not hereby goe about to erect a Schoolehouse of Loue, or to teache Youth the wanton Toyes of the same. But rather bryng forth these Examples to withdraw the plyant, and tender Age of this our time, from the pursuite of like Follies, which may (were they not in this sort warned) ingender lyke effects that these our Hyftories do recoumpt, and whereof you shall bee Partakers by reading the discourse that followeth. Yee must than vnderstand, that in the time that Braccio Montone, and Sforza Attendulo florished in Italy, and were the chiefeft of the Italian men of warre, there were three Lords and brethren which held vnder their authority and Puiffaunce Foligno, Nocera, and Treuio, parcell of the Dukedome of Spoleto, who gouerned so louingly their Landes together, as without diuision, they maynetayned themselues in great Estate, and lyued in Brotherly concorde. The name of the Eldest of these three Lordes was Nicholas, the second Cæsar, the yongest Conrade, gentle Personages, wife and wel beloued so well of the Noble men their Neyghbours, as also of the Cittyzens that were vnder their Obeyfaunce, who in the ende, shewed greater loyalty towards them, than those that had sworne their fayth, and had giuen Pleadges for confirmation, as yee shall perceyue by reading what insueth. It chaunced that the eldest

oftentimes repaying from Foligno to Nocera, and lodging still in the Castell, behelde with a little to mutch wanton Eye, the Wyfe of his Lieutenaunt whych was placed there with a good number of dead payes, to Guard the Fort, and keepe vnder the Cittizens, if by chaunce (as it happeneth vpon the new erection of Estates) they attempted some new enterprife agaynst their Soueraygne Lordes. Nowe this Gentlewoman was very fayre, singularly delighting to be looked vpon: which occasioned the Lord Nicholas, by perceyuing the wantoneffe and good wyll of the Mystresse of the Castell, not to refuse so good occasion, determining to prosecute the inioying of hir, that was the Bird after which he hunted, whose Beauty and good grace had deeply wounded his Mind, wherein if he forgot his duety, I leaue for al men of good iudgement to consider. For me thinke that this young Lorde ought rather singularly to loue and cherysh his liuetenaunt that faithfullye and trustily had kept his Castell and Forte, than to prepare agaynst him so Trayterous an Attempt, and Ambushe. And if so bee hys sayd Lieutenaunt had bene accused of felony, misprison, or Treason (yet to speake the trouth) hee might haue deliuered the charge of his Castell vnto an other, rather then to suborne his Wyfe to folly. And ought likewise to haue considered that the Lieuetenaunt by puttinge his trust in him, had iust cause to complayne for Rauishing hys Honoure from hym in the Person of hys Wyfe, whom hee ought to haue loued wythout any affection to Infrindge the Holy Lawe of Amitye, the breakinge whereof diffolueth the duety of ech Seruaunt towards his Soueraygne Lord and mayster. To be shorth, this blinded Louer yelding no' resistaunce to loue, and the foolish conceipt which altereth the iudgements of the wifest, suffered his fanse to roue so farre vnto hys Appetites, as on a daye when the Lieuetenaunte was walked abroad into the Castel to view the Souldiours and deade payes (to pleafure him that fought the meanes of his displeafure) hee spake to the Gentlewoman his Wyfe in this manner: "Gentlewoman, you being wife and courteous as ech man knoweth, needefull it is not to vse long or Rethoricall Orations, for so mutch as you without further supply of talk do clearely perceyue by my Looks, Sighes, and earnest Viewes, the loue that I beare you, which without comparifon nippeth my

Hearte so neare as none can feele the parching paynes, that the same poore portion of me doth suffer. Wherefore hauing no great leysure to let you further vnderstand my mynde, it may please you to shewe me so much Fauour as I may be receyued for him, who hauing the better right of your good grace, may therewithall enioy that secret Acquayntance, which futch a one as I am deserueth: of whom yee shall haue better experience if you please to accept him for your owne." This mistresse Lieutenant which compted hir selfe happy to be beloued of hir Lorde, and who tooke great pleasure in that aduenture, albeit that shee defyred to lette hym knowe the good will that she bare vnto him, yet difsembled the matter a little, by aunswering him in this wise: "Your disease Sir is sodayne, if in so little time you haue felt futch exceffe of malady: but perchance it is your heart that being ouer tender, hath lightly receyued the pricke, which no doubt will so soone vanish, as it hath made so ready entry. I am very glade (Sir) that your heart is so merily disposed to daliaunce, and can finde some matter to contriue the superfluitie of tyme, the same altering the diuersity of man's complexion, accordingly as the condition of the houely Planet guideth the nature of euery wight." "It is altogether otherwise (aunswered hee) for being come hither as a master and Lord, I am become a seruaunt and slaue: and briefly to speake my minde, if you haue not pittie vpon me, the disease which you call sodayne, not only will take increafe, but procure the death and finall ruine of my heart." "Ah sir," (sayd the Gentlewoman) "your griefe is not so deeply rooted, and death so present to succede as you affirme, ne yet so ready to gieue ouer the place, as you protest, but I see what is the matter, you desire to laugh mee to scorne, and your heart craueth something to solace it selfe which cannot be idle, but must employ the vacant tyme vpon some pleasaunt Toyes." "You haue touched the pricke (aunswered the Louer) for it is you in deede wherevpon my hearte doth ioy, and you are the cause of my Laughter and passetime, for otherwise all my delights were displeasures, and you also by denying me to be your seruaunt, shall abbreviate, and shorten my liuing dayes, who only reioyseth for choyse of futch a mystresse." "And how (replied she)

can I be assured of that you say? The disloyalty, and infidelity of man being in these dayes so faste vnited, so hastily following one another, as the Shadow doth the Body, wherefoeuer it goeth." "Onely experience" (sayd he) "shall make you know what I am, and shall teach you wheather my heart is any thing different from my wordes, and I dare bee bolde to say, that if you vouchsafe to do mee the pleasure to receyue mee for your owne, you may make your vaunt to haue a Gentleman so faythfull for your frend, as I esteeme you to be discrete, and as I desire to let you taste the effect of mine affection, by futch some honest order as may be deuised." "Sir" (sayd she) "it is well and aduisedly spoken of you, but yet I thincke it straunge for futch a Gentleman as you be, to debase your honor to so poore a Gentlewoman, and to goe about both to dishonor me, and to put my life in pearill." "God forbid" (aunswered the Lord Nicholas) "that I be cause of any flaunder, and rather had I dye my selfe than minister one simple occasion whereby your fame should be brought in question. Only I doe pray you to haue pittie vpon me, and by vsing your curtesie, to satisfie that which my seruice and faythfull friendship doth constraune, and binde you for the comfort of him that loueth you better than himselfe." "We will talke more thereof hereafter" (aunswered the lieutenants Wyfe) "and than will I tell you mine aduise, and what resolution shall follow the summe of your demaunde." "How now Gentlewoman" (sayd he) "haue you the heart to leaue me voyde of hope, to make me languish for the prorogation of a thing so doubtful, as the delayes bee which loue deferreth? I humbly pray you to tell me whereunto I shall trust: to the intent that by punishing my heart for prooffe of this enterprise, I may chastise all mine Eyes by reuing from them the meanes for euer more to see that which contenteth me best, and wherein resteth my solace, leauing my minde full of desires, and my heart without final stay, vpon the greatest Pleasure that euer man coulde choofe." The Gentlewoman would not loose a Noble man so good and perfect: whose presence already pleased hir aboue all other things, and, who voluntarily had agreed to hys request, by the onely signe of hir Gestes, and Lookes, sayde vnto him smilinge with a very good grace: "Doe not accuse my heart of lightnesse, nor

my minde of infidelity and treason, if to please and obey you, I forget my duty, and abuse the promise made unto my Husband, for I sweare vnto you (sir) by God, that I haue more forced my thought, and of long time haue constraigned mine appetites in difsembling the loue that I beare you, than I haue receiued pleasure, by knowing my selfe to be beloued by one agreeable to mine affection. For which cause you shall finde me (being but a poore Gentlewoman) more ready to do your pleasure, and to be at your commaundement, than any other that liueth be free of greater Port, and regarde than I am. And who to satisfie your request, shal one day sacrifice that fidelity to the iealous fury of hir husband." "God defend" (sayd the young Lord) "for we shal be so discrete in our doings, and so seldome communicate, and talke together, as impossible for any man to discry the same. But if mishap will haue it so, and that some ill lucke doe discouer our dealings, I haue shift of wayes to colour it, and power to stop the mouthes of them that dare presume to clatter and haue to do with our priuate conference." "All that I know wel inough sir" (sayd she) "but it is great simplicitie in sutch thinges for a man to trust to his authority, the forced inhibition whereof shall proooke more babble, than rumor is able to sprede for all his tattling talk of our secret follies. Moreouer I would be very glad to do what pleaseth you, so the same may be without slander. For I had rather dy, than any should take vs in our priuities and familiar pastimes: let vs be contented with the pleasure that the ease of our ioy may graunt, and not with sutch contentation as shal offend vs, by blotting the clerenesse of our good name." Concluding then the time of their new acquayntaunce, which was the next day at noone, when the Lieutenaunt did walke into the Citty, they ceased their talke for feare of his enteruiew. Who (upon his retourne) doing reuerence vnto his Lord, tolde him that hee knewe where a wilde Boare did haunte, if it pleased him to see the pastime. Whereunto the Lord Nicholas fayned louingly to giue eare (although agaynst his will) for so much as hee thought the same Huntinge should be a delay for certayne dayes to the enioying, (pretended and assured) of his beloued. But she that was so much or more espyred with the raging and intollerable fire of loue,

speedily found meanes to satisfie hir louer's sute, but not in sutch manner as was desired of eyther partes, wherefore they were constrained to defer the rest vntill an other time. This pleasaunt beginning so allured the Lord of Nocera, as vnder the pretence of huntinge, there was no weeke that passed, but hee came to visite the Warrener of hys Lieutenaunt. And this order continuing without any one little suspition of their loue, they gouerned theymselfes wisely in pursute thereof. And the Lord Nicholas vfed the game and sporte of Hunting, and an infinite number of other exercises, as the running of the Ring, and Tennis, not so much thereby to finde meanes to enioy his Lady, as to auoyde occasion of Iealofie in hir Husband, being a very familiar vice in all Italians, the Cloake whereof is very heauy to beare, and the disease troublesome to sustayne. But what? Like as it is hard to beguile an Vsurer in the account of his money, for his continuall watch ouer the same, and slumbring sleepes vpon the Bookes of his reckonings and accountps, so difficult it is to deceyue the heart of a iealous man, and specially when he is assured of the grieffe which his head conceyueth. Argus was neuer so cleere eyed for all his hundred Eyes ouer Iupiter's Lemman, as those Louers be, whose opinions be ill affected ouer the chastity of their Wyues. Moreouer what Foole, or Assè is hee, who seeing sutch vndiscrete familiarity of two Louers, the priuy gestures and demeanors without witnesse, theyr stolne walkes at vntymely houres, and sometimes theyr embracements to, frayght and common before seruants, that would not doubt of that whych most secretly did passe? True it is that in England (where liberty is so honestly obserued as being alone or secrete conuersation gyueth no cause of suspition) the same mighte haue bene borne withall. But in Italy, where the Parents themselfes be for the most part suspected, (if there had bene no facte in deede committed) that familiarity of the Lord Nicholas, with hys Lieutenaunte's Wyfe was not suffrable, but exceeded the Bounds of reason, for so much as the Commoditie which they had chosen for possessing of theyr loue, (albeit the same not suspitions) animated them afterwards to frequent their familiarity and dyspporte to frankly, and wythout discretion: which was the cause that fortune (who neuer leaueth the ioyes of men wythout

giuing thereunto some great alarme,) being enuious of the mutuall delightes of those two louers, made the husband to doubt of that which hee would haue dissembled, if honor could so easily be loste wythoute reproch, as bloud is shed without peryll of Lyfe, but the matter being so cleare, as the fault was euident, specially in the party which touched him so neare as hymselfe, the Lieutenaut before he would enterpryse any thing, and declare what he thought desired throughly to bee resolued of that which hee sawe as it were but in a Cloude, and by reason of hys conceyued Opyinion hee dealt so warely and wisely in those affaires, and was so subtil an espiall, as one day when the louers were at theyr game, and in their most straite and secreete embracements, he viewed them coupled with other leash, than he would haue wished, and colled with straighter bands then reason or honesty did permit. He saw with out beeing seene, wherein he felt a certaine ease and contentment, for being assured of that he doubted, and purposed to ordeyne a fowre refection after their delightfome banquet, the simple louers ignoraunt by signe or coniecture, that their enterpryses were dyscouered. And truely it had ben more tollerable and lesse hurtful for the Lieutenante, if euen then hee had perpetrated his vengeance, and punished them for theyr wyckednesse, than to vse the Cruelty wherewith afterwarde he blotted his renoume, and soyled his hands by Bedlem rage in the innocent bloud of those that were not priuie to the folly, and lesse guilty of the wronge don vnto him. Now the Captain of the Castel for al his dissimulation in couering of his griefe, and his felony and Treason intended against his soueraigne Lord, which he desired not yet manifestly to appeare, was not able any more from that time forth to speake so louingly vnto him, nor with such respect and reuerence as he did before, which caused his Wife thus to say vnto hir Louer: "My Lord I doubt very much least my husband doth perceiue these our common practizes, and secreete familiar dealings, and that he hath some Hammer working in his heade, by reason of the Countenance, and vncheareful entertaynement which he sheweth to your Lordship, wherefore myne aduys is, that you retire for a certaine tyme to Foligno. In the meane space I will marke and espye if that his alteration be conceiued for any matter



againſt vs, and wherefore his wonted lookes haue put on this new alteration and chaunge. All which when I haue (by my eſpial and ſecret practize founded) I will ſpedily aduertife you, to the end that you may provide for the ſauegard of your faithfull and louing ſeruaunt.” The young Lord, who loued the Gentlewoman wyth al his heart, was attached with ſo great gryefe, and dryuen into ſutch rage by hearyng thoſe wycked Newes, as euen preſently he woulde haue knowne of hys Lieuetenaunt, the cauſe of his dyſwonted cheare. But weyghing the good aduylſe which his woman had giuen him, pauſed vppon the ſame, and promyſed hir to doe what ſhe thought beſt. By reaſon whereof, gyuyng warnyng to his Seruantes for hys departure, he cauſed the Lyeuete-naunte to be called before him, vnto whome hee ſayd: “Cap-tayne, I had thoughte for certayne Dayes to ſporte and paſſe my tyme, but hearing tell that the Duke of Camarino commeth to Foligno, to debate with vs of matters of importaunce, I am conſtrained to departe, and do pray you in the meane time to haue good regard vnto our affaires, and if any newes doe chaunce to aduertife the ſame wyth all Expedytion.” “Sir” (ſayd the Cap-tayne) “I am ſorrye that now when our paſſetime of hunting myght yelde ſome good recreation vnto your honour, that you doe thus forſake vs, notwithſtandyng ſith it is your good pleaſure, we will ceaſe the chaſe of the wylde Bore till your retourne. In the meane time, I will make ready the Coardes and Tramelles, that vppon your comming, nothing want for the Furniture of our ſport.” The Lord Nicholas, ſeeing his Lieuetenaunt ſo pleaſauntly diſpoſed, and ſo litle bent to Choller, or ieaious fantaſie, was perſuaded, that ſome other toy had rather occupied his Minde, than any ſuſpition betweene his Wife and hym. But the ſubtyll Huſband ſearched other meanes to be reuenged, than by kyl-ling him alone, of whom he receyued that diſhonour, and was more craftie to enterpryſe, and more hardie to execute, than the Louers were wyſe or well aduylſed to preuent and wythſtande his ſleightes and pollicies. And albeit that the Wyfe (after the departure of hir Fryend) affayed to drawe from him the cauſe of his altered cheare yet coulde ſhee neuer learne, that hir huſband had any ill opinion of theyr Loue. For ſo many tymes as talke was moued of the

Lord Nicholas, hee exalted his prayse vp into the Heauens, and commended hym aboue all his Brethren. All which hee dyd to beguyle the pollycies of hir, whome he saw to blush, and many times chaunge Colour, when she heard him spoken of, to whom she bare better affection than to hir Husband, vnto whom (in very dede) she did owe the faith and integritie of hir body. This was the very toile which he had laid to intrap those amorous persons and purposed to rid the world of them by that meanes, to remoue from before his eyes, the shame of a Cuckolde's title, and to reuenge the iniurie don to his reputation. The mistresse of the Castel seeynge that hir husband (as shee thought) by no meanes did vnderstande hir follies, desired to continue the pleasure, which either of them desired, and which made the third to die of phrenesie, wrote to the Lord Nicholas, the letter that followeth.

“My Lord, the feare I had, that my husband should perceyue our loue, caused me to intreat you certaine dayes past, to discontinue for a time, the frequentation of your owne house, whereby I am not little agriued, that contrary to my wil, I am defrauded of your prefence, which is far more pleasaunt vnto me, than my husband's flatteries, who ceaseth not contynually to talke of the honest behaiour, and commendable qualyties that be in you, and is sorry for your departure, bicause he feareth that you mislyke youre entertainment, which should be (sayth he) so gryeuous and noy-some vnto him, as death it selfe. Wherefore, I pray you fir, if it be possible, and that your affayres doe suffer you, to come hither to the ende I may enioy your amayable prefence, and vse the Liberty that our good hap hath prepared, through the litle ieaalousie of my husband your Lieuetenaunt: who I suppose before it be long wil intreat you, so great is his desire to make you passetime of hunting within your owne Land and territory. Fayle not then to come I beseech you, and we wyll so well consider the gouernment of our affaires, as the best fighted shall not once discry the least suspicion thereof, recommending my selfe most humbly (after the best maner I can) to your good Lordship.”

This Letter was deliuered to a Lackey to beare to the Lord Nicholas, and not so priuily done, but the Lieutenaut immediatly espied the deceit which the sooner was disciphred, for so much as he

dayely lay in wayte to find the meanes to reuenge the wrong done vnto him, of purpose to beate the iron so long as it was hotte, and to execute hys purpose before his Wife tooke heede, and felte the endeour of his Enterpryse. And bicaufe that shee had affayed by diuers wayes to found his heart, and fele whether he had conceiued displeafure againft the Lord hir louer, the Day after wherein she had wrytten to hir friend, hee sent one of his Men in poste to the three Lordes, to requyre them to come the nexte Day to see the pastime of the fayrest and greatest wild Bore, that long tyme was bred in the Forrests adioyning vnto Nocera, Albeit that the Countrey was fayre for courfinge, and that dyuers tymes many fayre Bores haue ben encountred there. But it was not for this, that he had framed his errand, but to trap in one toyle and snare the thre brethren, whom he determined to sacrifice to the aulter of his vengeance, for the expiation of theyr elder brother's trespasse, and for soyling the Nuptial bed of his seruauant. He was the wylde Bore whome he meant to frike, hee was the pray of his vnfaciabie and cruell Appetite. If the fault had ben generall of all three together, he had had some reason to make them passe the bracke of one equall fortune, and to tangle them within one net, both to preuent thereby (as he thought) his further hurt, and to chastise their leude behauiour. For many tymes (as lamentable experience teacheth) Noble men for the onely respecte of their Nobility, make no Conscience to doe wrong to the honor of them, whose reputation and honesty, they ought so wel to regard as their owne. Herein offended the good Prynce of the Iewes Dauid, when to vse his Bersabe without suspition, he caused innocent Vrias to bee slayne, in lieu of recompence for his good seruice, and diligent execution of his behests. The children of the proud Romane king Tarquinius, did herein greatly abuse them selues, when they violated that noble Gentlewoman Lucrece, whom al histories do so much remembre, and whose chastity, al famous writers do commend. Vppon such as they be, vengeance ought to be don, and not to defile the hands in the bloud of innocents, as the Parents and Kinsmen of deade Lucrece did at Rome, and this Lieutenaunt at Nocera, vppon the brethren of him that had sent him into Cornwall, without passing ouer the Seas. But what? Anger proceeding

of futch wronge, furmownteth al phrenesie, and exceedeth al the bounds of reason, and man is so deuoyd of Wyts, by seeing the blot of defamation, to lyght vpon him, as he seeketh al meanes to hurt and displeafe him that polluteth his renoume. Al the race of the Tarquines for like fact were banyshed Rome, for the onely brute whereof, the husband of the faire rauished wife, was confrayned to auoid the Place of his natiuity. Paris alone violated the body of Menelaus, the Lacedemonian kyng, but for reuenge of the rauished Greeke, not onely the glory and Rycheffe of stately Troy, but also the most parte of Asia and Europa, was ouertourned and defaced, if credyte may be gyuen to the recordes of the Auncyent. So in this fact of the Lieutenaunt, the Lord Nicholas alone, had polluted his bed, but the reuenge of the cruel man extended further, and his fury raged so farre, as the guiltlesse were in greate Daunger to beare the penaunce, which shall be well perceiued by the discourse that foloweth. The Captaine then hauing sent his message, and beyng sure of his intent (no lesse than if he already had the brethren within his hold, vpon the point to couple them together with his wife, to send them all in pilgrimage to visite the faithfull sorte, that blason their loues in an other worlde, with Dydo, Phyllis, and futch like, that more for dispayre than loue, bee passed the straietes of death) caused to be called before him in a secrete place, al the souldiers of the Fort, and futch as with whome he was sure to preuayle, to whom not without sheading forth some teares, in heauie Countenance, he spake in this maner: "My Companions and Fryends, I doubt not but yee bee abashed to see me wrapt in so heauy plyght, and appeare in this forme before you (that is to say) bewept, heauy, panting with sighes, and all contrary to my custome, in other state and maner, than my courage and degree requyre. But when ye shall vnderstand the cause I am assured that the case which seemeth straunge to you, shall be thought iust and ryght and so will perfourme the thing wherein I shall employe you. Ye knowe that the first point that a Gentleman ought to regarde, consisteth not onely in repelling the iniury done vnto the body, but rather it behoueth that the fight begin for the defense of his honor, which is a thinge that proceedeth from the Minde, and resorteth to the

Body, as the Instrument to worke that which the spyryte appointeth. Now it is honour, for conseruation whereof, an honest man and one of good Courage feareth not to put hymfelfe in all perill and daunger of death and losse of goodes, referring hymfelfe also to the garde of that whych toucheth as it were oure owne reputation. In futch wyse as if a good Captaine do suffer hys fouldier to be a wycked man, a Robber, a Murderer, and an exacter, he beareth the note of dyshonor albeit in all his doings he gouerneth his estate after the rule of honesty, and doth nothing that is vnworthy his vocation. But what? he being a head vnited to futch members, if the partes of that vnited thing be corrupt and naught, the head must needs bear the blot of the fault before referred to the whole Body. Alas (sayd he fighting) what parte is more neare, and dearer to Man, than that which is giuen vnto him for a Pledge and Comfort duryng his Life, and which is conioyned to be bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh, to breath forth one Mynde, and to think with one heart and equall wil. It is of the Wyfe that I speake, who being the moytie of hir husband, ye ought not to muse if I say, that the honoure of the one is the rest of the other, and the one infamous and wycked, the other feeleth the troubles of futch mischiefe, and the Wife being carelesse of hir honour, the husband's reputation is defiled, and is not worthy of prayse, if he suffer futch shame vnreunged: I must (Companions and good friends) here dyscouer that whych my heart would faine kepe secrete, if it were possible, and must rehearse a thing vnto you, which so sone as my Mouth would faine kepe close, the Minde assayeth to force the ouerture. And loth I am to do it, were it not that I make so good accompt of you, as ye being tied to me with an vnseparable Amity, will yeld me your comfort and Ayde against him that hath done mee this Villany, futch as if I be not reunged vpon, needs must I be the Executioner of that vengeance vpon my selfe, that I am loth to lyue in this dishonor, whych all the dayes of my life (without due vltion) like a Worme wyll torment and gnaw my conscyence. Wherefore before I goe any further, I woulde knowe whether I myght so well trust your aide and succour in this my busynesse, as in all others I am assured you would not leaue mee so long as

any breath of life remained in you. For without futch assurance, I do not purpose to let you know the pricking naile that pierceth my heart, nor the gryefe that griueth me fo neare, as by vttering it without hope of help I shall open the Gate to death, and dye without reliefe of my desire, by punishing him, of whome I haue receyued an iniury more bloody than any man can doe." The Souldiers whych loued the Captaine as theyr owne Lyfe, were sorry to see him in futch estate, and greater was theyr dolour to heare wordes that tended to nothing else but to fury, vengeance, and murder of hymselfe. Wherefore all wyth one accorde promysed theyr helpe and mayne force towards and against all men for the bryngyng to passe of that whych hee dyd meane to requyre. The Lieutenaunt assured of his Men conceyued heart and Courage, and continuing his Oration and purpose, determyned the slaughter and ouerthrowe of thre Trinicien Brethren, (for that was the surname of the Lordes of Foligno,) who pursued his Oration in this maner: "Know ye then (my Companions and good Friends) that it is my Wife, by whome I haue indured the hurt and losse of myne honour, and she is the party touched, and I am he that am most offended. And to the ende that I do not hold you longer in suspence, and the party be concealed from you, whych hath don me thys Outrage: ye shall vnderstand that Nicholas Trinicio, the elder of the three Lordes of Foligno and Nocera, is he, that against all ryght and equity hath suborned the Wife of his Lieuetenaunt, and foyled the Bed of him, whereof he ought to haue ben the defender and the very bulwarke of his reputation. It is of hym my good Fryends, and of his that I meane to take futch Vengeance, as eternall memory shall display the same to all posterity: and neuer Lord shal dare to doe a like wrong to mine, without remembraunce what his duety is, which shall teach hym how to abuse the honest seruice of a Gentleman that is one of his owne trayne. It resteth in you both to holde vp your hand, and keepe your promise, to the end that the Lord Nicholas, deceiuyng and mocking me, may not trust and put affiance in your force, vnto whych I heartily do recommend my selfe." The Souldiers moued and incited with the wickednesse of theyr Lord and with the wrong

done to him, of whom they receyued wages, fwore agayne to ferue his turne in any exploit he went about, and requyred him to be affured, that the, Trinicien Brethren should be ouerthrowne, and suffer deferued penaunce, if they might lay hands vpon them, and therefore willed him to feke meanes to allure them thither, that they might be dispatched. The Lieuetenaunt at these words renuing a chearefull Countenance, and shewing himself very ioyfull for futch successe after he had thanked his Souldyers, and very louingly imbraced the chiefest of them, reuealed hys deuifed pollicy, and hoped shortly to haue them at his commaundement within the Fort, alleaging that he had dispatched two Messengers vnto them, and that his wife also priuily had sent hir page: vnto whome he purposed to gyue so good a recompense, as neuer more she should plant his hornes so hygh, vnder a colour of gentle entertaynement of hir ribauld and Friend. They were scarce resolued vpon this intent, but newes were brought him, that the next day morning, the three lords accompanied with other nobility would come to Nocera, to hunt that huge wylde Bore, whereof the Lieutenaut had made so greate auant. These newes did not greatly please the Captaine, for so much as he feared, that his purpose could not (conueniently) be brought to passe, if the company were so great. But when he considered that the Lords alone, should lodge within the Fort, he was of good cheare again, and staied vpon his first intent. The Triniciens the next day after came very late, bicause the Lord Berardo of Verano duke of Camerino, desired to be one, and also the two brethren taried for Conrade, who was at a mariage, and could not assist the Tragedie that was played at Nocera, to his great hap and profit. So this troupe came to Nocera late, and hauing supped in the City, the Lord Nicholas, and the Duke of Camerino went to Bed in the Fort, Cæsar the brother of Trinicio tarying behind with the Trayne, to lodge in the city. Stay here a while (ye Gentlemen) ye I say, that pursue the secrete stelths of loue, neuer put any great trust in fortune, which seldome kepeth hir promise with you. Ye had neede therefore to take goode heede, least ye be surprysed in the place, wher priuily you giue the assault, and in the acte

wherein ye desire the assistance of none. See the barbarous cruelty of a Lieutenant, which loved rather to kill his corruial in his cold blood, than otherwise to be reuenged, when he saw him a bed with his Wife, purposely that the example of his fury myght be the better knowne, and the secret sclander more euident, from the roote whereof did spryng an infinite number of Murders and mischiefs. About midnight then, when all thinges were at rest vnder the darke silence of the nyght, the Lieutenant came to the Chamber of the Lord Nicholas, accompanied with the most part of the Watch, and hauyng stoopt vp the yeoman of hys Chaumber, hee so dressed the Companion of hys Bedde, as for the first prooue of his courtesie, he caused hys Membres and priuy partes to be cut of, sayyng vnto him with cruell disdainne: "Thou shalt not henceforth (wycked wretch) weld this lance into the rest, thereby to batter the honour of an honest man than thy self." Then lanching his stomacke with a piercing blade, he tare the heart out of his belly, sayyng: "Is this the trayterous Heart that hath framed the plot and deuyfed the enterprife of my shame, to make this infamous villaine without Life, and his renoume without prayse?" And not content with this Cruelty, he wreakt the like vpon the remnaunt of his body, that sometimes the runnagate Medea did vpon hir innocent brother, to saue the Lyfe of hir selfe, and of hir friend Iason. For she cut him into an hundred thousand pieces, gyuing to euery Membre of the poore murdered soule hir word of mockery and contempt. Was it not sufficient for a tyrannous husband to be reuenged of hys shame, and to kill the party which had defamed him, without vsing so furious Anotomie vpon a dead body, and wherein there was no longer feeling? But what? Ire beyng wythout measure, and anger wythout Brydle or reason, it is not to be wondred, if in all his actes the Captayne ouerpassed the iust measure of vengeance. Many would thinke the committed murder vpon Nicholas, to be good and iust: but the Iustice of an offense, ought not so longe time to be conceyled, but rather to make him feele the smart at the very tyme the deed is done, to the ende that the nyping gryefe of pestilent treason wrought against the betrayed party, be not obscured and hydden by fodayne rage and lacke of



reason rising in the mindes first motions, and thereby also the faulte of the guilty, by hys indiscretion couered: otherwyfe there is nothyng that can colour futch vice. For the law indifferently doth punish euery man, that without the Magistrates order taketh authority to venge his own wrong. But come we againe vnto our purpose. The Captayne all imbrued in bloude, entred the Chaumber of the Duke of Camerino, whom with al the rest of the strangers that were wythin the Castle, hee lodged (without speakynge any worde) in a deepe and obscure pryson. Beholde, what reffe they tooke that nyghte, whych were come to hunt the Wylde Boare. For wythout traunaylyng farre, they were intrapped in the subtyll engines and Nettes of the furious Lieuetenaunte, who when the morning bedecked with hir vermilion cleare began to shewe hir selfe, when all the Hunters dyd put them selues in readynesse, and coupled vp theyr Dogges to marche into the Felde, beholde, one of the Captayne's cruell Ministers wente into the City, to cause the Lord Cæsar to come and speake with hys brother Nicholas, and intreated him not to tarry, for that he and the Duke were dysposed to shewe hym some dysport. Cæsar whych neuer suspected the least of these chaunced murders, desired not to be prayed agayne, but made haste to the Butcherie like a lamb, and in the company of the Wolues themselues that were in readynesse to kyll hym. He was no sooner in the Court of the Castle, but seuen or eyght Varlets apprehended hym and hys Men, and carryed hym into the Chaumber (bound lyke a thefe) wherin the Membres of hys Myserable Brother were cut of and disperfed, whose corpe was pitifully gored and arrayed in Bloud. If Cæsar were abashed to see himselfe bound and taken prysoner he was more astonned when he perceyued a body so dyfmembred, and which as yet he knewe not. "Alas," (sayd he) "what fighte is this? Is thys the bore whych thou hast caused vs to come hyther to hunt within our very Fort?" The Captayne rising vp, al imbrued wyth bloud, whose face and voyce promised nothing but Murder to the miserable young Gentleman sayd: "See Cæsar, the Body of thine adulterous brother Nicholas, that infamous whoremonger, and marke if this be not his head: I woulde to God that Conrade were here also that ye might all three

be placed at this sumptuous Banquet, which I haue prepared for you. I sweare vnto thee then, that this should be the last day of all the Trinicien race, and the end of your Tirannies and wicked Life. But sith I cannot get the effect of that whych my heart desireth, my minde shal take repast in the triumph which Fortune hath ordeined. Cursed be the mariage and Wedding at Trevio, that hath hyndred me of an occasion so apte, and of the meanes to dispatch a matter of sutch importance as is the ouerthrow of so many tirants." Cæsar at this sentence stode so stil, as whilom dyd the wyfe of Loth, by seing the City on fire, and consume into ashes: by the sight whereof she was conuerted into a stone of Salt. For when he sawe that bloody Pageant, and knew that it was his brother Nicholas, pity and feare so stopt the pipes of his speach, as without complayning himself or framing one word, he suffred his throte to be cut by the barbarous captaine, who threw him halfe dead vpon the corps of his brother, that the bloud of either of them might cry vp to the heauens for so loud vengeance as that of Abel dyd, being slain by the treason of his nearest brother. Beholde the dreadful begynnings of a heart rapt in fury, and of the mind of him that not resisting his fond affections, executed the terrible practizes of his owne braine, and preferring his fantasie aboue reason, deuised sutch ruine and decay, as by these Examples the Posteritye shall haue good cause to wonder. The lyke Cruelty vsed Tiphon towards his brother Osyris by chopping his body in xxvi. gobbets, whereby ensued the decay of him and his, by Orus whome some doe surname Appollo. And troweth the Captayne to loke for lesse mercy of the Brother of the other twayne that were murdered and of the Dukes kindred whome he kept Prysoner? But he was so blynded with Fury, and it may be, led by ambition and desyre to be made Lord of Nocera, that he was not contented to venge his shame on hym whych had offended, but assayed to murder and extinguysh all the Trinicien bloud: the enheritaunce only remaining in them. And to come to the end of his Enterprife, this Italyan Nero, not content wyth these so many slaughters, but thereunto adioyned a new Treason affaying to win the Citizens of Nocera to moue rebellion agaynst their Lord, causing them to assemble before the Forte, vnto whome

vpon the Walles, he vsed this or like Oration: "I haue hitherto (my Maisters) difsembled the lyttle pleafure that my heart hath felt to fee fo many true and faithful Citizens, fubiecte vnder the wyll and unbrydeled luftes of two or three Tyrants: who hauing gotten Power and authority ouer vs, more through our owne folly and cowardyse, than by valiance, vertue and iustice, either in them or thofe which haue difpoyled this countrey of their auncient liberty. I will not deny but pryncipalities of longe entraunce and Foundation deryued by fucceffion of inherytaunce, haue had fome fyce and kynde of Equity, and that Lordes of good lyfe and conuerfation ought to be obeyed, defended and honored. But where inuaſion and feafure is againſt ryght, where the people is ſpoyled and Lawes violated, it is no conſcience to difobey and abolifh futch monſters of nature. The Romanes in the prime age of their Common Wealth ful wel declared the fame, when they baniſhed out of their City that proud race of the Tirant Tarquine, and when they went about to exterminate al the rootes of cruelty and tyrannical power. Our Neighbors the Sicillians once dyd the like vnder the conduct of Dion, againſt the difruled fury and wilful cruelty of Denis the tyrant of Syracuſa, and the Atheniens againſt the Chyl-dren of Piſſſtratus. And ye that be fortified from the ſtockes of thoſe Samnites, which in times paſt fo long heald vp their Heades againſt the Romane force, will ye be fo very cowardes and weake hearted for reſpect of the title of your feignorie as ye dare not with me to attempt a valiant enterpriſe for reducing your felues into libertye, and to expell that vermyne broode of Tyrants which ſwarmed through out the whole regyon of Italy. Wyll yee bee fo mated and dumped, as the ſhadow alone of a fond and inconſtant young man, ſhall holde your Noſe to the Grindſtone, and drawe you at his luſt lyke an Oxe into the ſtall? I feare that if ye ſaw your Wiues and Daughters haled to the paſſetyme and pleaſure of theſe Tirauntes, to glutte the whoredome of thoſe ſtyncking Goate Bucks, more Lecherous and filthy than the ſenſeles ſparrowes: I feare (I ſay) that ye durſt not make one Sygne for demonſtratyon of your Wrath and dyſpleaſure. No, no (my mayſters of Nocera,) it is hyghe tyme to cutte of the Hydra hys heads, and to ſtrangle hym wythin hys Caue. The tyme is come

(I say) wherein it behoueth you to shewe your selues lyke Men, and no longer to dissemble the case that toucheth you so neare. Consyder whether it bee good to follow myne aduise, to repossede agayne the thyng whych is your owne, (that is) the Freedome wherein your Auncesters gloryfied so much, and for which they feared not to hazarde theyr Goodes and Lyues. It wyll come good cheape, if you be ruled by me, it wyll redound to your treble Fame, if lyke Men ye follow my aduise, whych I hope to let you shortly see wythout any great peryll or losse of your Citizens Bloud. I haue felt the effect of the Trinicien Tirannye, and the rigor of their vnrighteous gouernment, which hauing begonne in me, they will not faile, if they be not chastised in time, to extend on you also, whome they deeme to be their slaues. In lyke manner I haue first begon to repress their boldnesse, and to wythstande their leud behaiour: yea and if you Mynde to vnderstande ryght from wrong, an easy matter it will be to perfourme the rest, the time beinge so commodious, and the discouery of the thinge whereof I haue made you so priuy, so conuenient. And know ye, that for the exploit of mine intent, and to bryng you agayne altogether in Liberty, I haue taken the two Lords Nicholas and Cæsar prysonners, attending till fortune do bryng to me the third, to pay him with like money and equall guerdon, that not onely you may bee free and settled in your auncient priuiledge, but my heart also satisfied of the wrong which I haue receiued by their iniustice. Beleue (Maisters) that the thing whych I haue done: was not wythoute open iniury receiued, as by keepyng it clofe I burst, and by telling the same I am ashamed. I wil kepe it secrete, notwithstanding, and shal pray you to take heede vnto your selues, that by vniuersal consent, the mischiefe may be preuented. Deuise what answer you wyll make me, to the intent that I by following your aduise, may also be resolued vpon that I haue to do, without Preiudice but to them to whome the case doth chyefly appertayne." Duryng al this discourse, the wycked Captayne kept clofe the Murder which hee had committed, to drawe the Worme out of the Nocerines Nose, and to see of what Mynde they were, that vpon the intellygence thereof, he myght worke and follow the tyme accordyngly. Hee that had seene the Cytizens of Nocera after that sedyti-

ous Oration, would haue thought that he had heard a murmure of Bees, when issuing forth their Hyues, they light amidst a pleasaunt Herber, adorned and beautified with diuers coloured floures. For the people flocked and assembled togythers, and began to grudge at the imprysonment of ther Lord, and the treason committed by the Lieuetenaunte, thynking it very straunge that he which was a household seruaunt durst be so bold to seafe on those to whome he dyd owe all honour and Reuerence. And do assure you that if he had ben below, as he was vpon the rampire of the Walles, they had torne him into so many pieces, as he had made Gobbets<sup>s</sup> of the Lord Nicholas body. But feing that they could not take him, they went about to seeke the deliuerance of them, whome they thought to be yet alieue : and one of the chyef of the City in the Name of them all shortly and bryefly, aunswered him thus: "If malice did not well discouer it selfe in the fugred and Traiterous composition of thy woordes (O Captayne) it were easy inough for an inconstant People (bent to chaunge, and desirous of inouations,) to heare and do that, which futch a traitor and flatterer as thou art dost propose : but we hauing til now indured nothing of the Triniciens that fauoreth of Tiranny, cruelty, or excesse, we were no lesse to be accused of felony, than thou art guilty of Rebels cryme, by seafyng vpon the Persons of thy Lords, if we shoulde yelde credyt to thy Serpents hissing, or lend aide to thy traiterous practise, thou goest about against them who innoblyng thee are trayterously berieued of that which concerned their reputation and greatnesse. We be an honest People and faithfull Subiects. We wyll not be both Wicked and vnhappy at once, and without cause expell our heads out of our common Wealth. No though they should perpetrate the mischiefes whych thou hast alleaded. Vppon futch Nouelties and straunge facts we shall take newe aduise and Councell. To be short, thou shalt pleasure vs to set our Lordes at Lyberty, and thou like a wyfe man shalt doe thy duety, and satiffy a People which easily can not endure that a subiecte do wrong to those to whome he oweth obedience. And feare not to receiue anye euill of them, nor yet to feele anoyance, for wee wyll take vppon vs by honest meanes to craue pardon for thy fault how haynous so euer it be. But if thou continue thine

offence, be fure that the Lord Conrade fhall be aduertifed, and with all our power we fhall fuccour him by force, to let thee feele the Nature of Treafon, and what reward is incydent to the practizers of the fame." The Captaine albeit he was abafhed with that aunfwere, and faw that it would not be wel wyth him if he did not prouid fpedy remedy and order for his affayres, afwell for the comming of the Lord Conrade, as of the brother of the Duke Camerino, told the Citizens that within three or foure dayes he would giue them a refolute aunfwer, and fo it might be, yelde vnto theyr wylles, and delyuer them whom he had in holde. Thys gentle aunfwere dyd nothyng ftay the Citizens for the accomplifhment of that which they thought beft to do, knowing alfo that the gallant had not commenced that Tragedy, but for other toyes whych his vngracious head had framed for a further intended Myfchiefe, for which caufe they affembled their Councell, and concluded that one fhould ryde in poft to the Lord Conrade, (the third and remnaunt of the Brethren,) that hee myghte come to take order for the delyueraunce of Nicholas and Cæfar whome they thought he had referued ftill alyue in Captiuity. The Nocerines fhewed this curtefie (not but that they woulde gladly haue bene at lyberty, if the way had bene better troden,) afwell for the lyttle trust they reposed in the Captayne, who they thoughte would be no more gentle and faithfull, than he fhewed himfelfe to be loyall to his Maifters, and for that Conrade was well beloued of the Lordes his Neighbors, and fpecially of the impryfoned Duke and his Brother Braccio Montone, who had the Italian men of Warre at his pleafure, and that the Noble men woulde affifte him wyth all their power. Wherefore they confidered that theyr faireft and beft way, for auoiding of factions, was to kepe themfelues trusty and true, and by not hearkening to a Traitor, to bynd their foueraigne Lord with futch duety and obedience, as the vnkindeft man of the world would confeffe and acknowledg for the confequence of a matter of futch importance. The feditious captaine on the other fide, void of hope, and in greater rage than hee was before, perfifted in hys folly, not without forefeeing howe hee myghte faue himfelfe, which hee had pollitikely brought to paffe, if God had not fhortened his waye, by payment of Vfury

for hys Wyckednesse, and by very dilygence of them in whome hee reposed his truste, the manner and howe, immediatly doeth follow. So soone as he had gyuen ouer the Councell of the Citizens and a lyttle bethought him what he had to do, he called before him two yong Men, whom aboute al others he trusted best. To these yong men he deliuered all his Gold, Syluer and Iewels, that they mighte conuey the same out of the iurisdiction of his Lords, to the intente that when he saw hymself in daunger, he myght retire to the place where those gallants had before carryed his furniture, and mounting them vpon two good steedes, he let them forth at the Posterne gate, praying them so soone as they could to retourne aduertysment of their abode, and that spedily he would send after them hys Chyldren and the rest of his moueables, tellyng them that he specially committed his Lyfe and goodes into their hands, and that in time and place he would acknowledg the Benefite don vnto him in that distresse. The two that were thus put in trust for fauegard of hys thyngs, promised vnto him Golden Hilles and Miracles: but so soone as they had lost the sight of theyr maister, they deuised another complotte and determined to breake faith to him, which was forsworne, and who made no conscience not onely to reuolt, but also cruelly to kill his foueraigne Lordes. They thought it better to ryde to Treuio, to tell the Lord Conrade the pitifull end of his brethren, and the imprysonment of the Duke of Camerino, than to seeke rest for him, whome God permitted not to be saued, for his heinous sinne already committed, and for that which he mente to do vpon hys Wyfe. For all the dyligence that the Nocerines had made, yet were the Lieutenante's Men at Treuio before them, and hauyng filled the Eares of Conrade with those heauy Newes, and hys Eyes with Teares, his Mynde with sorrow, and Spyrite with desyre to be reuenged, and as Conrade was about to mount on horse backe wyth the Trayne hee had, the Citizens were arryued to disclose the Imprysonment of his brethren. To whome Conrade made aunswere: "I would to GOD (my friends) that the tirant had ben contented with the litle cruelty wherof you speake, for then I would find the meanes to agree the parties vpon the knowledge of their variance. But (alas) his malice hath passed further, and hath beafully slain my brethren: but I swear

by the almighty God, that if he giue me life, I wil take futch, and so cruell vengeance on him, as he shall be a Glaffe to all his lyke, for punishment of a fault so horrible. Depart my frends, depart and get you home, dispose your watch and gard about the Castell, that the traier do not escape: and assure your selues that this your loue shall neuer be forgotten, and you shall haue of me not a Tirant as he maliciously hath protested, but rather futch a Lord, and better also, than hytherto ye haue me proued." If Conrade had not ben pressed with heauinesse, he had chaunted goodly Songes against the Treason of the Lieuetenaunt, and would haue accused his Brother of indiscretion, for trusting him, whose wyfe hee had abused, and wel did know that he espyed the same. But what? The businesse requyred other things than Words: and extreame folly it is to nippe the Dead with taunts, or with vayne words to abuse the absent, speciall where vltion and reuenge is easy, and the meanes manifest to chastise the temerity of futch, and to be acquitted of the wrong done vnto him that cannot do it hymselfe. Conrade then toke his way to Tuderto, where then remained the Lord Braccio, and thereof was Lord and Gouvernour, and had also vnder his gouernement Perugia, and many other Cityes of the Romane Church, and who wyth the dignity of the great Constable of Naples, was also Prynce of Capua, to him the Trinicien Brother, all be spent wyth Teares and transported wyth choller and grieve, came to demaunde succor for reuenge of the Lieuetenaunt's trespassse, saying: "For what assurance (my Lord) can Prynces and great Lordes hope henceforth, when their very seruants shall ryse, and by constraining their Maisters, make assay to vsurp their seigniories wherein they haue no title or interest? Is this a reuenge of wrong, in steede of one to kill twaine, and yet to wishe for the third to dispatch the World of our race? Is this to pursue his ennimy, to seeke to catch hym in trappe, whych knoweth nothing of the quarell, and to make hym to suffer the payne? My two Brethren be dead, our Cofin Germaine the Duke is in pryson, I am heere comfortlesse, all sad and pensife before you, whome lykewyse this matter toucheth; although not so near as it doeth me, but yet with lyke dishonor. . . Let vs go (my Lorde) let vs goe I beseech you to visite our good hoste that so rudely in-



treateth his Ghefts which come to vifite him, and let vs beare him a reward, that he may tafte of our comming, let vs goe before hee faue himfelfe, that with little trauayle and leffe harme to an other the ribauld may be punifhed, who by his example if he longer liue, may increafe courage both in Seruants to difobey, and in Subiects to rebell, without confcience, agaynft their heads, and gouerners? It is a cafe of very great importaunce, and which ought to be followed with all rigor and cruelty. And he ought neuer to bee fupported, comforted or fauored, which fhall by any meanes attempt to reuolt or arme himfelfe agaynft his Prince, or fhall conftreine him or hir that is his Soueraygne Lord, or Miftrefle. Is not a Prynce conftituted of GOD to be obeyed, loued, and cherifhed of his Subiects? Is it not in him to make and ordaine lawes, futch as fhall be thought needefull and neceffary for Common wealthe? Ought not he then to be obeyed of his fubiectes and vaffals? Ought they then to teach the head, and commaund the chiefeft Member of their body? I do remember a tale (my Lord) recited by Menenius Agrippa that wyfe, and Notable Romayne, who going about to reconcile the commons with the Senate, alleaged a fit and conuenable example. In time paff (quod he) when the partes of Mankinde were at variaunce, and euery member would be a Lord generally confpiring, grudging and alleaging how by their great trauayle, paynes, and carefull miniftery, they prouided all furniture, and mayntenaunce for the belly, and that he like a fluggifh Beaft floode fill, and enioyed futch pleasures as were geuen him, in this murmure and mutine, al they agreed that the hands fhould not minifter, the Mouth fhould not feede, the Teeth fhould not make it feruiceable, the Feete fhould not trauayle, nor Heade deuife to get the fame: and whyleft euery of them did forfake their feruice and obedience, the belly grew fo thin, and the Members fo weake and feeble, as the whole body was brought to extreme decay, and ruine, whereby (fayd Agrippa) it appeareth that the feruice due vnto the Belly (as the chiefe portion of man) by the other Members is moft neceffary, the obeying and nurffing of whom doth infill force and vigor into the other parts through which we doe liue, and bee refrefhed, and the fame difgefsted and difpearfed into the vaynes,

and vitall powers ingendreth mature and fine bloud, and mayntaineth the whole state of the body, in comely forme and order. By which trim comparifon, applyed to ciuile warre was deflected and mollified the stout corage and attempts of the multitude. Euen fo agreing with Agrippa, if the Members grudge, and disobey againft their chiefe, the state muft grow to ruine. To be fhort, in certaine haps a Trayter may be chearifhed, and that hath falified his firft fayth: but treason and periury euermore be detefted as vices execrable. In this deede neyther the thing, nor yet the doer hath any colour of excuse, the trespaffe and caufe for which it is don being confidered. Suffifeth it Sir, for fo much as there is neyther time nor caufe of further difcourfe, what neede we to decide the matter, whych of it felfe is euident? Beholde mee heere a poore Trinician Brother without brethren, ioylefse without a Fort at Nocera. On the other part confider the Duke of Camerino in great diftreffe and daunger, to paffe that frait of death my Brethren did. Let vs goe (I pray you) to deliuer the Captiue, and by reuenging thefe offenses and murders, to fettle my Citty in former State, and freedome, which the villayne goeth about to take from me, by encouraginge my Subiects to reuolt and enter armes, thereby to expel our houfe from the Title of the fame." As Conrade fpake thefe words, and wyth great grauity, and conftancy pronouncing fundry tokens of forrow, the Conestable of Naples, wroth beyond meafure for thefe vnpleafant newes, and full of grieffe and choller againft the trayterous Lieutenant, swore in the hearing of them all, that he would neuer reft one good sleepe vntill that quarell were auenged, and had quited the outrage done to the Lord Conrade, and the wrong which he felt in him for the imprifonment of the Duke of Camerino. So he concluded, and the Souldiours were affembled thorough out all the parts of the Conestable's Lands, vpon the ende of the weeke to march againft the Fort of Nocera, the Cittizens whereof had layd diligent Scout, and watch for the efcape of the Captayne, who without bashfulneffe determined with his men to defend the fame and to proue fortune, making himfelfe beleue that his quarell was good, and caufe iuft to withftand them that fhoulde haue the heart to come to affayle him. The Conftable in the mean time

sent a Trumpet to Nocera to fummon the Captaine to furrender, and to tell the caufe of his reuolt, and at whose prouocation hee had committed fo deteftable a Treafon. The Captaine well affured and boldned in his Wyckedneffe, aunfwered that he was not fo well fortified to make a furrender fo good cheape, and for fo fmall a pryce to forgo his honor and reputation: and furthermore, that his wit was not fo flender, but hee durft deuife and attempt futch a matter without the councel of any other, and that all the deedes and deuifes paffed till that time, were of his owne inuention. And to be enen with the wrong done to his honor by the Lord Nicholas Trinicio, for the violation of his Wiue's Chafity, he had committed the Murders (tolde to Braccio) beyng angry, that all the Tirannous race was not in his hand to fpyll, to the end he mighte deliuer his Countrey, and put the Citizens in Liberty, albeit that fondly they had refufed the fame as vnworthy of futch a Benefite, and well deserued that the Tyrants fould taxe them at theyr pleasure, and make them alfo theyr common flauers and Drudges. The Trumpet warned hym alfo to render to hym the Duke, bicaufe he was guiltleffe of the facte, whych the Captayne regarded fo little as he did the firft demaundes, whych was the caufe (the Company being arriued at Nocera, and the Conftable vnderftandyng the litle accompte the Caftell Gentleman made of his fummons) that the battry the very day of theyr arriual was laid and fhotte againft the place with futch thunder and dreadful thumpes of Canon fhot, as the hardieft of the Mortpayes within, began to faint. But the corage and litle feare of theyr chyefe, retired theyr hearts into theyr bellyes. The breach being made againe, the Conftable who feared to lofe the Duke in the Captaine's Fury, caufed the Trumpet to fummon them wythin to fall to Compoftion, that Bloudfhed might not firre theyr Souldiours to further cruelty. But fo much gayned this fecond warnyng as the firft, for which caufe the nexte day after the affault was gyuen, where if the affaulte was valiant, the refiftaunce was no leffe than bolde and venturous. But what can Thirtie or Fortie Men doe agaynft the Force of a whole Countrey, and where the Generall was one of the moft valiaunte, and wifeft Captaynes of hys tyme and who was accompanied with the floure of the Neapolitane

Fotemen. The assault continued four or five Houres, but in the end the Dead payes not able to sustayne the force of the assaillants, forfooke the Breache, and assaying to saue themselues, the Lieuテナנט retired to the Kipe of the Fort, where his Wife continued prisoner, from the time that the two brethren were slaine. Whiles they without, ruffled in together in heapes amonges the defendauntes, the Duke of Camerino, with his Men, found meanes to escape out of Pryson, and therewithal began furiously to chastise the ministers of the disloyal Captaine, which in little tyme were cut al to pieces. Conrade being within found the Captayn's Father, vppon whom he was reuenged, and killed him with his owne hands. And not content with that, caried into further rage, and fury, he slashed him into gobbets, and threwe them to the dogs. Truly a strange maner of reuenge, if the Captaine's cruelty had not attempted like inhumanity. To bee shorte, horrible it is to repeate the murders done in that sturre, and hurly burly. For they that were of the Captayne's part, and taken, receyued all the straungest and cruellest punishment that man could deuise. And were it not that I haue a desire in nothing to beely the Author, and lesse will to leaue that which he had wrytten vpon the miserable end of those that were the ministers and seruants to the barbarous tirrany of the Captayne, I would passe no further, but conceale that which doth not deserue remembrance, except to auoide the example, which is not strange, the Cruelty of reuenging heart in the nature of Man, in al times growinge to futch audacity, as the torments which seeme incredyble, be lyable to credite as wel for those we reade in auncient Historyes, as those we heare tell of by heare say, and chauncyng in our tyme. Hee that had the vpper hand of his Enimy, not content to kyll, but to eate with his rauinous teeth the heart difentraylde from his aduerfary, was hee lesse furious than Conrade, by makinge Anatomy of the Captayn's Father? And he that thrust Galleazze Fogafe in to the mouth of a Canon, tying his Head vnto his Knees and causing him to be caried by the violent force of Gunpouder into the City from whence he came, to bribe and corrupt certayne of hys enemies army, did he shew himselfe to be more curteous than one of these? Leauē we a part those that be past,

to touch the miserable ende wherewith Conrade caufed the laft tribute of the Captain's fouldyers to bee payd. Now amongs thefe fome were tied to the Tayles of wilde Horfes, and trayned ouer Hedges, and Bushes, and downe the ftiepnes of high Rocks, fome were haled in pieces, and afterwards burnt with great Martyrdome, fome were deuyded and parted alieue in four quarters, other fowed naked wythin an Oxe Hyde, and fo buried in Earth, vp to the Chin, by whych torments they finished their Liues with fearful gronings. Will ye fay that the Bull of Perillus, or Diomedes Horffes, were afflictions more cruell than thefe? I know not what ye cal cruelty, if thefe acts may beare the title of modefty. But all thys, proceeded of wrath and difdayne of eyther partes. The one dyfdayned that the feruaunt fhould be his head, and the other was offended, that his foueraygne Lord fhould affay to take that from him, which his duty commaunded him to keepe. Conrade toke in ill part the treason of the Captayn, who beyond meafure was angry, that the Lord Nicholas had made him a brother of Vulcan's order, and regeftred him in the booke of husbands, which know that they dare not fpeake. In fumme, the one had right, and the other was not without fome reafon, and notwithstanding both furmounted the boundes of man's milde nature. The one ought to content hymfelfe (as I haue fayd) for being reuenged on him that had offended him, and the other of the murder done, duringe the affault without fhewing fo bloody tokens of cruelty and fo apparent euidence of tyranny, vpon the minifters of the brutall and bloody Captayne, who feeing his father put to death with futch Martirdome, and his men fo ftraungely tormented, was vanquifhed with choller, difpayre and impacyence. And albeit the Captayne had no greate defire to hurt his Wyfe, yet was he furmounted with futch rage, as apprehending hir, and binding hir hands and feete, ſhe ſtyl crying him mercy, and crauing pardon for hir faultes at the hands of God and him, he threw hir downe from the higheft Toure of the Kipe vpon the pauement of the Caſtle courte, not without teares and abaſhment of al, which ſaw that monſtrous and dreadful fight, which the Souldiers viewing, they fired the Toure, and with fire and ſmoke forced the Captaine to come forth, and by lyke meanes

made him, his Brother and Chyldren to tread the daunce that his Wyfe before had don. Conrade by and by caufed thofe bodies to be throwne forth for Foode to the Wolues, and other raueninge Beafte, and Byrdes liuing vpon the pray of Carrion, caufing alfo his Brethren honourably to bee buryed, and the Gentlewoman that had borne the penance worthy for hir fault. Sutch was the end of the moft myferable, and worft gouerned loue, that I thinke man hath euer red in wryting, and which doth clearly witneffe, that there is no pleafure fo great but Fortune by chaunging and turning hir Wheele maketh a hundred times more bitter than defire of futch ioy doth yelde delyght. And farre better it were (befides the offence done to God) neuer to caft Eye on Woman, than to bord or proue them, to rayfe futch Sclaunders and Facts which cannot be recounted but with the horreur of the Hearers, nor wrytten but to the great griefe of thofe that muft and ftudy vpon the fame: Notwithftanding for inftitution of our life, both good and bad Examples bee introduced and offred to the view of ech degree, and ftate. To the end that Whoredome may be auoyded, and bodily Pleafure efchued, as moft Mortal and pernicious Plagues that doe infect as well the Body and Reputation of man, as the integrity of the Minde. Befides that ech man ought to poffeffe his own Veffel, and not to couet that is none of hys, vnfeemely alfo it is to folicite the Neyghbor's Wyfe, to procure thereby the difunction and defaite of the whole bond of mariage, which is a Treafure fo deare and precious, and carieth fo greete griefe to him that feeth it defaced, as our Lord (to declare the grauity of the Faët) maketh a comparifon of his Wrath agaynft them which run after ftraunge GODS, and applyeth the honour due vnto him to others that doe not deferue the fame, with the iuft difdayne, and ryghtfull Choller of a Iealous Hufbande, Fraught wyth defpyght to fee himfelfe difpoyled of the Seafure, and Poffeffion onely giuen to him, and not fubieët to any other, whatfoeuer he be. Learne here alfo (O yee hufbands) not to fly with fo nimble Wing, as by your owne authority yee feeke reueng without fearing the follies and fclaunders that may infue. Your sorrow is iuft, but it behoueth that reafon doe guide your fantasies, and bridle your ouer fodayne paffions, to the intent that yee come

not after to sing the doleful Song of repentaunce, like vnto this foolish man, who hauing done more than he ought, and not able to retire without his ouerthrow, threw himselfe into the bottomelesse gulfe of perdition. And let vs all fixe fast in memory, that neuer vruled rage, and wilful choller bringeth other benefit than the ruine of him that suffereth himselfe to runne headlonge into the same, and who thinketh that all that is naturall in vs, is also reasonable, as though Nature were so perfect a worckwoman, as in man's corruption she could make vs Aungels, or halfe Gods. Nature following the instinct of that which is naturall in vs, doth not greatly stray from perfection, but that is giuen to few, and those whom God doth loue and choose. And Vertue is so felldome founde, as it is almost impossible to imitate that perfection. And briefly to say, I will conclude with the Author of this present Hyftory.

Angre is a fury short,  
 To him that can the same excell:  
 But it is no laughing sport  
 In whom that fenfelesse rage doth dwell.  
 That pang confoundeth ech man's wits  
 And shameth him with open shame,  
 His honour fades in frantike fits,  
 And blemisheth his good name.

## THE THIRTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

*The horrible and cruell murder of Soltan Solyman, late the Emperour of the Turkes and father of Selym that now raigneth, done upon his eldest Sonne Mystapha, by the procurement, and meanes of Rosa his mother in lawe, and by the speciall instigation of one of his noble men called Rustanus: where also is remembred the wilful death of one of his Sons named Giangir, for the grieffe he conceiued to see Mystapha so miserably strangled.*

TWENTY two yeares past or thereabouts I translated this present Hystory out of the Latine tongue. And for the rarenes of the Fact, and the difnaturall part of that late Furiose Enemy of God, and his Sonne Christ: I dedicated the same to the right honorable, my speciall good Lord, with al vertues, and nobility, fully accompyhed, the Lord Cobbam Lorde Warden of the cinque Portes, by the name of Sir VVilliam Cobham Knyght. And bycause I would haue it continue in man's remembraunce thereby to renew the auncient detestation, which we haue, and our Progenitors had against that horrible Termagant, and Perfecutor of Christyans, I haue insinuated the same amongs the rest of these Nouels. For of one thing I dare make warrantife, that auncient Writers haue not remembred, nor old Poets reported a more notorious or horyble Tragedy or fact executed against nature, then that vnnaturall murder done by the fayd enemy of Christianity, the late Soltan Solyman, otherwyse called the great Turke. I remember the description of Nero's Parricide vppon his louynge Mother, of purpose to behold the place of his byrth. I call to memory also the wycked Murther of Orestes, on hys Mother Clytemnestra. I also consider the vnfatherly part of Tantalus, who wyth the flesh of his owne sonne Pelops, feasted the Gods. All which are not farre dyfferent from this pestiferous Fury, and may wyth the same, and the lyke bee comparable by any Man heeretofore committed. This Hellysh Champyon hys owne Sonne, of hys owne Seede, Naturally conceaued wythin hys mother's Wombe, vnnaturally in his owne prefence moste Myferably did kill. O pityfull case, But alas, voyde of pitty



to a pyttyleffe man. O cruell fact, but not ouer cruell to him that liued a cruell Man. What Beaft be he neuer fo woode, or Sauage, can fuffer his Yonglings to take harme, mutch leffe to doe them hurte himfelfe? What fierce Lyoneffe can infefte hir owne Whelpe, which with Naturall paines brought it into light? But what doe I ftand vpon Lamentation of the cafe and leaue the bruteneffe of this Madman far bruter then Lyons vnconfidered? The bruteneffe of this fury fo farre exceedeth Beafte, as Reafonable paffeth Vnreafonable. The fury of the Deuill, whom he ferueth, fo raged in his tirannous life, as loe, he flue his owne Sonne. The care of God, and Chrifte was fo farre out of his Sight as hee fubuerted Nature. The libidonous luftes of this Lecherous Infidell, fo furmounted the bounds of reafon, as the fire thereof confumed his owne flefh. This Enemy of Chrifte was fo bewytched as the dotage of his infidelity confented to murder. And as tyranny like a Lord poffeffed his Brayne in huntinge after the bloud of Chriftians, fo Tyranny like an Enchaunter with the Sorcery of Feminine adulation fhed the bloud of his owne begotten. Thus as tyranny was the Regent of his life moft wicked, fo Tyranny was the Plague of his owne generation. For as the Wryter of this Hystory reporteth, it was thoughte that the fame was done by Diuine Prouydence. And lyke as this vnhappy Father was a deadly Enemy vnto Chryft and hys Church, fo this yonge Whelpe was no leffe a fheder of Chriftian Bloud. No doubt a very froward Impe, and a towarde Champion for the diuel's Theatre: and as it is fayd hereafter, fo goodly a yong man in Stature and other externe qualities of the body, as Nature could not frame a better. So excellent, and couragious in Feates of armes as Bellona hirfelfe could not procreate a luftier. This Hiftory in the Latin tongue is written by Nicholas Moffan a Burgonian borne, a man fo well in the warfare of good learning (as it appeareth) as in the feruice of the warres well expert. Who being a Souldiour in Hercules warres (the old Champyon of Chriftendome, and Pagan Enemy, Charles the fifte) was fore wounded and taken Pryfoner in Bulgaria, in the yeare of our Lord 1552, and continued Captiue till September, 1555, almoft three yeares. Whofe Mifery, Trouble, Famine, Colde, and other Torments by him fustayned, during the fayd time

if it should bee declared, perhaps woulde seeme incredible. But when the Turke had kept him in miserable bandes two yeares, and saw he could not obtayne the Raunsome, whych he immefurably requyred, at length sent him to the Castell of Strigon, where for a certayne time he remayned hampered with double chaynes vpon his Necke, Handes, and Feete. And within sometime after hys comming thither he was made to toile in the day, like a common slaue, to hew and carry Woode, keepe Horse, sweepe Houfes, and futch other busines. Which Drudgery, he was glad to doe aswell for exercyse of his Members, which with colde yrons were benommed, as also to get Breade to relieue his hunger. For when hee had done his stinte, his Maister gaue him Bread, Onions, Garlick, Cheefe, and futch other fare: and at Night he was sent agayne to Pryson, where he was matched with a Mate, that for Debte was condemned to perpetual Pryson, of whom he learned many things, aswel of their Lawes, Religion, warlike Affayres, and other maners of the Turkes, as also of the order of this horrible Façt don by Solyman. And by the report of his sayd Companion in pryson, he digested the same into the forme of this history. And after this man had payed hys Raunsome, and was set at lyberty, he arriued into the partes of Chryftedome. The Verity of whych is futch, as it is not onely credyble bycause thys Man dyd wryte it, who was three Yeares there resiaunt, and in manner aforefaid, heard the truth thereof, but also is warranted, by sundry Marchant Men, Trauellers into farre Countreyes, faythfully verifying the same to bee true. And before I drawe to the dyscourse of the Story, I will set downe some of the manners of Solyman's greatest states and fauorites, and the pryncipal offices and honors of that hellish Monarchy. As Mustapha, Machomet, Baiafith, Selim, Gianger, Chrustam, and Hibraham. This Hibraham was so dearely beloued with the Emperour Solyman as he exercysed the Office of Vefri, whych is nexte to the Emperour, the chyefest in degree of honor. Who by increase of that Office, became more wealthy in Treasure then Solyman himselfe, whych when he perceyued, without any respect of the honorable office, or the honor of the party, neglecting in respect of richesse (according to the natural desire of Auarice, wherewith the greedy Appetites of the

stocke are endued) all religion, honour, Parents, countrey, friends or amity, he caused in his own presence, his head to be striken of, adding the treasures of the said Hibrahim to his owne Coasfers, and placed one Rustanus to succede in his office. Besides which honorable places ther be diuers degrees of honor, as Mutchty, which is of that honor with them as the chief bishop or Pope in other Countreies, and of sutch authority with the Emperour, that afwel in time of Peace, as also in Warres, he determineth vpon nothing without the counfel of Muchti. Bascha (which we commonly call VVascha) is the Lieuetenaunt of a Prouince. But forfomutch as all other offices and dignities, depend only vpon the Emperour, and are bestowed as he listeth, none of them hauing any thing proper that he may call his owne: the sayd Baschas in all Prouinces, euery three yeare are chaunged after the disposition of the Emperour, and continue no longer Gouvernors, than the sayd terme, without his special decree, and commaundement. And this change and feveral mutation, is done for two causes. First that notwithstanding the sayd Offices are bestowed by turnes, yet they which are most excellent in prowes of Armes, and Valiaunce, are best in fauour, and are placed in the most fertile Countreyes. But the maner in the disposition of the same Office is now degenerated, for where in tyme pafte the same were bestowed vpon the best Captaynes and Souldyers, in these Days, are through Fauoure and Money, throughly corrupted. So that now amonges them all thynges for Money are venalia, ready to be solde, and yet the same vnknownen to the Emperour him selfe. The other cause, of the alteration and chaunge of the sayd Baschæ, and the Chyefest cause, as I haue learned is, least through theyr longe abode in the sayd Prouinces so to them assigned, by some incydent occasion they myght entre familiarilie wyth the Christians, and in successe of tyme be conuerted. The Turkes haue also amonges them certayne Noble Men which in theyr Language they call Spahy, and it is the first degree of honour, but it hath no discent or succession to the Posterity, and they only deserue the tytyle thereof, whych in Warrelyke Affayres behaue them felues moste Manfully, and who at length are preferred to another degree of honour, and are called Subasche, which worde so farre as I can vnderstande, may be referred to the Title of Baron. Next

to the same Subaschæ here is another called Begg. But here is meete to be knowne howe that woorde is taken amonges them two wayes, for generally all they which excell other in any promotion are called Begg. That is to say Lordes or Maysters: but if it be meant singularly or properly, then it signifieth not simply a Captaine (for they call a Captaine Aga) but also an Earle. And if the sayd Begg chauce to be endued by the Emperour with the order of Knyghthoode, then hee is called Sanggakbegg. And they likewise are accustomed to bee transposed from County to county, as the Baschæ are, and the same do not descend to the heires, but when the Earle is deade. And then both the promotion and county, are by the Emperour giuen to another. And hereby it appeareth that no man hath any thynge proper or his own, and therefore they call themselues, Padiscabumcullari. That is to say, the Emperour's bondmen. Here also I ought to entreat of the manners of the Turkes in theyr Warres, and the fundry offices therein. In what forte they leuy, and muster their Souldiers, the order of their marching, the order in putting the same in array, and by what diligence they vse their Skouts, and Wardes, all which had bene necessary to haue bene spoken of, but that I might not be tedious. And yet of one thing for a conclusion I entend to speake of, which is of the Ianifchari. The sayd Ianifchari are the whole strength of the Turkes battell, who neuer obtayne victory, but the same is attributed to their valiaunce. They bee very expert, and skilfull in the vse of small shot, and great Ordinaunce, and in that kinde of defence and munition, they chiefly excell. And as I haue red, the Turke hath continually in wages thirty m. of the sayd Ianifchari. They haue aboute other many singular Pryuiledges, in so much as the name of a Ianifcharus is in sutch reuerence amongs them, that notwithstanding any offence, or crime, done by them worthy capital death, they in no wise shalbe punished, except before the committing of the offence, they be depriued of their estate by their Captaynes. Thys Priuiledge also they haue aboute others, that vnlesse they lye in Campe, they bee neuer compelled to watch nor warde, without great necessity do force them. And for this they be hatefull and odious to other Souldiours. It is sayd, that all they be Christian men's children. And in those countreyes which he vanquisheth, he chooseth out the Boyes of

the fame, futch as he thinketh meete, and carrieth them away, and bringeth them vp in his owne trade, and lawes, with exercife of feates in armes, and being growen to ripe yeares, and man's ftate, they be alloted amongs the number of Ianifchari. And thus much touching the maners, dignities, and offices of that Turkish broode: Now to the Hyftory. Bee it knowne therefore, that Solyman had of a certayne bonde Woman this Mustapha, to whom from his Youth hee gaue in charge the Countrey of Amafia. Who with his Mother continually refaunt in the fayd countrey, became fo forwards in Feates of armes, as it was fupposed of all men, that hee was giueu vnto their countrey by fome heauenly prouidence. This Mustapha, with his Mother being placed in the fayd Countrey, it chaunced that the Kynge his Father was beyonde meafure wrapt with the beauty of another of his Concubins called Rofa, of whom hee begat foure fonnes, and one daughter. The eldeft of the Sonnes was called Machomet, to whom the Prouince of Caramania was affigned. The fecond, Baiafth, who enioyed the countrey of Magnesia. The third called Selymus, to whom after the death of Machomet the eldeft, the fayd Countrey of Caramania was appoincted. The fourth Iangir, whose furname, by reafon hee was croke backed, notwithstanding his pregnant wit, was Gibbus. And the daughter he beftowed in mariage vpon Rufanus Bafcha, who when Hibrahim was put to death, exercifed the office of Vefiri as is aforefayd (which office we vse to call the Prefident of the Counfayle) and according to his natural difpofition to couetoufneffe, abufing the fayd office, altered and chaunged all maner of thinges belonging to the fame. He diminifhed the Souldiours wages, being by them called Ianifchari. He abated the ftipends of the Captayns, whom they nominate Saniachi. Hee alfo feaffed vpon the Prouinces yearely Taxes and Tributs. And herewith being not fatisfied, he ordayned a ftint vpon the charges of the king's houfhould, wherby he fought, but to accumulate vnto himfelfe, infinite treafures, gotten by deceitfull extortion, through occafion whereof, he was fupposed to be a faythfull, and diligent Seruaunte, and thereby greatly infnuated himfelfe into the king's fauour, little regardinge the hatred and difpleafure of others. In the meane time, this Rofa of whom mention is made

before, perceyuing hir selfe before others to be beloued of the Kinge, vnder the Cloake of devotion declared vnto Muchty (which is the chiefe Bishop of Machomet's religion) that she was affected with a Godly zeale to builde a Temple, and Hospitall for straungers, to the chiefe God, and honor of Machomet: but she was not minded to attempt the same without his aduice. And therefore shee asked whether the same would bee acceptable to God, and profitable for the health of her soule. Whereunto Muchty aunswered: that the worke to God was acceptable, although to hir soule it was nothing auaileable. Adding further, that not onely all hir Substance was at the Kinge's disposition, but hir Life also, being a Bondwoman. And therefore that worke woulde be more profitable to the Kinge. With which aunswere the woman in hir mind dayly being troubled, became very penfiffe, like one that was voyde of all comfort. The King being aduertised of hir sorrow very gently began to comfort hir, affirming that shortely he would finde futch meanes, as she should enioy the effect of hir desire. And forthwith manumised hir and made hir free, a writing and instrument made in that behalfe, according to their custome, to the intent she might not be at commaundement any more to be yoked in bondage. Hauinge in this sorte obtayned this faouere, the sayd Rosa, with a great Masse of Money determined to proceede in hir entended purpose. In the meane season, the Kyng wythout measure being incensed with the desire of the sayd Rosa, as is afore sayd, sent for hir by a messenger, willing hir to repayre to the Court. But the crafty Woman, vnkilful of no pollicy, returned the Messenger with subtile aunswere; which was, that he should admonish the King hir Lord and Soueraygne, to call to his remembraunce aswell the lawe of honesty, as also the precepts of his owne lawes, and to remembre she was no more a Bondwoman and yet she could not deny but hir life remained at the disposition of his maiesty, but touching Carnall copulation to be had agayne with his person, that could in no wise be done, without committing of sinne most heynous. And to the intent he should not thinke the same to be fayned or deuised of hir selfe, she referred it to the iudgement of Muchty. Which aunswere of repulse, so excited the inflamed affections of the Kyng, as setting all

other bufinesse a part, he caused the Muchty to be sent for. And giuing him liberty to aunfwere, he demaunded whether his Bondwomen being once manumifed, could not be knowen carnally without violation of the lawes? Whereunto Muchty aunfwered: that in no wise it was lawfull, vnlesse before he should with hir contract matrimony. The difficulty of which Lawe in futch forte augmented the Kyng's desires, as being beyond measure blinded with Concupiscence, at length agreed to the marriage of the sayd manumyfed woman, and after the Nuptial writings according to the custome were ratified, and that he had giuen vnto hir for a Dowry 5000 Soltan Ducats, the marriage was concluded, not without great admiration of all men, especially for that it was done contrary to the vse of the Ottomane Ligneage. For to eschew Society in gouernment, they marry no free or lawfull Wyues, but in their steades to satisfie their owne pleafures, and libidinous Appetites (wherein most vily, and filthely about any other Nation they chiefly excell) they chose out of diuers Regions of the World the most Beautifull, and fayrest Wenches, whom after a Kyngly forte very honourably they bring vp in a place of their Courte, which they call Sarai: and instruct them in honest, and ciuile maners, with whom also they vse to accompany by turnes, as theyr pleasure most lyketh. But if any of them do conceyue, and bring forth childe, then she about all other is honoured, and had in reuerence, and is called the Soltanes most worthy. And futch after they haue brought forth childe, are bestowed in marriage vppon the Pieres and Nobility, called Baschæ, and Sangacæ. But now to returne to our purpose. This manumifed Woman being aduanced through Fortune's benefit, was esteemed for the chiefe Lady of Asia, not without great happineffe succeeding in al hir affayres. And for the satisfiing of hir ambitious entents, there wanted but only a meane and occasion, that after the death of Solyman, one of hir own children might obtayne the Empire. Where vnto the generosity and good behauiour of Mustapha was a great hinderance, who in deede was a yong man of great magnanimity, and of Wit most excellent, whose Stomach was no lesse couragious, than he was manly in person, and force. For which qualities he was meruayloufly beloued of the Souldiours

and Men of warre, and for his wifedome and iustice very acceptable to the people. All which things this subtile woman considering, she priuely vsed the counsayle of Rustanus for the better accomplishing of hir purpose, knowing that he would rather seeke th'aduancement of his kinsman and the brother of his owne Wyfe as reason was, then the preferment of Mustapha, with whom she certaynely knew that Rustanus was in displeasure. For in the beginning, as he fought meanes to extenuate the liuings of all other (as is aforefayd) so also he went about (but in vayne) to plucke somewhat from Mustapha. Whereby he thought that if he should once obtayne the gouernment, he would skarce forget futch an iniury, and thereby not only in hazarde of his Office, and dignity, but also in daunger of losse of his heade. All which thinges, this wicked woman pondering in hir vngratious Stomacke went about to infer into the King's mynde, no small suspitions of Mustapha, saying that he was ambitioufe and bolde vpon the Fauour and good wil of all men (wherewith in deede he was greatly endued) and reioysing in his force, let no other thing to be expected, then oportunity of time to aspire to the Kingdome, and to attempt the slaughter of his Father. And for the better cloaking of the matter, she caused Rustanus at conuenient tyme, more at large to amplifie and set forwards hir mallice, who alwayes had in charge all principall and weyghty affayres. In whom also was no lacke of matter to accelerate the accusation and death of the yong man. Moreouer to futch as were appoynted to the administration of the countrey of Syria, he priuely declared, that Mustapha was greatly suspected of his Father, commaunding euery of them dilligently to take heede to his estate, and of all futch things as they eyther saw or perceyued in him, with all expedition to send aduertisement, affirming that the more spightfully they wrote of him, the more acceptable it should be to the Kinge. Wherefore diuers times Rustanus being certified of the kingly Estimation, Magnanimity, Wyfedome, and Fortitude of Mustapha, and of his beneuolence and liberality towards all men, wherewith he greatly conciled their fauour, and how the ardent desires of the People, were inclined to hys election: he therefore durst not take vpon him to be the first that should sow the seede of that wicked conspiracy, but deliuering his Letters to the



vngratious Woman, left the rest to the deuise of his vnhappy brayne: But Rosa espying oportunity of time to succede hir vnhappy desyre, ceased not to corrupt the Kyng's mynde, sometimes with promise of the vse of other Women, and sometimes with fundry other adulations. So that if mention was made of Mustapha at any time, she woulde take futch occasion to open the Letters, as might serue most apt for hir purpose. And she was not deceyed of hir expectation. For taking a conuenient time not without teares (which Women neuer want in cloaked matter) she admonished the Kinge of the pearill wherein he stode, remembering amongs other thinges, how his Father Selymus, by futch meanes depryued his owne Father both from his Kingdome, and Life, instantly requiringe him by that example to beware. But these Arguments of suspition, at the first brunt seemed not probable to the Kyng, and therefore by this meanes the deuilifhe Woman could little preuayle, which when hir enuious Stomacke perceyued, she began to direct hir mischieuous mynde to other deuises, seeking meanes with poyson to destroy the yonge man. And there wanted not also, gracelesse persons, prompt and ready to accomplish that mischieuous fact, had not diuine prouidence resisted the same. For Rosa sent vnto Mustapha a sute of Apparell in the name of his Father, which by marueylous craft was enuenimed with Poyson. But Mustapha in no wyfe would weare the sayd apparell before one of his slaues had assayed the same, whereby he prevented the Mischiefe of his vngratious Stepmother, opening to all men the deceit of the poyson. And yet this pestilent Woman ceased not to attempt other Enterprises. She went about to purchase vnto hir the good will and familiarity of the Kyng in futch fort as the like neuer obtayned in the Courte of Ottoman, (for the vsed certayne Sorceries through the helpe of a Woman a Jewe borne, which was a famous Enchauntresse, to wyn the loue of the Kyng, and thereby perswaded hir selfe to procure greater things at his hands) in so much as she obtayned that hir Children by course should be resiant in their Father's Courte, that by theyr continuall prefence and assiduell flattering, they might get the loue of their Father. So that if Mustapha did at any time come to the Court, by that meane she might haue a better meanes to rid him of his life, if not, to tary a time, wherein he should be dispatched

by the help of others. But Mustapha not repaying to the Courte (for the Kyng's chyldren do not vse to go out of their Countreys affigned vnto them, without their Father's knowledge, nor to repayre to Constantinople with any number of men of Warre, to receyue their Inheritance till their Father be deade) she deuifed another mischiefe. For enioying hir former request, she recouered another, also hauing brought to passe that not onely in the Citty, but also in the countrey, hir children should attend vpon theyr Father. Yea, and Giangir the crokebacked should alwayes attend on his father in his Warres. But the Stepmother's deuife for certayne yeares hanging as it were in ballance, at length Fortune throughly fauoured hir wicked endeouours. For the Bascha which had the protection of Mustapha, and the gouernment of the Province of Amasia, (For euery one of the Kyng's chyldren haue one Bascha, that is to say a Liutenaunt, which doe aunswere the people according to the lawes and giue orders for the adminiftration of the Warres, and also euery one of them haue a learned Man to Instruēt them in good dyfcipline, and Pryncely qualities) the sayd Bascha I say deuifed Letters wherein was contayned a certayne treatise of Marriage, betwene Mustapha and the Kyng's Daughter of Persia, and how he had referred the matter to the Ministers of the Temple, to the intent that if it had not good successe, he should be free from all suspition, and sent the same Letters to Ruftanus who greatly reioyled for that he hoped to bring his defyred purpose to good effect. And fearing the matter no longer, incontinently he vttered the same to Rofa, who both together, forthwith went into the Pallace, and discouered the whole matter to the King. And to the intent they might throughly incense the Kyng's mynde with suspicions, that before was doubtfull, and deliberatiue in the matter, to put him out of all doubt, they affyrmed that Mustapha like an ambitioufe man, sought meanes to conspyre his death being incensed like a Madman to the gouernment of his large Empyre, contrary to nature, and Law diuine. And to the intent better credit might be giuen to their subtile Suggestions, they alleaged the Treaty of Marriage betwene Mustapha and the Kyng of Persia, the deadly and auncient enemy of the Ottoman Ligneage. For respect whereof, he ought diligently to take heede

least by conioyning the power of the Perfians with the Sangachi, and Ianifchari, which are the Captayns, and Souldiours, whose good willes he had with his lyberality already tyed to his fauour, in short time, would go about to depriue him of his Kyngdome and Lyfe. With these accusafations and futch lyke they had so farre sturred the king, as he himfelfe fought the Death of his owne Sonne, in manner as foloweth. Therefore in the yere of our Lord 1552, he caused to be published with al expedition throughout his prouinces, that the Perfians had made their vauntes how they woulde inuade the Countrey of Syria, win the Cityes there, and carry away the Captiues, and also would destroy euery place with fier and Sword, in futch fort as no man should withstand them. Wherefore to prouide against the sayd proude and haultie Braggges, hee wasforced to send Rustanus thither with an Armie. The Souldiours being leuied, hee pryvily commaunded Rustanus in as secret manner as hee could and without any Tumulte to lay handes vpon Mustapha, and to bryng hym bound to Canstantinople. But if he could not conueniently bryng that to passe, then to dispatch hym of hys Lyfe by futch meanes as he could. Rustanus receuyng thys wycked and cruell Commaundement, marched towardes Syria wyth a power. Wher when he arryued Mustapha, hauing knowledge thereof setting all other busynesse a parte, beyng accompanied with the Lustyest and best appoynted Men of Warre in al Turkey to the Numbre of feuen Thousande, hee directed his Iorney also towardes Syria. Whereof when Rustanus had vnderstandyng, and perceyued hee could not well accomplysh the wycked desire of the Kyng, immediatly returned backe agayne to Constantinople in futch haste that hee durste not abyde the sight of the Duffe rered into the Ayre by Mustaphae's Horfe Men, and much lesse hys commyng. When the Souldyers were retyred Rustanus declared to all Men that the Countrey was in good quiet, and pryuely repayed to the Kyng, and vttered to hym the cause of hys retourne, addyng further, that as farre as hee could see by manyfeste Sygnes, and Coniectures, the good Wylles of all the Armye were inclyned to Mustapha, and for that cause in so daungerous an Enterpryse, hee durste not aduenture with open Warres, but lefte all to the confideration of hys Maiefty. This

reporte bred to the cruell Father (who nothyng degenerated from the Naturall Tirannye of hys Auncestors) greater Suspitions: for reuengement whereof he most wickedly toke further aduise. The yeare folowyng he commaunded an huge Army to be leuied once againe makyng Proclamation that the Perfians with a greater Power would inuade Syria, and therefore thought it mete that he himself for the Common sauegarde of them all, ought personally to repayre thither with a power to withstande the inuaders of his Ennemies. The Army being assembled, and al furnitures prouyded in that behalfe, they marched forwardes, and within fewe dayes after the cruell Father folowed. Who beyng come into Syria, addressed a messenger to Mustapha, to commaund him forthwith to repayre vnto him, then being encamped at Alepes. And yet Solymane could not keepe secret the mortal hatred he bare to hys Sonne from others, although he employed dilygent care for that purpose, but that the knowledge thereof came to the Eares of one of the Baschæ, and others of Honour. Emonges whome Achmet Bascha pryuily sent Woorde to Mustapha, to the intent he myght take the better heede to hymself. And it seemed not without Wonder to Mustapha, that his Father, wythout necessary cause, shoulde arrayue in those partes wyth so great a Number. Who notwithstanding, knowing hymselfe innocente, although in extreame sorrow and penifenes of mynd determyned to obey hys Father's Commaundement although he shoulde stand in Daunger of hys Lyfe. For hee esteemed it a more honest and laudable part to incurre the Peryll of death in Obedience to hys Father, than to lyue in contumelye by disobedyence. Therefore in that great anxietye and care of Mynde, debatyng many thinges wyth hymselfe: At length he demaunded of a learned Man whych continually was conuersaunt wyth hym in his House (as is aforesayde,) whether the Empyre of the whole World or a vertuous Lyfe ought rather to be wyshed for. To whom this Learned Man most Godly aunswered. That hee which dilygently weyed the Gouvernement of this Worlde, shall perceiue no other Felycitye therein then a vayne and foolyish apparence of goodnesse. "For there is nothyng" (quod he) "more frayle or vnfore then the Worlde's prosperity. And it bryngeth none other Fruicts but Feare,

forrow, troubles, suspicions, murders, Wickednesse, vnrighteousnes, spoyle, Pouerty, Captiuity, and such lyke which to a man that affecteth a blessed Lyfe, are in no wyse to be wyshed for. For whose sake who so list to enioy them, leaseth the happines of that Lyfe. But to whome it is gyuen from aboue to way and consider the frayltye and shortnes of thys state (which the Common People deemeth to be a Lyfe) and to resist the vanities of the World, at length to embrace vertue, to them truely in heauen there is a Place assigned and prepared of the highest God, where hee shall inherite perpetuall Ioyes, and Felicity of the Lyfe to come." Wyth which aunswer Mustapha beyng somewhat prycked in conscience wonderfully was satisfied, as being tolde of him which seemed by a certaine Prophecy to pronosticate his end. And tarrying vpon no longer disputation, immedyately dyrected his Journey towards his cruell Father. And vsing that expedition he could, arriued at the place where his Father encamped, and not farre from the same he pitched his paulion. But this expedite arriual of Mustapha did inculcat a greater suspicion in the wycked Father. And Rustanus was not behynde wyth lyes, and other subtyll informations to fet forwardes the same. And after he had called together the common Souldiours and the chiefe men of Warre in the Army, hee sente them to meete wyth Mustapha, who without any tarrying most readily obeyed his commaundement, to put themselves in readines. In the mean time this crafty Verlet, shewing by outward countenance the hid enuy that lay secrete in his heart, forthwith repaired into the Kynge's Paulion, and without shame or honesty told the King, howe almost euery one of the principall Souldiours of their owne accorde went to meete Mustapha. Then the King being troubled in mind, went forth of his tent, and persuaded with himself that Rustanus Wordes were true. Now Mustapha lacked not fondry tokens of his vnhappy fate: For not thre daies before he should take his iorney about the breake of day in the morning being in slepe, he dreamed that he saw Machomet clad in gorgious apparel, to take him by the hand, and lead him into a most pleasant place beautified with sundry turrets and sumptuous buildinge hauing in it a most delectable gardein, who shewing hym al those things with his finger, spake these

wordes: "Here" (quod he) "doe they rest for euer, which in the World haue lyued a Godly and iust Life, and haue bene Aduancers of Law and Iustice, and contempners of vice." And turning his face to the other syde, he saw two swifte and broad Riuers, the one of them boiled more blacke then Pitch. And in the sayd Riuers many were drowned, whereof some appeared aboue Water crying with horrible voices, Mercy, Mercy. "And there" (quod he) "are tormented all futch, which in the World most wyckedly haue committed Mischiefe." And the chiefe of them he fayded were Prynces, Kinges, Emperours, and other great Men. With that Mustapha awaked and calling the saied learned Man vnto him, vttered his dreame. And paufyng a lyttle whyle (for the superficious Machometistes attribute much Credite to dotage of dreames) being ful of sorrow and pensifnesse, at length answered That the vision was very dreadful, for that it pronosticated extreame peril of his life. Therefore he required him to haue diligent respect thereunto. But Mustapha beyng of great valiaunce and fortitude, hauing no regard to the aunfwer aforesaid, courageously replied with these wordes: "Shall I suffer my self to be vanquished with vaine and childish feare? Nay I wil rather take a good heart, and make hast to my Father. For I am assured that alwayes from time to time I haue honored his maiesty accordyng to my duty, in so much as neyther Fote trauelled, nor Eye looked, much lesse heart thought agaynst his will to desyre or couet to raigne, except it had pleased the highe God to haue called hys Maiesty from thys Lyfe to a better. And besydes that my Mynde was neuer bente after hys Death to beare rule, excepte Generall Electyon of all the Army, to the intent I myghte entre the Imperiall Seate wythout slaughter, Bloudshed, or any other cruell fact, and thereby preferue the friendship of my Brethren inuiolat, and free from any spot of hatred. For I alwayes determyned, and chose rather (since my Father's pleasure is so) to end my Life like an obedyent Child, than continually to raigne, and be counted of al men, obstinate and disobedyent, especially of mine enimies." When he had spoken those wordes, he made hast to his father. And at his arriual to the Campe, so sone as he had pitched his Tent he apparelled himself al in white, and putting certain letters into his

bofome, which the Turkes vse to do, when they go to any place (for in supersticions they vse maruailous dotage) he proceded towards his father, entending wyth reuerence (as the manner is) to kiffe his hand. But when hee was come to the entry of the tent, he rememberd himself of his Dagger which he wore about him, and therefore vngirding himself he put it of for auoiding of al fuspicion. Which don, when he was entred the Tent, he was very curteously (with futch reuerence as behoued) welcomed of his father's Eunuches. And when he saw no man else, but the seat royal, where his father was wont to fitte readye furnished, with a forrowful heart stode stil, and at length demaunded where his Father was. Who answered that forthwith hee would come in prefence. In the meane seafon he saw feuen dombe men (which the Turke vseth as Instrumets to kepe his secrets, and priuily to do futch murthers as he commaundeth) and therewith immediately was wonderfully mafed saying: "Beholde my present Death." And therewith stepped aside to auoide them, but it was in vaine, For being apprehended of the Eunuches and garde, was by force drawn to the place appointed for him to loose hys Lyfe, and sodainly the domb Men fastened a Bowstryng about his Necke. But Mustapha, some what struiing, requyred to speak but two Wordes with his Father. Which when the wicked parricide his Father hearde, beholding the Cruell Spectacle on the other side of the Tente, rebuked the domb Men, saying: "Wil you neuer execute my Commaundement, and doe as I bid you? Wyll you not kyll the Traitor, which these ten years space would not suffer me to slepe one quyet Night?" Who when they harde him speake those cruell Woordes, the Eunuches and domb Men threw him prostrate vpon the ground, and cording the string with a double knot most pitifully strangled him. Which wycked and cruell facte being done, the Bafcha that was Lieuetenaunt of Amafia was also apprehended by the Kynges Commaundement, and likewyse beheaded in hys owne Prefence. This Facte also commytted, he caused to be called before hym Gianger the Crokebacke, who was Ignoraunte of that was done, and Iestyng wyth hym as though hee had done a thynge worthie commendation, bad him to go and meete his Brother Mustapha: who with a ioyful cheere made hast to meete him.

But when he came to the place and saw his infortunate Brother ly frangled and dead vpon the earth, it is impossible to tell with what sorrow he was affected. And he was scarce come to the place, but his wicked Father sent Messengers after him, to tell him that the Kyng had giuen him all Mustapha, his Treasures, Horsemen, Bondmen, Pauillions, Apparell : Yea, and moreouer the Prouince of Amasia. But Giangir conceyuing extreme sorrow for the cruell murder of his deere brother, with lamentable teares spake these words. "Oh cruell and wicked Dogge : yea, and if I may so call my father, Oh Traytor most pestilent, do thou enioy Mustapha, his Treasures, his Horses, Furnitures, and the sayd Countrey to. Is thy heart so vnnaturall, cruell, and wicked, to kill a yongue man so notable as Mustapha was, so good a Warriour, and so worthy a Gentleman as the Ottoman house neuer had or shall haue the like, without any respect of Humanity or Zeale naturall ? By Saynct Mary I neede to take heede least hereafter in like maner thou as impudently do triumph of my death, being but a crokebacke and deformed man." When hee had spoken theese wordes, plucking out his Dagger, he slew himselfe. Whereof when the Emperour had aduertisement, he conceyued inspeakable sorrow. But for al that, his sorrowfull heart vanquished not his couetouse minde. For he commaunded all Mustaphes Treasure, and other Furnitures to bee brought into his Tent. And the Souldiours thincking the same should be giuen amongs them made as much haste to dispatche his commaundement. In the meane tyme Mustaphes Souldiours (not knowing what was become of their Mayster) seeing sutch a number runue in heapes without order came forth of their Camp to withstande their foolish tumult, who very manfully, not without much slaughter withstoode the same. And when the Fame of that Tragical tumult was bruted amongs the King's souldiers, (who perceyuing the same more and more to waxe hot,) they went forth to succour their fellowes, but the Onset being giuen on all sides, the fight on both parts was so fierce, as in short space there were slayne very neere the number of two thousande men besides the hurt and wounded, whereof the number was greater. Howbeit this Broyle had not bene thus ended, had not Achmat Bascha, a graue and wise man, and for his experimentes in the Warres of great aucthority amongs the



fouldiers driuen them back, and repressed their fury. Who turning himself towards Mustaphe's fouldiers with smiling countenance and milde words appeasing their furious stomacks spake these wordes: "Why my deere brethren and freends wil yee now degenerate from your olde accustomed wisedome, sufficiently tried in you these many yeares past, and will now resist the commaundment of the great Soltan the lord and soueraigne of vs all? I cannot chuse (as God shal help me) but meruayle what should moouue you whom hitherto I haue proued to be so notable and valiant men, and in this ciuile conflict, you should bende your force vpon your own frends, and raise vp sutch a spectacle to the Ottoman enemy, against whom heretofore you haue very prosperously and manfully fought, and therewith by mutuall slaughter to make them reioyse whom heretofore with the like, you haue made heauy and penfive. Therefore my fellowes as you tender your own valiance and Magnanimity, take heede, that by your own folly you do not lese the estimation of your wonted fortitude and wisedome, wherein hitherto you haue excelled all men. And referue your force, which you now more than inough haue vsed amongs your owne Fellowes till you come against your Enemies, where you shall haue a more laudable, and better occasion to vse it." With these woordes and the like spoken by Achamat Basca, the Souldiours were somewhat appeased, and all thinges were franckely suffered to bee carried out of Mustapha hys Pavyllion to the Kynge's. But when the death of Mustapha came to the knowledge of the Ianischari, and the rest of the Army, forthwith began another sedition. And after the Trumpets had blowen the onfet, there was sutch a Tumult and styrre amongs the Souldiours, mixte wyth fundry Lamentations, and Teares, that like Madmen with great violence, they ran into the Courte, with theyr Swords naked in theyr hands ready bent to strike. And this renewed and sudden styrre so terrified the Knyg, that hee wiste not what to do who for all the dampes would needes haue fled. But being perswaded of his Counselloures to tarry, hauing through Neceffity, gotten occasion to attempt that whych in the tyme of hys most security he durst scarce haue enterprysed, went forth, and with sterne Countenance, spake to hys Souldyers in this manner. "What rumors, what tumultes, and what mad partes are these, wherewith

so proudly in this sort ye disquiet me? What meane these enflamed countenances? What signify these haughty gestures, these proude and angry lokes? Doe you not remembre that I am your King that hath Power and Authority to gouerne and rule you? Are you determynd in this sort to spot your Auncyent and inuincible valiaunce, and the notable Warrefare of your predecesfours, with the bloud of your Emperour?" And while the King was speaking these Words, the souldiers boldly answered, how they confessed him to be the same, whome many yeares ago they chose to be their Kinge, and for that hee alleaged how they had with their good seruice in the Warres acquired vnto him many great conquests and had diligently kepte the same: all that they did of purpose that he should vse towards them againe a godly Authority and iust Gouvernement, and not vnaduisedly should lay his bloody handes vpon euery iuste Man, and so to staine and defile himselfe with the Bloud of Innocents. And againe, where he laide to their charge, that they were issued from their Cabanes armed with Weapon, they affirmed the same to be done in a iust quarell, euen to reuenge the slaughter of innocent Mustapha, and for that they ought not to haue sutch a Kynge as should worke his anger vpon them that had not deserued it. Further they required that they might cleare themselues openly of the offence of Treason, whereof falsly they were accused by Mustapha, his Enimies, and to haue their accuser to be brought forth in open presence. And sayde more that before he personally did appeare before the Iudgement Seat Face to Face to giue euidence, *sub talionis pœna*, accordinge to the Law, they would not vnarme nor yet disafemble themselues. [And whiles these things were debated betwene the emperor and the souldiers, the cruelty of the fact, so moued] all men to teares, that the Kyng him selfe seemed to take great repentaunce for his horrible deede, and promysed the Souldiours that they should haue their requests, and went about with fayre perfwasions to mittigate (as much as lay in him) their furious stomakes. Howbeit the Souldiours gaue diligent heede to their watch and warde euery man in his place appoynted, that the king might not secretly conuey himselfe away, and so deceyue theym of his promisses, and the expectation of their requests. In

the meane time the Kyng depriued Ruftanus of all his offices, and promotions, and tooke away from him the priuy Signet whereof he had the keeping, and deliuered it to Achmat Bascha. Ruftanus amafed with the terror and feare of the Souldiours, thinking himfelfe scarce in good security amongs his owne men, fecretly conueyed himfelfe to Achmat Bascha his Pauilyon, and asked counfell of him what was beft to be done in fo doubtfull, and daungerous a cafe. Who aduifed him therein to haue the kyng's aduice, and as he commaunded him fo in any wyfe to doe. Which counfayle marueyloufly fatiffied the mynde of Ruftanus. And without any longer delay by certaine Meffengers which were his faythfull, and familier Freends required the King's aduife. Whereunto the King aunfwered that forthwith without longer tariaunce he fhould auoyde his fyght, and abfent himfelfe from his Campe. Who replied that without Money and other furnitures, he could not conueniently execute hys commaundement. But the King had hym to do what hee lift, for he woulde in no wife giuee hym leaue to haue any longer time or fpace to deliberate the matter. At length Ruftanus without further ftay, as guilty of his curfed deuifes, accompanied with eyght of his truifteft Freends directed his Iorney to Constantinople, and vſing much expedition (as feare in fearefull matters putteth ſpurre to the horſe) came to Constantinople: and there with Roſa and other the Conſpiratours expected the euent of Fortune not without daunger of their liues. Moreouer it was ſayd that Solyman, whoſe Conſcience bewrayed the beaſtlynes of his abhominable facte, being pricked with a ſuperficiouſ repenſance, determined to trauel on pilgrimage to Mecha, and proceeding in his voiage, he was driuen by meanes of the Perfians force to go to Hieruſalem there to offer ſacrifice for the death of his Sonne, which they call Corba. But now to conclude, and ſomewhat to ſpeake of Muſtapha or rather by way of admonition this one thing to ſay of him, that the ſayde Muſtapha was ſo acceptable and well beloued of all men for his warlike experience, and for his redineſſe to ſheade Chriſtian blood, that they ſuppoſed the like would neuer be in the Ottoman houſe more towards to enlarge, and amplyſie their Empyre, or promyſed greater things for the perſourmance thereof. In ſo much as

then they difpayred fo of their Enterprifes, as this Prouerbe rofe vp amongs them, Gietti Soltan Mustapha, which fignifieth an vtter difpayre in thinges which they thought before to goe about. Therefore we haue good caufe to reioyce for the death of thys cruell enemy that fould haue raygned, and to thinck the flaughter of him not to be done without God's fpeciall prouidence, who in this forte hath prouided for vs. And at length to be wife, and abftayne from ciuile Warre and diffencions. And with common Force to fet vppon this wicked Tarmegant, confidering that he is not only a generall Ennimy to our Countrey and Lyfe, but alfo to our Soules. Which thing if we do, it will not be fo hard a matter to withftand the force of this enemy of Chriftendome, as if we doe not, it wyll be dangerous through our contiuaall difcorde to giue him occafion to inuade the reft of Europe, and fo with his tyranny bring the fame to vtter deftruction, which God that is omnipotent forbid, who bring vs to vuity through his Sonne Iefus Chrift,

Amen.

## THE THIRTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

*The great curtesie of the Kyng of Marocco, (a Citty in Barbarie) toward a poore Fisherman, one of his Subiects, that had lodged the Kyng, being strayed from his Company in hunting.*

FOR somutch as the more than beastly cruelty recounted in the former Hyftory, doth yelde some sowre taste to the minds of those that be curteous, gentle and well conditioned by nature, and as the Stomacke of him that dayly vfeth one kinde of meate, be it neuer so delycate and daynty, doth at length lothe, and disdayne the same, and vtterly refuseth it: I now chaunge the Diet, leauing murders, slaughters, depayres, and tragicall accidents, and turne my stile to a more pleasaunt thing, that may so well serue for instruction of the noble to follow vertue, as that which I haue already written, may rise to their profit, warely to take heede they fal not into sutch deformed and filthy faults, as the name and prayse of man be defaced, and his reputation decayed: if then the contraries be knowne by that which is of diuers natures, the villany of great cruelty shalbe conuerted into the gentleness of milde curtesie, and rigor shalbe condemned, when with sweeteness and generosity, the noble shall assaye to wyn the heart, seruice, and affected deuotion of the basest sorte: So the greatness and nobility of man placed in dignity, and who hath puissance ouer other, consisteth not to shew himselfe hard, and terrible, for that is the manner of Tyrants, because he that is feared, is consequently hated, euill beloued, and in the ende forsaken, of the whole World, which hath bene the cause that in times past Prynces aspiring to great Conquests, haue made their way more easie by gentleness and Curtesie, than by fury of armes, stablishing the foundations of their dominions more firme and durable by those meanes, than they which by rigor and cruelty haue sacked townes, ouerthrowne Cities, depopulated Prouinces, and fatted Landes with the bodies of those, whose liues they haue deprived by dent of sword, with the gouernement and authority ouer other, caryeth greater subiection, than puissance. Where-

fore Antigonus, one of the successors of great Alexander (that made all the Earth to tremble vppon the recitall of hys name) seeing that hys Sonne behaued himselfe arrogantly, and wythout modesty to one of hys Subiects, reproued and checked hym, and amongs many wordes of chastisement and admonition, sayd vnto him: "Knowest thou not my Sonne, that the estate of a Kyng is a noble and honourable feruitude?" Royall wordes (in deede) and meete for a Kyng: For albeit that eche man doth reuerence to a Kyng, and that he be honoured, and obeyed of all, yet is hee for all that, the Seruaunt, and publike Mynister, who ought no lesse to defend hys Subiect, than the Subiect to do him honour and Homage. And the more the Prynce doth humble himselfe, the greater increafe hath his glory, and the more wonderfull he is to euery Wyght. What aduanced the Glory of Iulius Cæsar, who first depressed the Senatorie State of government at Rome? Where his Victories atchieued ouer the Galles and Britons, and afterwards ouer Rome it selfe, when he had vanquished Pompee? All those serued his tourne, but his greatest fame rose of his Clemency and Curtesie: By the whych Vertues hee shewed himselfe to be gentle, and fauorable euen to those, whom hee knewe not to loue him, otherwise than if hee had bene their mortall Enemy. His Successors as Augustus, Vespasianus, Titus, Marcus Aurelius, and Flauius were worthily noted for clemency: Notwithstanding I see not one drawe neere to the great Courage, and Gentleness, ioyned wyth the singuler Curtesie of Dom Roderigo Viuario the Spanyarde Surnamed Cid, towarde Kyng Pietro of Aragon that hindred his expedityon agaynst the Moors at Grenadoe. For hauing vanquished the sayde King, and taken hym in Battell, not onely remitted the reuenge of his wrong, but also suffered hym to go wythout raunsome, and tooke not from him so much as one Forte, esteemyng it to bee a better exploite to winne futch a King with curtesie, than beare the name of cruell in putting him to Death, or seasing vpon his land. But bicause acknowledging of the poore, and enriching the smal, is commendable in a Prynce, than when he sheweth himselfe gentle to his lyke, I haue collected this discourse and facte of Kynge Mansor of Marocco, whose Chyldren (by subtile and fained religion) Cherif

succeded, the Sonne of whom at this day inioyeth the kingdomes of Su, Marocco, and the most part of the isles confinyng vpon *Æthiopia*. This history was told by an Italian called Nicholoso Baciadonne, who vppon this accydent was in Affrica, and in trafike of Marchandyse in the Land of Oran, situated vppon the coast of the South seas, and where the Geneuois and Spanyards vse great entercourse, bicause the countrey is faire, wel peopled, and wher the inhabitants (although the soyle be barbarous) lyue indifferent ciuilly, vsing great curtesie to Straungers, and largely departing their goodes to the poore, towards whom they be so earnestly bente, and louing, as for theyr Lyberality and pytiful almesse, they shame vs Christians. They meinteine a greft nombre of Hospitales, to receiue and intertaine the poore and neady, wherein they shew themselues more deuout than they that be bounde by the law of Iesus Christe, to vse Charity towards theyr brethren, with more curtesie and greater myldnesse. These Oraniens delight also to record in wryting the successe of thinges that chaunce in their time and carefully referue the same in Memorie, whych was the cause that hauyng registred in theyr Chronicles, (wrytten in Arabie letters, as the most part of those Countreyes do vse) this present history, they imparted the same to the Geneuois marchants of whom the Italian author confesseth to haue receuyed the copie. The cause why the Geneuois marchant was so diligent to make the enquirie, was by reason of a City of that prouince, builte through the chaunce of thys Historye, and which was called in theyr Tongue, Cæsar Elcabor, so much to say as, A great Pallace. And bycause I am assured, that curteous Myndes will delight in deedes of Curtesie, I haue amonges other the Nouelles of Bandello, chofen by Francois de Belleforest and my self, discoursed thys, albeit the matter be not of great importance. For greater thynges and more notorious curtesies haue bene done by our own Kinges and Prynces. As that of Henry the eight a Prynce of notable memorye in hys Progresse into the North the xxxiii. yeare of his raigne, when he dydayned not a pore Miller's houe being stragled from his trayne, busily pursuing the Hart, and ther vnknowne of the Miller, was welcomed with homely cheare, as hys mealy houe was able for the time to minister, and afterwarde

for acknowledging his willing Mynde, recompenced him wyth daynties of the Courte, and a Pryncely rewarde. Of Edwarde the thyrde, whose Royall Nature was not displeafed pleasauntly to vse a Waifaring Tanner, when deuyded from his Company, he mette hym by the way not far from Tomworth in Staffordshire, and by cheapening of his welfare steede (for stedineffe sure and able to carry him so farre as the stable dore) grewe to a price, and for exchaunge the Tanner craued five shillings to boote betwene the Kings and his. And when the King satisfied with disport, desired to shew himself by founding his warning blaste, assembled all hys Traine, and to the great amaze of the poore Tanner, (when he was guarded with that Troupe) he well guerdoned his good Pastime and familiar dealing, with the order of Knighthoode and reasonable reueneue for the maintenaunce of the same. The lyke Examples our Chronicles, memory, and reporte plentifully doe auouche and witnesse. But what? this Hyfstory is the more rare and worthy of notyng, for respect of the People and Countrey, where feldome or neuer Curtesie haunteth or findeth harborough, and where Nature doth bryng forth greater store of monsters, than thinges worthy of praise. This great King Manfor then was not onely the Temporall Lord of the Countrey of Oran and Marocco, but also (as is faide of Prete Iean,) Byshop of his Law and the Mahomet Priest, as he is at thys Day that raighneth in Feze, Sus, and Marocco. Now thys Prynce aboue all other pleasure, loued the game of Hunting. And he so much delighted in that paffe-time, as sometyme he would cause his Tentes in the myd of the desertes to be erected, to lye there all Nyght, to the end, that the next day he might renew his game, and defraud his men of idleneffe, and the Wild beafts of rest. And this manner of Life he vsed still, after he had done Iustice and hearkened the complaintes for which his Subiectes came to disclose thereby their griefes. Wherein also he toke so great pleasure, as some of our magistrates do seeke their profite, whereof they be so squeymishe, as they be desirous to satisfy the place whereunto they be called, and render all men their righte due vnto them. For wyth their Bribery and Sacred Golden Hunger, Kings and Prynces in these dayes be ill serued, the people wronged, and the wycked out of



feare. There is none offence almost how villanous so euer it be, but is washed in the Water of Bribery, and clenfed in the holly drop, wherewith the Poets faine Iupiter to corrupt the daughter of Acrifius fast clofed within the brafen Toure. And who is able to resist that, which hath subdued the highest powers? Now returne we from our wanderings: This greate Kyng Manfor on a day assembled his People to hunt in the marish and fenny Countrey, that in elder age was not farre of from the City of Alela, which the Portugalles holde at this present, to make the way more free into the Isles of Molucca, of the most part wherof their King is Lord. As he was attentife in folowing a Beare, and his pastime at the best, the Elements began to darke and a great tempest rose, such as with the storme and violent Winde, scattered the trayne far of from the King, who not knowing what way to take, nor into what place he might retire, to auoid the tempest, the greatest that he felt in al his life, would with a good wil haue ben accompanied as the Troiane Æneas was, when being in like pastime and fear he was constrained to enter into a Caue wyth his Queene Dido, where he performed the Ioyes of hys vnhappy Maryage. But Manfor beeynge without Companye, and wythout any Caue at Hande, wandered alonges the Champayne so carefull of hys Lyfe for feare of Wylde Beastes, whych flocke together in those desertes as the Courtiers were pensiuē, for that they knew not whether theyr Prynce was gone. And that which chiefly grieved Manfor was hys being alone without guide: And for all he was well mounted, he durst passe no further for fear of drownynge, and to be destroyed amiddes those Marshes, whereof all the Countrey was very ful. On the one side he was fryghted with Thunderclaps, which rumbled in the ayre very thicke and terryble: On the other side the lightning continually flashed on his face, the roing of the Beastes appalled him, the ignoraunce of the way so astonued him, as he was affraide to fall into the running Brokes, which the outrageous raignes had caused to swell and ryse. It is not to be doubted, that orifons and prayers vnto hys greate prophet Mahomet were forgotten, and doubtfull it is whether he were more deuout when he went on Pilgrimage to the Idolatrous Temple of Mofqua. Hee complained of ill lucke, accusing Fortune, but chiefly hys

owne folly, for giuing himfelfe fo much to hunting, for the de-fire whereof, hee was thus fraggled into vnknownen Countreyes. Sometimes he raued and vomytted his Gall agaynst his Gentlemen and houfhold feruaunts, and threatned death vnto his garde. But afterwards, when reafon ouerfhadowed his fenfe, he faw that the tyme, and not their neglygence or little care caufed that difgrace. He thoughte that his Prophet had poured downe that tempeft for fome Notable finne, and had brought him into fuch and fo dangerous extremity for his faults. For which caufe he lifted vp his Eyes, and made a thoufand Mahomet mowes, and Apifh mocks (according to theyr manner.) And as he fixed his eyes aloft vp to the heauens, a flaſh of lightning glaunched on his Face fo violently, as it made him to holde downe his head, lyke a lyttle Chyld reprovod of his maifter. But he was further daunted and amazed, when he faw the night approche, which with the darkenes of his cloudy Mantell, ftayed hys pace from going any further, and brought him into fuch perplexitye, as willingly he would haue forfaken both his hunting and company of his Ser-uants to be quit of that Daunger. But God carefull of good Myndes (with what law fo euer they be trayned vp,) and who maketh the Sunne to fhine vpon the iuft and and vniufte, prepared a meanes for his fauegarde, as you ſhal heare. The Af-fricane King beyng in his traunce, and naked of all hope, necef-ſity (which is the cleareft loking glaſſe that may be found,) made him diligently to loke about, whether he could fee any perfone by whome he might attayne ſome ſecuritie. And as he thus bent himfelfe to difcry all the partes of the Countrey, he faw not far of from him, the glimpe of a light which glimmered out at a little Window, whereunto he addreſſed himfelfe, and perceiued that it was a ſimple Cabane ſituate in the middeft of the Fennes, to which he approached for his fuccor and deſenſe in the time of that tempeft. He reioyfed as you may think, and whither his heart lept for ioy, I leaue for them to iudge which haue affayed like daungers, how be it I dare beleue, that the ſaylers on the ſeas feele no greater ioy when they arriue to harborough, than the king of Marocco dyd: or when after a Tempeft, or other peril, they diſcrye vppon the prow of their ſhyppes, the bryghtneſſe of

some clyffe, or other land. And thys king hauing felt the tempest of Wind, raine, haile, lyghtenyng, and Thunder claps, compaffed round aboute with Marshes and violent streames of little Riuers that ran along his way, thought he had found Paradise by chauncing vpon that rusticall lodge. Now that Cotage was the refuge place of a pore Fisher man, who lived and susteined his Wife and children with Eeles which he toke alongs the ditches of those deepe and huge Marshes. Manfor when he was arrived at the dore of that great pallace couered and thacked with Reede, called to them wythin, who at the first would make no answer to the Prynce that taried there comming at the Gate. Then he knocked againe, and with louder voyce than before, which caused this fisher man, thinkynge that he had bene some rippier (to whom he was wont to sell hys ware, or else some straunger strayed out of his way,) spedily went out, and seeinge the Kinge well mounted and richlye clothed, and albeit he tooke him not to be his foueraigne LORD, yet he thought he was some one of his Courtly Gentlemen. Wherefore hee sayde: "What Fortune hath dryuen you (sir) into these so deserte and solytarye Places, and sutch as I maruell that you were not drowned a hundred tymes, in these streames, and bogges whereof this Marrissh and fenny Countrey are full?" "It is the great God" (answered Manfor) "which hath had some care of me, and will not suffer me to perysh without doynge greater good turnes and better deedes than hitherto I haue don." The King's comming thither, seemed to Prognosticate that whych after chaunced, and that God poured downe the Tempest for the Wealth of the Fisher man, and commodity of the Country. And the straying of the Kyng was a thyng appoynted to make voyde those Marshes, and to purge and clense the Countrey: Semblable chaunces haue happened to other Prynces, as to Constantine the great, besides his City called New Rome, when he caused certayne Marshes and Ditches to be filled vp and dryed, to build a fayre and sumptuous Temple, in the Honor and Memory of the blessed Virgin that brought forth the Sauior of the World. "But tel me good man" (replied Manfor) canst thou not shew me the way to the Court, and whether the King is gone, for gladly (if it were possible) would I ride thither." "Verily" (sayd the Fisher Man) "it will be almost

day before ye can come there, the same beinge ten leagues from hence. "Forfomutch as thou knowest the way" (answered Manfor) "doe me so great pleasure to brynge me thither, and be assured that besides the good turne, for which I shall be bound vnto thee, I will curteously content thee for thy paynes." "Sir" (sayd the poore man) "you seeme to be an honest Gentleman, wherfore I pray you to lyght, and to tarry heere this Night, for that it is so late, and the way to the City very euyl and comberfome for you to passe." "No, no," (sayd the King) "if it be possible, I must repayre to the place whither the King is gone, wherfore doe so much for me as to bee my guide, and thou shalt see whether I be vnthankfull to them that imploy their paynes for mee." "If Kyng Manfor" (sayd the Fisher man) "were heere hymselfe in Person and made the lyke request, I would not be so very a foole, nor so presumptuous, (at this time of the Nyght) to take vpon me without Daunger to bryng hym to his Palace." "Wherefore?" (sayd the Kyng) "Wherefore? (quod you), bicause the Marthes bee so daungerous, as in the Day tyme, if one know not wel the way, the Horfe, (be hee neuer so stronge and Lusty,) may chaunce to sticke fast, and tarry behynd for gage. And I would be sorry if the King were heere, that he should fall into Peryl, or suffer any anoyance and therewythall would deeme my selfe vnhappy if I did let hym to incur futch euyl or incombrance." Manfor that delighted in the communication of this good man, and desirous to know the cause that moued him to speak with futch affection, said vnto him: "And why carest thou for the Life, health, or preferuation of the Kynge? What hast thou to doe wyth him that wouldest be so sorry for hys state, and carefull of his safety." "Ho, ho," said the good man, "doe you say that I am carefull for my Prince? Verily I loue him a hundred tymes better than I do my selfe, my Wife or children whych God hath sent me: and what sir, do not you loue our Prince?" "Yes that I doe" (replied the Kyng,) "for I haue better cause than thou, for that I am many times in his company, and liue vpon his charge and am entertayned with his wages. But what nedest thou to care for hym? Thou knowest him not, hee neuer did thee anye good turne or pleasure: nor yet thou nedest not hope henceforth to haue any pleasure at his hands."

“What?” (said the Fisher man) “must a Prince be loued for gaine and good turnes, rather than for hys Iustice and curtesie? I fee wel that amongs you maister Courtiers, the benefits of kings be more regarded, and their gifts better liked than their vertue and nobility, which maketh them wonderful vnto vs: and ye do more esteeme the gold, honor and estates that they bestow vpon you, than their health and sauegard, which are the more to be considered, for that the King is our head, and GOD hath made him futch one to kepe vs in Peace, and to be carefull of our states. Pardon me if I speake so boldly in your presence.” The kyng (which toke singular delight in this Countrey Philosopher,) answered him: “I am not offended bicause thy words approche fo neare the troth: but tel me what benefit hast thou receiued of that king Manfor, of whome thou makest futch accompt and louest so wel? For I cannot thinke that euer he dyd thee good, or shewed thee pleasure, by reason of thy pouerty, and the little Furnytur within thy house in respect of that which they possesse whome hee loueth and fauoreth, and vnto whome he sheweth fo great familiaritie and Benefite.” “Doe tell me fir” (replied the good man) “for so much as you so greatly regard the fauoures which Subiects receiue at theyr Prynces handes, as in deede they ought to doe, What greater goodnesse, richesse, or Benefite ought I to hope for, or can receyue of my King (being futch one as I am,) but the profite and vtility that all we whych be his vassalles do apprehend from day to day in the Iustyce that he rendereth to euery Wyghte, by not suffering the puissant and Rich to suppressse and ouertread the feeble and weake, and him that is deuoid of Fortune’s goods, that indifferency be maintayned by the Officers, to whom he committeth the gouernement of his Prouinces, and the care which he hath that his people be not deuoured by exactions, and intollerable tributes. I do esteeme more his goodnesse, clemency and Loue, that he beareth to his subiects, than I doe all your delycates and ease in following the Court. I most humbly honor and reuerence my king in that he being farre from vs, doeth neuerthelesse so vse his gouernment as we feele his presence like the Image of God, for the peace and vnion wherein we through him do lyue and enioy, without disturbaunce, that lytle whych

God and Fortune haue gyuen vs. Who (if not the king) is he that doeth preferue vs, and defend vs from the incurfions and pillages of thofe Theues and Pirates of Arabie, which inuade and make warre with their neighbours? and there is no friend they haue but they would difpleafe if the King wyfely did not forbyd and preuent their villanies. That great Lord which kepeth his Court at Conftantinople and maketh himfelf to be adored of his people like a God, brideleth not fo much the Arabians, as our king doth, vnder the Protection and fauegard of whome, I that am a poore Fisher man, do ioy my pouerty in peace, and without fear of theues do norifh my litle family, applying my felfe to the fifhing of Eeles that be in thefe ditches and fenny places, which I carry to the market townes, and fell for the fufenance and feeding of my wife and children, and esteeme my felf right happy, that returning to my cabane, and homely lodge at my pleafure, in whatfoeuer place I do abide, bicaufe (albeit far of from Neighboures,) by the benefite and dilygence of my Prince, none ftaye my journey, or offendeth me by any meanes, whych is the caufe (fayd he lifting vp his hands and eyes aloft,) that I pray vnto God and his great Prophet Mahomet, that it may pleafe them to preferue our King in health, and to gyue him fo great happe and contentation, as he is vertuous and debonaire, and that ouer hys Ennimies (flying before him,) he may euermore be victorious, for noryfing his people in peace, and his children in ioy and Nobility.” The King feeing that deuout affectyon of the paifaunte, and knowyng it to be without guile or Hypocrifie, would gladly haue difcouered himfelf, but yet willyng to referue the fame for better opportunity, he fayd vnto him: “Forfomutch as thou loueft the king fo well, it is not impoffible but thofe of his houfe be welcome vnto thee, and that for thy Manfor’s fake, thou wilt helpe and do feruice to his Gentlemen.” “Let it fuffife you” (replied he) “that my heart is more inclined to the King, than to the willes of thofe that ferue him for hope of preferment. Now being fo affectionate to the king as I am, thynke whyther hys houfholde Seruauntes haue power to commaund me, and whither my willing mynde be preft to doe them good or not. But mee thynke ye neede not to ftay heere at the gate in talke, being fo wet as

you be: Wherefore vouchsafe to come into my house, which is your owne, to take such simple lodging as I haue, where I will entreat you, (not according to your merite) but with the little that God and his Prophet haue departed to my pouerty: And to morrow morning I will conduct you to the City, euen to the royall Palace of my Prynce." "Truly" (answered the King) "albeit necessity did not prouoke me, yet thine honesty deserueth well other reputation than a simple Countrey man, and I do thinke that I haue profited more in hearing thee speake than by hearkenynge to the flattering and babbling tales of Courting triflers, which dayly employ themselues to corrupte the eares of Prynces." "What sir?" (sayd the Payfant) "thynke you that thys poore Coate and simple lodging be not able to apprehend the Preceptes of Vertue? I haue fometimes heard tell, that the wife auoyding Cityes and Troupes of Men, haue wythdrawne themselues into the desertes, for leysure to contemplate heavenly thynges." "Your skyll is greate," replied Manfor: "Goe we then, sith you please to doe me that Curtesie as this night to be myne hoste." So the king went into the Rustical Lodge, where insteede of Tapistry and Turkey hangings, he sawe the house stately hanged with fisher Nets and Cordes, and in place of rich feeling of Noble mens houses, he beheld Canes and Reedes whych serued both for the feeling and couering. The Fisher man's Wife continued in the kitchen, whilest Manfor hymself both walked and dressed his owne horse, to which horse the Fisher man durste not once come neare for his Courage and stately trappour, wyth one thing he was abundantly refreshed, and that the moste needefull thing which was fire, whereof there was no spare, no more then there was of Fishe. But the king which had been dayntely fed, and did not well taste and lyke that kynde of meat, demaunded if hys hunger could not be supplied with a lytle Flesh, for that his stomacke was anoyed with the onely fauoure of the Eeles. The poore man, (as ye haue somewhat perceiued by the former discourse) was a pleasaunt fellow, and delighted rather to prouoke laughter than to prepare more dainty meat, said vnto the king: "It is no maruell, though our kinges do furnishe themselues with Countrey men, to serue them in their Warres, for the delicate bringing vp and litle force in fine Cour-

tiers. Wee, albeit the Raine doth fal vppon our heads, and the Winde affaile eury part of our bodies all durtie and Wet, doe not care either for fire or Bed, wee feede vpon any kinde of meate that is fet before vs, withoute seeking Sauce for increafing of our appetite: and we (beholde) are nimble, healthy, lufly, and neuer ficke, nor our mouth out of tafte, where ye do feele futch diftemperance of stomacke, as pity it is to fee, and more ado there is to bring the fame into his right order and tafte, than to ordeine and drefse a fupper for a whole armie." The king who laughed (with difplayed throte,) hearing his hofte fo merily difpofed, could haue been contented to haue heard him ftill had not his appetite pronoked him, and the time of the Night very late. Wherefore he faid vnto him: "I do agree to what you alleage, but performe I pray thee my request, and then wee will fatiffie our felues with further talke." "Well fir" (replied the king's Hofte,) "I fee well that a hungry Belly hath no lufte to heare a merry fong, whereof were you not fo egre and fharpe fet, I could fing a hundred. But I haue a lytle Kidde which as yet is not weaned, the fame wil I caufe to bee made ready, for I think it cannot be better beftowed." The fupper by reafon of the hofte's curtefie, was paffed forth in a thoufand pleafant paffetimes, whych the Fifherman of purpofe vttered to recreate hys Gueft, bicaufe he fawe hym to delight in thofe deuyses. And vppon the end of Supper, he fayd vnto the King: "Now fir, how like you this banket? It is not fo fumptuous as thofe that be ordinarily made at our Prynce's Court, yet I thynke that you fhall flepe wyth no leffe appetyte than you haue eaten with a god stomack, as appeareth by the few Woords you haue vttered in the tyme of your repaft. But whereunto booteh it to employ tyme, ordeyned for eating, in expenfe of talke, whych ferueth not but to paffe the tyme, and to fhorten, the day? And meats ought rather to be taken for fuffentation of Nature then for prouocation or motion of thys feeble and Tranfitorye Flefhe?" "Verily" (fayd the King) "your reafon is good, and I doe meane to ryfe from the Table, to paffe the remnant of the Nyght in reft, therewyth to fatiffie my felfe fo well as I haue wyth eatyng, and do thanke you heartily for your good aduertifement." So the King went to Bed, and it was not long ere hee fell a



fleepe, and contynued tyll the Mornynge. And when the Sunne dyd ryse, the Fisher man came to wake hym, tellyng hym that it was tyme to rise, and that hee was ready to bryng him to the Court. All this whyle the Gentlemen of the kinge's Traine were searching round aboute the Countrey to fynde his Maiefty, making Cryes and Hues, that he myghte heare them. The kyng knowyng their voices, and the noyes they made, went forth to meete them, and if his People were gladd when they founde him, the Fisher man was no lesse amazed to see the honor the Courtyers did vnto his Guest. Which the curteous king perceiuing, sayd vnto him: "My Friend, thou seeft here, that Manfor, of whome yesternight thou madest so great accompt, and whome thou saidst, that thou didst loue so well. Bee assured, that for the Curtise thou hast done him, before it bee longe, the same shall be so well acquyted, as for euer thou shalt haue good cause to remembre it." The good man was already vpon his marybones beseeching the King that it would please him pardon hys rude entertainment and his ouermutch familiarity whych hee had vsed vnto him. But Manfor causing him to rise vp, willed hym to depart, and sayed that within few dayes after he shoulde heare further Newes. Now in these Fennish and marrysh groundes, the Kyng had already builded diuers Castles and lodges for the pleasure and folace of hunting. Wherefore he purposed there to erect a goodly City, causing the waters to be voyded with greate expedition, whych City he builded immediatly, and compaffyng the circuite of the appoynted place, with strong Walles and depe Ditches, he gaue many immunities and Pryuiledges to those, that would repayre to people the same, by meanes whereof, in litle tyme, was reduced to the state of a beautifull and wealthy City, whych is the very same that before we sayd to be Cæsar Elcabir, as much to say: "The great Palace." This goodly worke beinge thus performed Manfor sent for his host, to whome hee sayde: "To the end from henceforth thou mayest more honourably entertaine Kyngs into thy House, and mayest intreate them wyth greater sumptuositie, for the better folacyng of them wyth thy curtesy and pleasaunt talke, beholde the City that I haue buylded, which I doe gyue vnto thee and thyne for euer, referuing nothyng but an acknowledgement of good wil,

to the end thou mayst know that a Gentleman's mind noursed in villany, is discovered, when forgetting a good turne, he incurreth the vice of Ingratitude." The good man seeing so liberall an offer and present worthy of futch a king fell downe vpon his knees, and kyssing his foote with al humility, sayd vnto him: "Sir if your Liberality did not supply the imperfection of my Meryte, and performed not what wanted in me, to attayne so great estate, I would excuse my selfe of the charge which it pleaseth you to gyue mee, and whereunto for lacke of trayning vp, and vse of futch a Dignity, I am altogether vnfit. But sith that the graces of GOD, and the gyftes of Kynges ought neuer to bee reiected, by acceptynge thys Benefite wyth humble thanks for the clemencye of your royall Maieesty, I rest the Seruaunt and slaue of you and yours." The king hearing hym speake so wifely, took hym vp, and imbraced him, saying: "Would to God and his great Prophete, that all they which rule Cityes, and gouerne Prouinces, had so good a Nature as thine then I durst be bolde to say, that the People shoulde lyue better at theyr ease, and Monarches without charge of conscience, for the ill behayors of theyr Officers. Lyue good man, lyue at thine ease, maynteine thy people, obserue our lawes, and increase the Beauty of the City, whereof from this time forth wee doe make the possesser. And truly the present was not to bee contempned, for that the same at this day is one of the fairest that is in Affrica, and is the Land of the blacke People, futch as the Spaniards call Negroes. It is very full of Gardeins, furnished with abundance of Spyces brought from the Moluccas, bicause of the martes and faires ordeined there. To be short, Manfor shewed by this gift what is the force of a gentle heart, which can not abyde to bee vanquished in curtesie, and lesse suffer that vnder forgetfulnesse the memorye of a receyued good turne be lost. King Darius whilome, for a little garment, receiued in gift by Silofon the Samien, recompenced him wyth the gaine and royall dignity of that City, and made him soueraine Lord thereof, and of the Isle of Samos. And what greater vertue can illustrate the name of a noble man, than to acknowledge and preferre them, which for Natural shame and bashfulnesse, dare not beholde the Maiesty of their greatnesse? God sometymes with

a more curteous Eye doth loke vpon the presents of a poore man, than the fat and rych offerings of him that is great and wealthy? Euen so a benefite, from what hand soeuer it procedeth, cannot chose but bryng forth the fruiçts of his Liberality that giueth the fame, who by vsing largeffe, feleth also the like in him to whom it is employed. That magnificence no long time past vsed the Seignorie of Venice, to Francesco Dandulo, who after he had dured the great displeasures of the Pope, in the name of the whole City, vpon his returne to Venice, for acknowledgmet of his pacyence, and for abolishment of that Shame, was wyth happye and vniforme Acclamatyon of the whole state elected, and made Prince, and Duke of that Common wealth. Worthy of prayse truly is he, that by some pleafure bindeth another to his curtesie: but when a Noble man acknowledgeth for a benefite, that which a Subiect is bounde to giue him by duty and seruice, there the proofe of prayse carryeth no Fame at all. For which cause I determined to display the Hystory of the barbarous King Manfor, to the intent that our Gentlemen, noryshed and trained vp in great ciuilytie, may assay by their mildenesse and good education, to surmount the curtesie of that Prynce, of whom for this time wee purpose to take our  
Farewell.

THE  
CONCLUSION,  
WITH  
AN ADUERTISEMENT TO THE READER.

---

WHAT thou hast gainèd for thy better instruction, or what conceiued for recreation by reading these thirty five Nouells, I am not Iudge, although (by deeming) in reading and perusing, thou mayst (at thy pleasure) gather both. But howsoever profite, contentment, or delight, can satisfie mine apoyntment, wherefore they were preferred into thy hands, contented am I that thou doe vouchsaf them Good lessons how to shun the Darts, and Prickes of insolence thou findest in the same. The vertuous noble may fauour the fruits and taste the licour that stilleth from the gums or buds of Vertue. The contrary may see the bloffoms fall, that blome from the shrubs of disloyalty and degenerat kinde. Yong Gentlemen, and Ladies do view a plot founded on sured grounde, and what the foundation is, planted in shattering Soyle, with a fashio of attire to garnish their inward parts, so well as (sparelesse) they employ vpon the vanishing pompe. Euery fort and sexe that warfare in the field of humayne life, may see here the fauourous fruit (to outward liking) that falsified the sensuall taste of Adam's Wyfe. They see also what griefts fetch fading fruit produce vnto posterity: what likewise the lusty growth and spring of vertue's plant, and what delicates it brauncheth to those that carefully keepe the slips thereof, within the Orchard of the mindes. Diuers Tragical shewes by the pennes description haue

bene disclosed in greateſt number of theſe Hyſtories, the ſame  
 alſo I haue mollified and ſweetened with the courſe of pleaſaunt  
 matters, of purpoſe not to dampe the deyntry mindes of thoſe that  
 ſhrinke and feare at ſuch rehearfall. And bicauſe ſodaynly  
 (contrary to expectation) this Volume is riſen to greater heape  
 of leaues, I doe omit for this preſent time ſundry Nouels of mery  
 deuife, referuing the ſame to be ioyned with the reſt of an other  
 part, wherein ſhall ſucceede the remnaunt of Bandello, ſpecially  
 ſutch (ſuffrable) as the learned French man François de Belle-  
 forreſt hath ſelected, and the choyleſt done in the Italian. Some  
 alſo out of Erizzo, Ser Giouani Florentino, Parabosco, Cynthio,  
 Straparole, Sanſouino, and the beſt liked out of the Queene of  
 Nauarre, and other Authors. Take theſe in ſo good part with  
 thoſe that haue and ſhall come forth, as I do offre them with good  
 will curteouſly correcting ſutch Faults, and Errors, as ſhall  
 preſent themſelues, eyther burying them in the Boſome  
 of Fauor, or pretermittting them with the beck  
 of Curteſie. !

FINIS.